PROFESSOR ERNST MACH

1838 - 1916

THE·

SCIENCE OF MECHANICS

A CRITICAL AND HISTORICAL ACCOUNT
OF ITS DEVELOPMENT

BY

DR. ERNST MACH

PROFESSOR OF THE HISTORY AND THEORY OF INDUCTIVE SCIENCE IN
THE UNIVERSITY OF VIENNA

TRANSLATED FROM THE GERMAN

BY

THOMAS J. McCORMACK

TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE TO THE SECOND ENGLISH EDITION.

SINCE the appearance of the first edition of the present translation of Mach's *Mechanics*,* the views which Professor Mach has advanced on the philosophy of science have found wide and steadily increasing acceptance. Many fruitful and elucidative controversies have sprung from his discussions of the historical, logical, and psychological foundations of physical science, and in consideration of the great ideal success which his works have latterly met with in Continental Europe, the time seems ripe for a still wider dissemination of his views in English-speaking countries. The study of the history and theory of science is finding fuller and fuller recognition in our universities, and it is to be hoped that the present exemplary treatment of the simplest and most typical branch of physics will stimulate further progress in this direction.

The text of the present edition, which contains the extensive additions made by the author to the

---

* *Die Mechanik in ihrer Entwickelung historisch-kritisch dargestellt.* Von Dr. Ernst Mach, Professor an der Universität zu Wien. Mit 257 Abbildungen. First German edition, 1883. Fourth German edition, 1901. First edition of the English translation, Chicago, The Open Court Publishing Co., 1893.

latest German editions, has been thoroughly revised
by the translator. All errors, either of substance or
typography, so far as they have come to the trans-
lator's notice, have been removed, and in many cases
the phraseology has been altered. The sub-title of
the work has, in compliance with certain criticisms,
also been changed, to accord more with the wording
of the original title and to bring out the idea that the
work treats of the principles of mechanics predomi-
nantly under the aspect of their *development* (*Entwicke-
lung*). To avoid confusion in the matter of references,
the main title stands as in the first edition.

The author's additions, which are considerable,
have been relegated to the Appendix. This course
has been deemed preferable to that of incorporating
them in the text, first, because the numerous refer-
ences in other works to the pages of the first edition
thus hold good for the present edition also, and sec-
ondly, because with few exceptions the additions are
either supplementary in character, or in answer to
criticisms. A list of the subjects treated in these ad-
ditions is given in the Table of Contents, under the
heading "Appendix" on page xix.

Special reference, however, must be made to the
additions referring to Hertz's *Mechanics* (pp. 548–555),
and to the history of the development of Professor
Mach's own philosophical and scientific views, notably
to his criticisms of the concepts of mass, inertia, ab-
solute motion, etc., on pp. 542–547, 555–574, and 579

-583. The remarks here made will be found highly elucidative, while the references given to the rich literature dealing with the history and philosophy of science will also be found helpful.

As for the rest, the text of the present edition of the translation is the same as that of the first. It has had the sanction of the author and the advantage of revision by Mr. C. S. Peirce, well known for his studies both of analytical mechanics and of the history and logic of physics. Mr. Peirce read the proofs of the first edition and rewrote Sec. 8 in the chapter on Units and Measures, where the original was inapplicable to the system commonly taught in this country.

THOMAS J. McCORMACK.

LA SALLE, ILL., February, 1902.

AUTHOR'S PREFACE TO THE TRANS-LATION.

Having read the proofs of the present translation of my work, *Die Mechanik in ihrer Entwickelung*, I can testify that the publishers have supplied an excellent, accurate, and faithful rendering of it, as their previous translations of essays of mine gave me every reason to expect. My thanks are due to all concerned, and especially to Mr. McCormack, whose intelligent care in the conduct of the translation has led to the discovery of many errors, heretofore overlooked. I may, thus, confidently hope, that the rise and growth of the ideas of the great inquirers, which it was my task to portray, will appear to my new public in distinct and sharp outlines. E. MACH.

PRAGUE, April 8th, 1893.

PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION.

THAT the interest in the foundations of mechanics is still unimpaired, is shown by the works published since 1889 by Budde, P. and J. Friedländer, H. Hertz, P. Johannesson, K. Lasswitz, MacGregor, K. Pearson, J. Petzoldt, Rosenberger, E. Strauss, Vicaire, P. Volkmann, E. Wohlwill, and others, many of which are deserving of consideration, even though briefly.

In Prof. Karl Pearson (*Grammar of Science*, London, 1892), I have become acquainted with an inquirer with whose epistemological views I am in accord at nearly all essential points, and who has always taken a frank and courageous stand against all pseudo-scientific tendencies in science. Mechanics appears at present to be entering on a new relationship to physics, as is noticeable particularly in the publication of H. Hertz. The nascent transformation in our conception of forces acting at a distance will perhaps be influenced also by the interesting investigations of H. Seeliger ("Ueber das Newton'sche Gravitationsgesetz," *Sitzungsbericht der Münchener Akademie*, 1896), who has shown the incompatibility of a rigorous interpretation of Newton's law with the assumption of an unlimited mass of the universe.

VIENNA, January, 1897.　　　　　E. Mach.

ing these cases must ever remain the method at once the most effective and the most natural for laying this gist and kernel bare. Indeed, it is not too much to say that it is the only way in which a real comprehension of the general upshot of mechanics is to be attained.

I have framed my exposition of the subject agreeably to these views. It is perhaps a little long, but, on the other hand, I trust that it is clear. I have not in every case been able to avoid the use of the abbreviated and precise terminology of mathematics. To do so would have been to sacrifice matter to form ; for the language of everyday life has not yet grown to be sufficiently accurate for the purposes of so exact a science as mechanics.

The elucidations which I here offer are, in part, substantially contained in my treatise, *Die Geschichte und die Wurzel des Satzes von der Erhaltung der Arbeit* (Prague, Calve, 1872). At a later date nearly the same views were expressed by KIRCHHOFF (*Vorlesungen über mathematische Physik: Mechanik,* Leipsic, 1874) and by HELMHOLTZ (*Die Thatsachen in der Wahrnehmung,* Berlin, 1879), and have since become commonplace enough. Still the matter, as I conceive it, does not seem to have been exhausted, and I cannot deem my exposition to be at all superfluous.

In my fundamental conception of the nature of science as Economy of Thought,—a view which I indicated both in the treatise above cited and in my

pamphlet, *Die Gestalten der Flüssigkeit* (Prague, Calve,
1872), and which I somewhat more extensively devel-
oped in my academical memorial address, *Die ökono-
mische Natur der physikalischen Forschung* (Vienna, Ge-
rold, 1882,—I no longer stand alone. I have been
much gratified to find closely allied ideas developed,
in an original manner, by Dr. R. AVENARIUS (*Philoso-
phie als Denken der Welt, gemäss dem Princip des klein-
sten Kraftmaasses*, Leipsic, Fues, 1876). Regard for
the true endeavor of philosophy, that of guiding into
one common stream the many rills of knowledge, will
not be found wanting in my work, although it takes a
determined stand against the encroachments of meta-
physical methods.

The questions here dealt with have occupied me
since my earliest youth, when my interest for them was
powerfully stimulated by the beautiful introductions of
LAGRANGE to the chapters of his *Analytic Mechanics*, as
well as by the lucid and lively tract of JOLLY, *Principien
der Mechanik* (Stuttgart, 1852). If DUEHRING's esti-
mable work, *Kritische Geschichte der Principien der Me-
chanik* (Berlin, 1873), did not particularly influence
me, it was that at the time of its appearance, my ideas
had been not only substantially worked out, but actually
published. Nevertheless, the reader will, at least on
the destructive side, find many points of agreement
between Dühring's criticisms and those here expressed.

The new apparatus for the illustration of the sub-
ject, here figured and described, were designed entirely

by me and constructed by Mr. F. Hajek, the mechanician of the physical institute under my control.

In less immediate connection with the text stand the fac-simile reproductions of old originals in my possession. The quaint and naïve traits of the great inquirers, which find in them their expression, have always exerted upon me a refreshing influence in my studies, and I have desired that my readers should share this pleasure with me.

E. MACH.

PRAGUE, May, 1883.

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

IN consequence of the kind reception which this book has met with, a very large edition has been exhausted in less than five years. This circumstance and the treatises that have since then appeared of E. Wohlwill, H. Streintz, L. Lange, J. Epstein, F. A. Müller, J. Popper, G. Helm, M. Planck, F. Poske, and others are evidence of the gratifying fact that at the present day questions relating to the theory of cognition are pursued with interest, which twenty years ago scarcely anybody noticed.

As a thoroughgoing revision of my work did not yet seem to me to be expedient, I have restricted myself, so far as the text is concerned, to the correction of typographical errors, and have referred to the works that have appeared since its original publication, as far as possible, in a few appendices.

<div align="right">E. MACH.</div>

PRAGUE, June, 1888.

*

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

THE present volume is not a treatise upon the application of the principles of mechanics. Its aim is to clear up ideas, expose the real significance of the matter, and get rid of metaphysical obscurities. The little mathematics it contains is merely secondary to this purpose.

Mechanics will here be treated, not as a branch of mathematics, but as one of the physical sciences. If the reader's interest is in that side of the subject, if he is curious to know how the principles of mechanics have been ascertained, from what sources they take their origin, and how far they can be regarded as permanent acquisitions, he will find, I hope, in these pages some enlightenment. All this, the positive and physical essence of mechanics, which makes its chief and highest interest for a student of nature, is in existing treatises completely buried and concealed beneath a mass of technical considerations.

The gist and kernel of mechanical ideas has in almost every case grown up in the investigation of very simple and special cases of mechanical processes; and the analysis of the history of the discussions concern-

PREFACE TO THE FOURTH EDITION.

THE number of the friends of this work appears to have increased in the course of seventeen years, and the partial consideration which my expositions have received in the writings of Boltzmann, Föppl, Hertz, Love, Maggi, Pearson, and Slate, have awakened in me the hope that my work shall not have been in vain. Especial gratification has been afforded me by finding in J. B. Stallo (*The Concepts of Modern Physics*) another staunch ally in my attitude toward mechanics, and in W. K. Clifford (*Lectures and Essays* and *The Common Sense of the Exact Sciences*), a thinker of kindred aims and points of view.

New books and criticisms touching on my discussions have received attention in special additions, which in some instances have assumed considerable proportions. Of these strictures, O. Hölder's note on my criticism of the Archimedean deduction (*Denken und Anschauung in der Geometrie*, p. 63, note 62) has been of special value, inasmuch as it afforded me the opportunity of establishing my view on still firmer foundations (see pages 512–517). I do not at all dispute that rigorous demonstrations are as possible in mechanics as in mathematics. But with respect to

the Archimedean and certain other deductions, I am still of the opinion that my position is the correct one.

Other slight corrections in my work may have been made necessary by detailed historical research, but upon the whole I am of the opinion that I have correctly portrayed the picture of the transformations through which mechanics has passed, and presumably will pass.   The original text, from which the later insertions are quite distinct, could therefore remain as it first stood in the first edition.   I also desire that no changes shall be made in it even if after my death a new edition should become necessary.

E. Mach.

Vienna, January, 1901.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE PRINCIPLES OF STATICS.

CHAPTER II.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE PRINCIPLES OF DYNAMICS.

CHAPTER III.

THE EXTENDED APPLICATION OF THE PRINCIPLES OF MECHANICS AND THE DEDUCTIVE DEVELOPMENT OF THE SCIENCE.

CHAPTER IV.

THE FORMAL DEVELOPMENT OF MECHANICS.

CHAPTER V.

THE RELATION OF MECHANICS TO OTHER DEPARTMENTS OF KNOWLEDGE.

THE SCIENCE OF MECHANICS

INTRODUCTION.

1. THAT branch of physics which is at once the old- est and the simplest and which is therefore treated as introductory to other departments of this science, is concerned with the motions and equilibrium of masses. It bears the name of mechanics.

2. The history of the development of mechanics, is quite indispensable to a full comprehension of the science in its present condition. It also affords a simple and instructive example of the processes by which natural science generally is developed.

An *instinctive*, irreflective knowledge of the processes of nature will doubtless always precede the scientific, conscious apprehension, or *investigation*, of phenomena. The former is the outcome of the relation in which the processes of nature stand to the satisfaction of our wants. The acquisition of the most elementary truth does not devolve upon the individual alone : it is pre-effectèd in the development of the race.

In point of fact, it is necessary to make a dis- tinction between mechanical experience and mechanical science, in the sense in which the latter term is at present employed. Mechanical experiences are, unquestionably, very old. If we carefully examine the ancient Egyptian and Assyrian monuments, we shall find there pictorial representations of many kinds of

implements and mechanical contrivances; but ac-
counts of the scientific knowledge of these peoples
are either totally lacking, or point conclusively to a
very inferior grade of attainment.   By the side of
highly ingenious ap-
pliances, we behold
the crudest and rough-
est expedients em-
ployed—as the use of
sleds, for instance, for
the transportation of
enormous blocks of
stone.   All bears an
instinctive, unperfec-
ted, accidental char-
acter.

So, too, prehistoric
graves contain imple-
ments whose construc-
tion and employment
imply no little skill
and much mechanical
experience. Thus, long
before   theory   was
dreamed   of,   imple-
ments, machines, me-
chanical   experien-
ces, and mechanical
knowledge were abun-
dant.

3.   The idea often
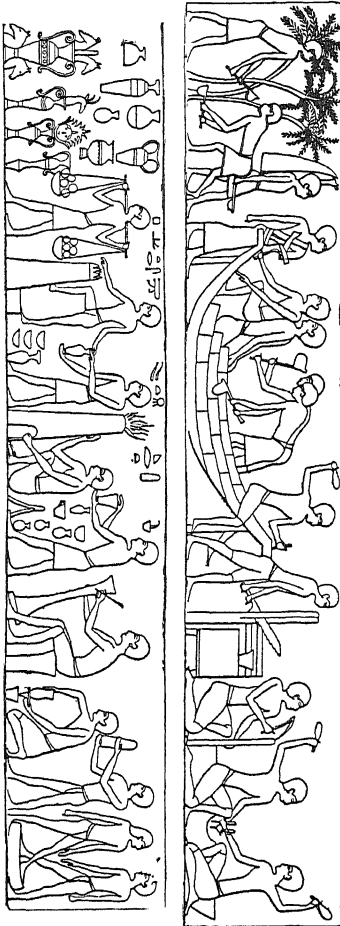suggests   itself   that
perhaps the incom-
pléte accounts we pos-

Fig. 1.

sess have led us to underrate the science of the ancient world. Passages occur in ancient authors which seem to indicate a profounder knowledge than we are wont to ascribe to those nations. Take, for instance, the following passage from Vitruvius, *De Architectura,* Lib. V, Cap. III, 6 :

"The voice is a flowing breath, made sensible to "the organ of hearing by the movements it produces "in the air. It is propagated in infinite numbers of "circular zones · exactly as when a stone is thrown "into a pool of standing water countless circular un-"dulations are generated therein, which, increasing "as they recede from the centre, spread out over a "great distance, unless the narrowness of the locality "or some obstacle prevent their reaching their ter-"mination ; for the first line of waves, when impeded "by obstructions, throw by their backward swell the "succeeding circular lines of waves into confusion. "Conformably to the very same law, the voice also "generates circular motions ; but with this distinction, "that in water the circles, remaining upon the surface, "are propagated horizontally only, while the voice is "propagated both horizontally and vertically."

A passage from Vitruvius.

Does not this sound like the imperfect exposition of a popular author, drawn from more accurate disqui-sitions now lost? In what a strange light should we ourselves appear, centuries hence, if our popular lit-erature, which by reason of its quantity is less easily destructible, should alone outlive the productions of science? This too favorable view, however, is very rudely shaken by the multitude of other passages con-taining such crude and patent errors as cannot be con-ceived to exist in any high stage of scientific culture. (See Appendix, I., p. 509.)

Controvert-ed by other evidence.

The origin of science.

4. When, where, and in what manner the development of science actually began, is at this day difficult historically to determine. It appears reasonable to assume, however, that the instinctive gathering of experiential facts preceded the scientific classification of them. Traces of this process may still be detected in the science of to-day; indeed, they are to be met with, now and then, in ourselves. The experiments that man heedlessly and instinctively makes in his struggles to satisfy his wants, are just as thoughtlessly and unconsciously applied. Here, for instance, belong the primitive experiments concerning the application of the lever in all its manifold forms. But the things that are thus unthinkingly and instinctively discovered, can never appear as peculiar, can never strike us as surprising, and as a rule therefore will never supply an impetus to further thought.

The functions of special classes in the development of science.

The transition from this stage to the classified, scientific knowledge and apprehension of facts, first becomes possible on the rise of special classes and professions who make the satisfaction of definite social wants their lifelong vocation. A class of this sort occupies itself with particular kinds of natural processes. The individuals of the class change ; old members drop out, and new ones come in. Thus arises a need of imparting to those who are newly come in, the stock of experience and knowledge already possessed ; a need of acquainting them with the conditions of the

The communication of knowledge.

attainment of a definite end so that the result may be determined beforehand. The communication of knowledge is thus the first occasion that compels distinct reflection, as everybody can still observe in himself. Further, that which the old members of a guild mechanically pursue, strikes a new member as unusual

and strange, and thus an impulse is given to fresh re-
flection and investigation.

When we wish to bring to the knowledge of a per- Involves
son any phenomena or processes of nature, we have description.
the choice of two methods : we may allow the person to
observe matters for himself, when instruction comes
to an end ; or, we may describe to him the phenomena
in some way, so as to save him the trouble of per-
sonally making anew each experiment. Description,
however, is only possible of events that constantly re-
cur, or of events that are made up of component
parts that constantly recur. That only can be de-
scribed, and conceptually represented which is uniform
and conformable to law ; for description presupposes
the employment of names by which to designate its
elements ; and names can acquire meanings only when
applied to elements that constantly reappear.

5. In the infinite variety of nature many ordinary A unitary
events occur ; while others appear uncommon, per- of nature.
plexing, astonishing, or even contradictory to the or-
dinary run of things. As long as this is the case we
do not possess a well-settled and unitary conception of
nature. Thence is imposed the task of everywhere
seeking out in the natural phenomena those elements
that are the same, and that amid all multiplicity are
ever present. By this means, on the one hand, the
most economical and briefest description and com-
munication are rendered possible ; and on the other, The nature
when once a person has acquired the skill of recog- edge.
nising these permanent elements throughout the great-
est range and variety of phenomena, of seeing them in
the same, this ability leads to a *comprehensive, compact,*
consistent, and *facile conception of the facts.* When once
we have reached the point where we are everywhere

able to detect the *same* few simple elements, combining in the ordinary manner, then they appear to us as things that are familiar; we are no longer surprised, there is nothing new or strange to us in the phenomena, we feel at home with them, they no longer perplex us, they are *explained.* It is a process of adaptation of thoughts to facts with which we are here concerned.

6. Economy of communication and of apprehension is of the very essence of science. Herein lies its pacificatory, its enlightening, its refining element. Herein, too, we possess an unerring guide to the historical origin of science. In the beginning, all economy had in immediate view the satisfaction simply of bodily wants. With the artisan, and still more so with the investigator, the concisest and simplest possible knowledge of a given province of natural phenomena—a knowledge that is attained with the least intellectual expenditure—naturally becomes in itself an economical aim; but though it was at first a means to an end, when the mental motives connected therewith are once developed and demand their satisfaction, all thought of its original purpose, the personal need, disappears.

To find, then, what remains unaltered in the phenomena of nature, to discover the elements thereof and the mode of their interconnection and interdependence—this is the business of physical science. It endeavors, by comprehensive and thorough description, to make the waiting for new experiences unnecessary; it seeks to save us the trouble of experimentation, by making use, for example, of the known interdependence of phenomena, according to which, if one kind of event occurs, we may be sure beforehand that a certain other event will occur. Even in the description itself labor may be saved, by discovering methods of de-

scribing the greatest possible number of different ob-
jects at once and in the concisest manner. All this will
be made clearer by the examination of points of detail
than can be done by a general discussion. It is fitting,
however, to prepare the way, at this stage, for the
most important points of outlook which in the course
of our work we shall have occasion to occupy.

7. We now propose to enter more minutely into the
subject of our inquiries, and, at the same time, without
making the history of mechanics the chief topic of
discussion, to consider its historical development so
far as this is requisite to an understanding of the pres-
ent state of mechanical science, and so far as it does
not conflict with the unity of treatment of our main
subject. Apart from the consideration that we cannot
afford to neglect the great incentives that it is in our
power to derive from the foremost intellects of all
epochs, incentives which taken as a whole are more
fruitful than the greatest men of the present day are
able to offer, there is no grander, no more intellectually
elevating spectacle than that of the utterances of the
fundamental investigators in their gigantic power.
Possessed as yet of no methods, for these were first
created by their labors, and are only rendered compre-
hensible to us by their performances, they grapple with
and subjugate the object of their inquiry, and imprint
upon it the forms of conceptual thought. They that
know the entire course of the development of science,
will, as a matter of course, judge more freely and
more correctly of the significance of any present scien-
tific movement than they, who limited in their views
to the age in which their own lives have been spent,
contemplate merely the momentary trend that the course
of intellectual events takes at the present moment.

CHAPTER I.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE PRINCIPLES OF STATICS.

I.

THE PRINCIPLE OF THE LEVER.

1. The earliest investigations concerning mechanics of which we have any account, the investigations of the ancient Greeks, related to statics, or to the doctrine of equilibrium. Likewise, when after the taking of Constantinople by the Turks in 1453 a fresh impulse was imparted to the thought of the Occident by the ancient writings that the fugitive Greeks brought with them, it was investigations in statics, principally evoked by the works of Archimedes, that occupied the foremost investigators of the period. (See p. 510.)

2. ARCHIMEDES of Syracuse (287–212 B. C.) left behind him a number of writings, of which several have come down to us in complete form. We will first employ ourselves a moment with his treatise *De Æquiponderantibus*, which contains propositions respecting the lever and the centre of gravity.

In this treatise Archimedes starts from the following assumptions, which he regards as self-evident:

a. Magnitudes of equal weight acting at equal distances (from their point of support) are in equilibrium.

b. Magnitudes of equal weight acting at une-
qual distances (from their point of support) are
not in equilibrium, but the one acting at the
greater distance sinks.

From these assumptions he deduces the following
proposition :

c. Commensurable magnitudes are in equilib-
rium when they are inversely proportional to their
distances (from the point of support).

It would seem as if analysis could hardly go be-
hind these assumptions. This is, however, when we
carefully look into the matter, not the case.

Imagine (Fig. 2) a bar, the weight of which is
neglected. The bar rests on a fulcrum. At equal dis-
tances from the fulcrum we ap-
pend two equal weights. That
the two weights, thus circum-
stanced, are in equilibrium, is
the assumption from which Archi-
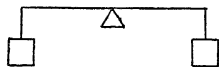
Fig. 2.

medes starts. We might suppose that this was self-
evident entirely apart from any experience, agreeably to
the so-called principle of sufficient reason ; that in view
of the symmetry of the entire arrangement there is no
reason why rotation should occur in the one direction
rather than in the other. But we forget, in this, that
a great multitude of negative and positive experiences
is implicitly contained in our assumption ; the negative,
for instance, that dissimilar colors of the lever-arms,
the position of the spectator, an occurrence in the vi-
cinity, and the like, exercise no influence ; the positive,
on the other hand, (as it appears in the second as-
sumption,) that not only the weights but also their dis-
tances from the supporting point are decisive factors
in the disturbance of equilibrium, that they also are cir-

cumstances determinative of motion. By the aid of
these experiences we do indeed perceive that rest (no
motion) is the only motion which can be uniquely* de-
termined, or defined, by the determinative conditions
of the case.†

Now we are entitled to regard our knowledge of
the decisive conditions of any phenomenon as sufficient
only in the event that such conditions determine the
phenomenon precisely and uniquely. Assuming the
fact of experience referred to, that the weights and
their distances *alone* are decisive, the first proposition
of Archimedes really possesses a high degree of evi-
dence and is eminently qualified to be made the foun-
dation of further investigations. If the spectator place
himself in the plane of symmetry of the arrangement
in question, the first proposition manifests itself, more-
over, as a highly imperative *instinctive* perception,—a
result determined by the symmetry of our own body.
The pursuit of propositions of this character is, fur-
thermore, an excellent means of accustoming ourselves
in thought to the precision that nature reveals in her
processes.

The general
proposition
of the lever
reduced to
the simple
and partic-
ular case.   3. We will now reproduce in general outlines the
train of thought by which Archimedes endeavors to re-
duce the general proposition of the lever to the par-
ticular and apparently self-evident case. The two
equal weights 1 suspended at a and b (Fig. 3) are, if
the bar ab be free to rotate about its middle point c, in
equilibrium. If the whole be suspended by a cord at
c, the cord, leaving out of account the weight of the

---

* So as to leave only a single possibility open.

†If, for example, we were to assume that the weight at the right de-
scended, then rotation in the opposite direction also would be determined by
the spectator, whose person exerts no influence on the phenomenon, taking
up his position on the opposite side.

bar, will have to support the weight 2. The equal weights at the extremities of the bar supply accordingly the place of the double weight at the centre.

Fig. 3.   Fig. 4.

On a lever (Fig. 4), the arms of which are in the proportion of 1 to 2, weights are suspended in the proportion of 2 to 1. The weight 2 we imagine replaced by two weights 1, attached on either side at a distance 1 from the point of suspension. Now again we have complete symmetry about the point of suspension, and consequently equilibrium.

On the lever-arms 3 and 4 (Fig. 5) are suspended the weights 4 and 3.. The lever-arm 3 is prolonged the distance 4, the arm 4 is prolonged the distance 3, and the weights 4 and 3 are replaced respectively by
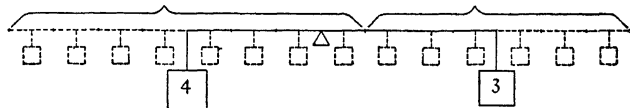
Fig. 5

4 and 3 pairs of symmetrically attached weights $\frac{1}{2}$, in the manner indicated in the figure. Now again we have perfect symmetry. The preceding reasoning, which we have here developed with specific figures, is easily generalised.

4. It will be of interest to look at the manner in which Archimedes's mode of view, after the precedent of Stevinus, was modified by GALILEO.

Galileo imagines (Fig. 6) a heavy horizontal prism,
homogeneous in material composition, suspended by
its extremities from a homogeneous bar of the same
length. The bar is provided at its middle point
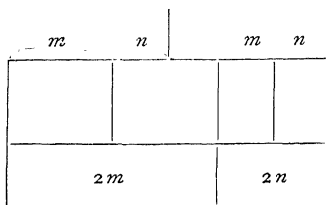
with a suspensory attach-
ment. In this case equi-
librium will obtain; this
we perceive at once. But
in this case is contained
every other case,—which
Galileo shows in the
following manner. Let
us suppose the whole

Fig. 6.

length of the bar or the prism to be $2(m + n)$.   Cut
the prism in two, in such a manner that one portion
shall have the length $2m$ and the other the length $2n$.
We can effect this without disturbing the equilibrium
by previously fastening to the bar by threads, close to
the point of proposed section, the inside extremities of
the two portions. We may then remove all the threads,
if the two portions of the prism be antecedently at-
tached to the bar by their centres.   Since the whole
length of the bar is $2(m + n)$, the length of each half
is $m + n$.   The distance of the point of suspension of
the right-hand portion of the prism from the point of
suspension of the bar is therefore m, and that of the
left-hand portion n.   The experience that we have
here to deal with the weight, and not with the form,
of the bodies, is easily made. It is thus manifest, that
equilibrium will still subsist if *any* weight of the mag-
nitude $2m$ be suspended at the distance n on the one
side and *any* weight of the magnitude $2n$ be suspended
at the distance m on the other. The instinctive elements
of our perception of this phenomenon are even more

prominently displayed in this form of the deduction than in that of Archimedes.

We may discover, moreover, in this beautiful presentation, a remnant of the ponderousness which was particularly characteristic of the investigators of antiquity.

How a modern physicist conceived the same problem, may be learned from the following presentation of LAGRANGE. Lagrange says: Imagine a horizontal homogeneous prism suspended at its centre. Let this prism (Fig. 7) be conceived divided into two prisms of the lengths $2m$ and $2n$. If now we consider the centres of gravity of these two parts, at which we may imagine weights to act proportional to $2m$ and $2n$, the
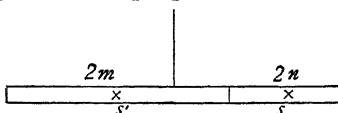
Fig. 7.

two centres thus considered will have the distances n and m from the point of support. This concise disposal of the problem is only possible to the practised mathematical perception.

5. The object that Archimedes and his successors sought to accomplish in the considerations we have here presented, consists in the endeavor to reduce the more complicated case of the lever to the simpler and apparently self-evident case, to *discern* the simpler in the more complicated, or *vice versa*. In fact, we regard a phenomenon as explained, when we discover in it known simpler phenomena.

But surprising as the achievement of Archimedes and his successors may at the first glance appear to us, doubts as to the correctness of it, on further reflec-

tion, nevertheless spring up. From the mere assumption of the equilibrium of equal weights at equal distances is derived the inverse proportionality of weight and lever-arm ! How is that possible ? If we were unable philosophically and *a priori* to excogitate the simple fact of the dependence of equilibrium on weight and distance, but were obliged to go for *that* result to experience, in how much less a degree shall we be able, by speculative methods, to discover the *form* of this dependence, the proportionality !

As a matter of fact, the assumption that the equilibrium-disturbing effect of a weight P at the distance L from the axis of rotation is measured by the product $P.L$ (the so-called statical moment), is more or less covertly or tacitly introduced by Archimedes and all his successors. For when Archimedes substitutes for a large weight a series of symmetrically arranged pairs of small weights, which weights *extend beyond the point of support*, he employs in this very act the doctrine of the centre of gravity in its more general form, which is itself nothing else than the doctrine of the lever in its more general form. (See Appendix, III., p. 512.)

Without the assumption above mentioned of the import of the product $P.L$, no one can prove (Fig. 8) that a bar, placed *in any way* on the fulcrum S, is supported, with the help of a string attached to its centre of gravity and carried over a pulley,
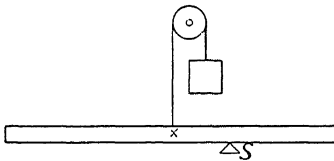
Fig. 8.

by a weight equal to its own weight. But this is contained in the deductions of Archimedes, Stevinus, Galileo, and also in that of Lagrange.

6. HUYGENS, indeed, reprehends this method, and gives a different deduction, in which he believes he has avoided the error. If in the presentation of Lagrange we imagine the two portions into which the prism is divided turned ninety degrees about two vertical axes passing through the centres of gravity *s,s′* of the prism-portions (see Fig. 9*a*), and it be shown that under these circumstances equilibrium still continues to subsist, we shall obtain the Huygenian deduction. Abridged and simplified, it is as follows. In a rigid weightless
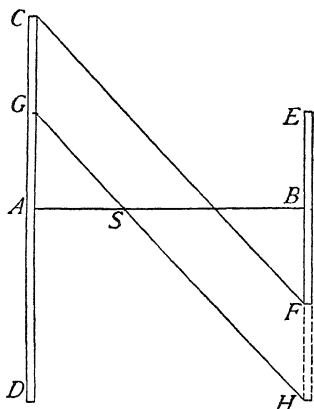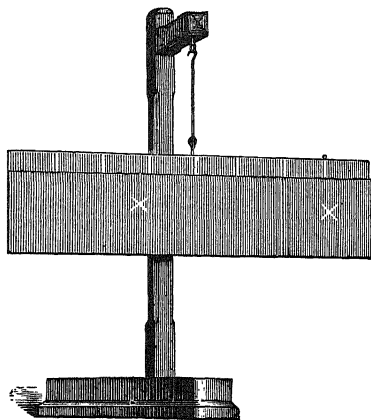
Fig. 9.
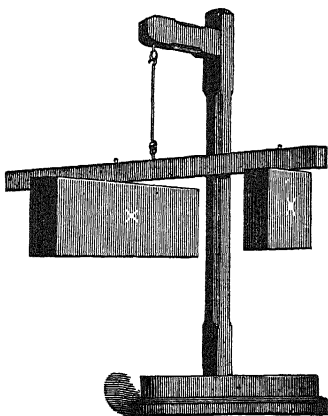
plane (Fig. 9) through the point *S* we draw a straight line, on which we cut off on the one side the length 1

Fig. 9*a*.

Fig. 9*a*.

and on the other the length 2, at *A* and *B* respectively. On the extremities, at right angles to this straight line, we place, with the centres as points of contact, the heavy, thin, homogeneous prisms *CD* and *EF*, of the lengths and weights 4 and 2. Drawing the straight line *HSG* (where $AG = \frac{1}{2}AC$) and, parallel to it, the line *CF*, and translating the prism-portion *CG* by parallel displacement to *FH*, everything about the axis *GH* is symmetrical and equilibrium obtains. But equilibrium also obtains for the axis *AB*; obtains consequently for every axis through *S*, and therefore also for that at right angles to *AB*: wherewith the new case of the lever is given.

Apparently, nothing else is assumed here than that equal weights *p,p* (Fig. 10) in the same plane and at equal distances *l,l* from an axis *AA′* (in this plane) equilibrate one another. If we place ourselves in the plane passing through *AA′* perpendicularly to *l,l*, say
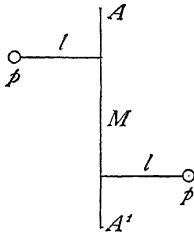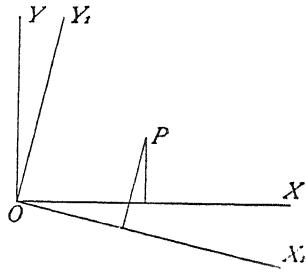
Fig. 10.   Fig. 11.

at the point *M,* and look now towards *A* and now towards *A′,* we shall accord to this proposition the same evidentness as to the first Archimedean proposition. The relation of things is, moreover, not altered if we institute with the weights parallel displacements with respect to the axis, as Huygens in fact does.

The error first arises in the inference : if equilib- rium obtains for two axes of the plane, it also obtains for every other axis passing through the point of intersection of the first two.   This inference (if it is not to be regarded as a purely instinctive one) can be drawn only upon the condition that disturbant effects are ascribed to the weights *proportional* to their distances from the axis. But in this is contained the very kernel of the doctrine of the lever and the centre of gravity.

Let the heavy points of a plane be referred to a system of rectangular coördinates (Fig. 11).   The coordinates of the centre of gravity of a system of masses m m' m'' . . . having the coördinates x x' x'' . . . y y' y'' . . . are, as we know,

$$\xi = \frac{\Sigma mx}{\Sigma m}, \quad \eta = \frac{\Sigma my}{\Sigma m}.$$

If we turn the system through the angle α, the new coordinates of the masses will be

$$x_1 = x \cos\alpha - y \sin\alpha, \; y_1 = y \cos\alpha + x \sin\alpha$$

and consequently the coördinates of the centre of gravity

$$\xi_1 = \frac{\Sigma m (x \cos\alpha - y \sin\alpha)}{\Sigma m} = \cos\alpha \frac{\Sigma mx}{\Sigma m} - \sin\alpha \frac{\Sigma my}{\Sigma m}$$
$$= \xi \cos\alpha - \eta \sin\alpha$$

and, similarly,

$$\eta_1 = \eta \cos\alpha + \xi \sin\alpha.$$

We accordingly obtain the coördinates of the new centre of gravity, by simply transforming the coördinates of the first centre to the new axes.   The centre of gravity remains therefore *the self-same* point.   If we select the centre of gravity itself as origin, then $\Sigma mx = \Sigma my = 0$. On turning the system of axes, this relation continues to subsist. If, accordingly, equi-

In the direction here indicated the Archimedean
view certainly remained a serviceable one even after
no one longer entertained any doubt of the significance
of the product $P.L$, and after opinion on this point had
been established historically and by abundant verifica-
tion. (See Appendix, IV., p. 514.)

7. The manner in which the laws of the lever, as
handed down to us from Archimedes in their original
simple form, were further generalised and treated by
modern physicists, is very interesting and instructive.
LEONARDO DA VINCI (1452–1519), the famous painter
and investigator, appears to have been the first to rec-
ognise the importance of the general notion of the so-
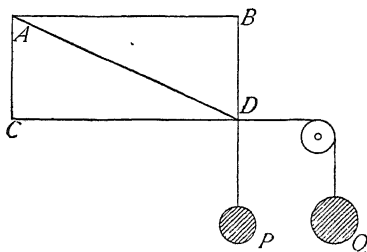
Fig. 13.

called statical moments. In the manuscripts he has
left us, several passages are found from which this
clearly appears. He says, for example : We have a
bar AD (Fig. 13) free to rotate about A, and suspended
from the bar a weight P, and suspended from a string
which passes over a pulley a second weight Q. What
must be the ratio of the forces that equilibrium may ob-
tain? The lever-arm for the weight P is not AD, but
the "potential" lever AB. The lever-arm for the
weight Q is not AD, but the "potential" lever AC.
The method by which Leonardo arrived at this view
is difficult to discover. But it is clear that he recog-

nised the essential circumstances by which the effect of the weight is determined.

Considerations similar to those of Leonardo da Vinci are also found in the writings of GUIDO UBALDI.

8. We will now endeavor to obtain some idea of the way in which the notion of statical moment, by which as we know is understood the product of a force into the perpendicular let fall from the axis of rotation upon the line of direction of the force, could have been arrived at,—although the way that really led to this idea is not now fully ascertainable. That equilibrium exists (Fig. 14) if we lay a cord, subjected at both sides to equal tensions, over a pulley, is perceived without difficulty. We shall always find a plane of symmetry for the apparatus—the plane which stands at right angles
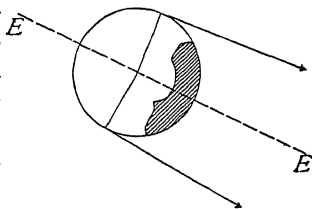
Fig. 14.

to the plane of the cord and bisects (EE) the angle made by its two parts. The motion that might be supposed possible cannot in this case be precisely determined or defined by any rule whatsoever : no motion will therefore take place. If we note, now, further, that the material of which the pulley is made is essential only to the

extent of determining the form of motion of the points of application of the strings, we shall likewise readily perceive that almost any portion of the pulley may be removed without disturbing the equilibrium of the machine. The rigid radii that lead out to the tangential points of the string, are alone essential. We see, thus, that the rigid radii (or the perpendiculars on the linear directions of the strings) play here a part similar to the lever-arms in the lever of Archimedes.

Let us examine a so-called wheel and axle (Fig.
15) of wheel-radius 2 and axle-radius 1, provided re-
spectively with the cord-hung loads 1 and 2; an appa-
ratus which corresponds in every respect to the lever
of Archimedes. If now we place about the axle, in
any manner we may choose, a second cord, which we
subject at each side to the tension of a weight 2, the
second cord will not disturb the equilibrium. It is
plain, however, that we are also permitted to regard
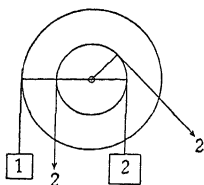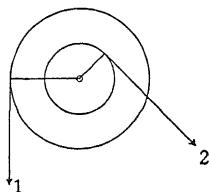
Fig. 15.   Fig. 16.

the two pulls marked in Fig. 16 as being in equilib-
rium, by leaving the two others, as mutually destruc-
tive, out of account. But we arrive in so doing, dis-
missing from consideration all unessential features, at
the perception that not only the pulls exerted by the
weights but also the perpendiculars let fall from the
axis on the lines of the pulls, are conditions deter-
minative of motion. The decisive factors are, then,
the products of the weights into the respective per-
pendiculars let fall from the axis on the directions of
the pulls; in other words, the so-called statical mo-
ments.

9. What we have so far considered, is the devel-
opment of our knowledge of the principle of the lever.
Quite independently of this was developed the knowl-
edge of the principle of the inclined plane. It is not
necessary, however, for the comprehension of the ma-

chines, to search after a new principle beyond that of
the lever; for the latter is sufficient by itself. Galileo,
for example, explains the inclined plane from the lever
in the following manner.
We have before us (Fig.
17) an inclined plane, on
which rests the weight
Q, held in equilibrium
by the weight P. Gali-
leo, now, points out the
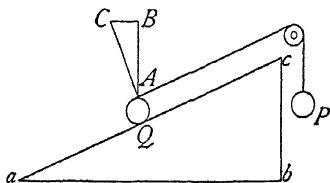
Fig. 17.

fact, that it is not requisite that Q should lie directly
upon the inclined plane, but that the essential point
is rather the form, or character, of the motion
of Q. We may, consequently, conceive the weight
attached to the bar AC, perpendicular to the inclined
plane, and rotatable about C. If then we institute a
very slight rotation about the point C, the weight will
move in the element of an arc coincident with the in-
clined plane. That the path assumes a curve on the
motion being continued is of no consequence here,
since this further movement does not in the case of
equilibrium take place, and the movement of the in-
stant alone is decisive. Reverting, however, to the
observation before mentioned of Leonardo da Vinci,
we readily perceive the validity of the theorem $Q.CB$
$= P.CA$ or $Q/P = CA/CB = ca/cb$, and thus reach
the law of equilibrium on the inclined plane. Once we
have reached the principle of the lever, we may, then,
easily apply that principle to the comprehension of
the other machines.

Galileo's
explanation
of the in-
clined
plane by
the lever.

II.

THE PRINCIPLE OF THE INCLINED PLANE.

1. STEVINUS, or STEVIN, (1548–1620) was the first who investigated the mechanical properties of the inclined plane; and he did so in an eminently original manner. If a weight lie (Fig. 18) on a horizontal table, we perceive at once, since the pressure is directly perpendicular to the plane of the table, by the principle of symmetry, that equilibrium subsists. On a
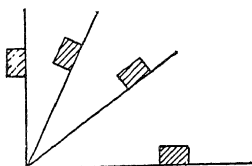
Fig. 18.

vertical wall, on the other hand, a weight is not at all obstructed in its motion of descent. The inclined plane accordingly will present an intermediate case between these two limiting suppositions. Equilibrium will not exist of itself, as it does on the horizontal support, but it will be maintained by a less weight than that necessary to preserve it on the vertical wall. The ascertainment of the statical law that obtains in this case, caused the earlier inquirers considerable difficulty.

Stevinus's manner of procedure is in substance as follows. He imagines a triangular prism with horizontally placed edges, a cross-section of which ABC is represented in Fig. 19. For the sake of illustration we will say that $AB = 2BC$; also that AC is horizontal. Over this prism Stevinus lays an endless string on which 14 balls of equal weight are strung and tied at equal distances apart. We can advantageously re- place this string by an endless uniform chain or cord. The chain will either be in equilibrium or it will not. If we assume the latter to be the case, the chain, since

the conditions of the event are not altered by its mo-
tion, must, when once actually in motion, continue to
move for ever, that is, it must present a perpetual mo-
tion, which Stevinus deems absurd. Consequently only
the first case is conceivable. The chain remains in equi-
librium. The symmetrical portion ADC may, there-
fore, without disturbing the equilibrium, be removed.
The portion AB of the chain consequently balances
the portion BC. Hence: on inclined planes of equal
heights equal weights act in the inverse proportion of
the lengths of the planes.
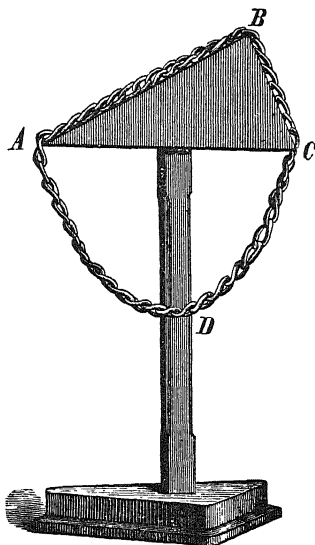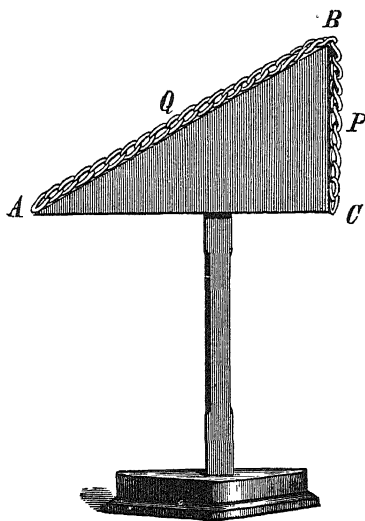
Fig. 19. Fig. 20.

In the cross-section of the prism in Fig. 20 let us
imagine AC horizontal, BC vertical, and $AB = 2BC$;
furthermore, the chain-weights Q and P on AB and
BC proportional to the lengths; it will follow then that

$Q/P = AB/BC = 2.$ The generalisation is self-evident.

2. Unquestionably in the assumption from which Stevinus starts, that the endless chain does not move. there is contained primarily only a *purely instinctive* cognition. He feels at once, and we with him, that we have never observed anything like a motion of the kind referred to, that a thing of such a character does not exist. This conviction has so much logical cogency that we accept the conclusion drawn from it respecting the law of equilibrium on the inclined plane without the thought of an objection, although the law if presented · as the simple result of experiment, or otherwise put,
would appear dubious. We cannot be surprised at this when we reflect that all results of experiment are obscured by adventitious circumstances (as friction, etc.), and that every conjecture as to the conditions which are determinative in a given case is liable to error. That Stevinus ascribes to instinctive knowledge of this sort a higher authority than to simple, manifest, direct observation might excite in us astonishment if we did not ourselves possess the same inclination. The question accordingly forces itself upon us: Whence does this higher authority come ? If we remember that scientific demonstration, and scientific criticism generally can only have sprung from the consciousness of the individual fallibility of investigators, the explanation is not far
to seek. We feel clearly, that we ourselves have contributed *nothing* to the creation of instinctive knowledge, that we have added to it nothing arbitrarily, but that it exists in absolute independence of our participation. Our mistrust of our own subjective interpretation of the facts observed, is thus dissipated.

Stevinus's deduction is one of the rarest fossil in-

dications that we possess in the primitive history of mechanics, and throws a wonderful light on the process of the formation of science generally, on its rise from instinctive knowledge. We will recall to mind that Archimedes pursued exactly the same tendency as Stevinus, only with much less good fortune. In later times, also, instinctive knowledge is very frequently taken as the starting-point of investigations. Every experimenter can daily observe in his own person the guidance that instinctive knowledge furnishes him. If he succeeds in abstractly formulating what is contained in it, he will as a rule have made an important advance in science.

Stevinus's procedure is no error. If an error were contained in it, we should all share it. Indeed, it is perfectly certain, that the union of the strongest instinct with the greatest power of abstract formulation alone constitutes the great natural inquirer. This by no means compels us, however, to create a new mysticism out of the instinctive in science and to regard this factor as infallible. That it is not infallible, we very easily discover. Even instinctive knowledge of so great logical force as the principle of symmetry employed by Archimedes, may lead us astray. Many of my readers will recall to mind, perhaps, the intellectual shock they experienced when they heard for the first time that a magnetic needle lying in the magnetic meridian is deflected in a definite direction away from the meridian by a wire conducting a current being carried along in a parallel direction above it. The instinctive is just as fallible as the distinctly conscious. Its only value is in provinces with which we are very familiar.

Let us rather put to ourselves, in preference to pursuing mystical speculations on this subject, the

The origin of instinctive knowledge. question: How does instinctive knowledge originate and what are its contents? Everything which we observe in nature imprints itself *uncomprehended* and *unanalysed* in our percepts and ideas, which, then, in their turn, mimic the processes of nature in their most general and most striking features. In these accumulated experiences we possess a treasure-store which is ever close at hand and of which only the smallest portion is embodied in clear articulate thought. The circumstance that it is far easier to resort to these experiences than it is to nature herself, and that they are, notwithstanding this, free, in the sense indicated, from all subjectivity, invests them with a high value. It is a peculiar property of instinctive knowledge that it is predominantly of a negative nature. We cannot so well say what must happen as we can what cannot happen, since the latter alone stands in glaring contrast to the obscure mass of experience in us in which single characters are not distinguished.

Instinctive knowledge and external realities mutually condition each other. Still, great as the importance of instinctive knowledge may be, for discovery, we must not, from our point of view, rest content with the recognition of its authority. We must inquire, on the contrary : Under what conditions could the instinctive knowledge in question have originated? We then ordinarily find that the very principle to establish which we had recourse to instinctive knowledge, constitutes in its turn the fundamental condition of the origin of that knowledge. And this is quite obvious and natural. Our instinctive knowledge leads us to the principle which explains that knowledge itself, and which is in its turn also corroborated by the existence of that knowledge, which is a separate fact by itself. This we will find on close examination is the state of things in Stevinus's case.

3. The reasoning of Stevinus impresses us as so apparently highly ingenious because the result at which he arrives apparently contains more than the assumption from which he starts. While on the one hand, to avoid contradictions, we are constrained to let the result pass, on the other an incentive remains which impels us to seek further insight. If Stevinus had distinctly set forth the entire fact in all its aspects, as Galileo subsequently did, his reasoning would no longer strike us as ingenious ; but we should have obtained a much more satisfactory and clear insight into the matter. In the endless chain which does not glide upon the prism, is contained, in fact, everything. We might say, the chain does not glide because no sinking of heavy bodies takes place here. This would not be accurate, however, for when the chain moves many of its links really do descend, while others rise in their place. We must say, therefore, more accurately, the chain does not glide because for every body that could possibly descend an equally heavy body would have to ascend equally high, or a body of double the weight half the height, and so on. This fact was familiar to Stevinus, who presented it, indeed, in his theory of pulleys ; but he was plainly too distrustful of himself to lay down the law, without additional support, as also valid for the inclined plane. But if such a law did not exist universally, our instinctive knowledge respecting the endless chain could never have originated. With this our minds are completely enlightened.—The fact that Stevinus did not go as far as this in his reasoning and rested content with bringing his (indirectly discovered) ideas into agreement with his instinctive thought, need not further disturb us. (See p. 515.)

The service which Stevinus renders himself and his

[margin note:] The ingenuity of Stevinus's reasoning.

[margin note:] Critique of Stevinus's deduction.

The merit of Stevinus's procedure. readers, consists, therefore, in the contrast and comparison of knowledge that is instinctive with knowledge that is clear, in the bringing the two into connection and accord with one another, and in the supporting

Fig. 21.
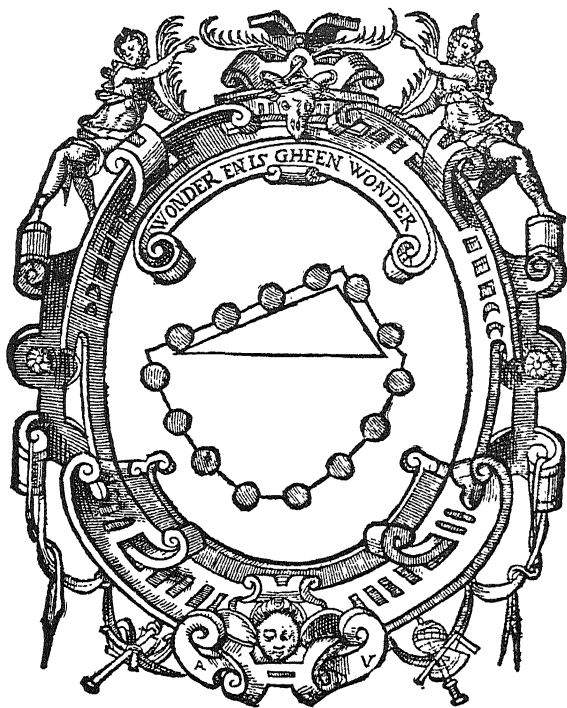
the one upon the other. The strengthening of mental view which Stevinus acquired by this procedure, we learn from the fact that a picture of the endless chain and the prism graces as vignette, with the inscription ''Wonder en is gheen wonder,'' the title-page of his

work *Hypomnemata Mathematica* (Leyden, 1605).* As
a fact, every enlightening progress made in science is
accompanied with a certain feeling of disillusionment.
We discover that that which appeared wonderful to
us is no more wonderful than other things which we
know instinctively and regard as self-evident ; nay,
that the contrary would be much more wonderful ; that
everywhere the same fact expresses itself. Our puzzle
turns out then to be a puzzle no more ; it vanishes into
nothingness, and takes its place. among the shadows
of history.

4. After he had arrived at the principle of the in-
clined plane, it was easy for Stevinus to apply that
principle to the other machines and to explain by it
their action.   He makes, for example, the following
application.

We have, let us suppose, an inclined plane (Fig.
22) and on it a load *Q*. We pass a string over the
pulley *A* at the summit and imagine the load *Q* held in
equilibrium by the load *P*.
Stevinus, now, proceeds by
a method similar to that
later taken by Galileo. He
remarks that it is not ne-
cessary that the load *Q*
should lie directly on the
inclined plane.   Provided
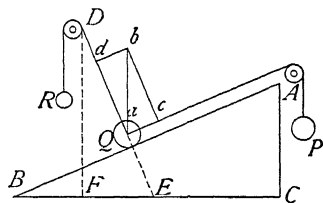
Fig. 22

only the form of the machine's motion be preserved, the
proportion between force and load will in all cases re-
main the same. We may therefore equally well conceive
the load *Q* to be attached to a properly weighted string
passing over a pulley *D:* which string is normal to the

---

* The title given is that of Willebrord Snell's Latin translation (1608) of
Simon Stevin's *Wisconstige Gedachtenissen*, Leyden, 1605.—*Trans.*

inclined plane. If we carry out this alteration, we
shall have a so-called funicular machine. We now
perceive that we can ascertain very easily the portion
of weight with which the body on the inclined plane
tends downwards. We have only to draw a vertical
line and to cut off on it a portion ab corresponding to
the load Q. Then drawing on aA the perpendicular
bc, we have $P/Q = AC/AB = ac/ab$. Therefore ac
represents the tension of the string aA. Nothing pre-
vents us, now, from making the two strings change

functions and from imagining the load Q to lie on the
dotted inclined plane EDF. Similarly, here, we ob-
tain ad for the tension of the second string. In this
manner, accordingly, Stevinus indirectly arrives at a
knowledge of the statical relations of the funicular
machine and of the so-called parallelogram of forces ; at
first, of course, only for the particular case of strings
(or forces) ac, ad at right angles to one another.

The general
form of the
last-men-
tioned prin-
ciple also
employed. Subsequently, indeed, Stevinus employs the prin-
ciple of the composition and resolution of forces in
a more general form ; yet the method by which he
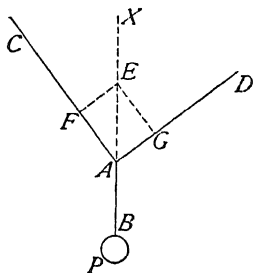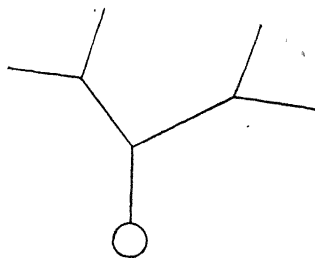
Fig. 23.   Fig. 24.

reached the principle, is not very clear, or at least is
not obvious. He remarks, for example, that if we
have three strings AB, AC, AD, stretched at any

given angles, and the weight P is suspended from the first, the tensions may be determined in the following manner. We produce (Fig. 23) AB to X and cut off on it a portion AE. Drawing from the point E, EF parallel to AD and EG paral-lel to AC, the tensions of AB, AC, AD are respectively pro-portional to AE, AF, AG.

Fig. 25.

With the assistance of this principle of construction Ste-vinus solves highly compli-cated problems. He determines, for instance, the tensions of a system of ramifying strings like that illustrated in Fig. 24; in doing which of course he starts from the given tension of the vertical string.
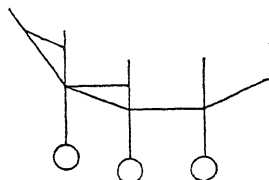
Solution of other com-plicated problems.

The relations of the tensions of a funicular polygon are likewise ascertained by construction, in the man-ner indicated in Fig. 25.

We may therefore, by means of the principle of the inclined plane, seek to elucidate the conditions of op-eration of the other simple machines, in a manner sim-ilar to that which we employed in the case of the prin-ciple of the lever.

General re-sult.

III.

THE PRINCIPLE OF THE COMPOSITION OF FORCES.

1. The principle of the parallelogram of forces, at which STEVINUS arrived and employed, (yet without ex-pressly formulating it,) consists, as we know, of the following truth. If a body A (Fig. 26) is acted upon by two forces whose directions coincide with the lines AB and AC, and whose magnitudes are proportional to the lengths AB and AC, these two forces produce the

The princi-ple of the parallelo-gram of forces.

same effect as a single force, which acts in the direction of the diagonal AD of the parallelogram $ABCD$ and is proportional to that diagonal. For instance, if on the

Fig. 26.

strings AB, AC weights exactly proportional to the lengths AB, AC be supposed to act, a single weight acting on the string AD exactly proportional to the length AD will produce the same effect as the first two. The forces AB and AC are called the components, the force AD the resultant. It is furthermore obvious, that conversely, a *single* force is replaceable by two or several other forces.

2. We shall now endeavor, in connection with the investigations of Stevinus, to give ourselves some idea

Fig. 27.

of the manner in which the general proposition of the parallelogram of forces might have been arrived at. The relation,—discovered by Stevinus,— that exists between two mutually perpendicular forces and a third force that equilibrates them, we shall assume as (indirectly) given. We suppose now (Fig. 27) that there act on three strings OX, OY, OZ, pulls which balance each other. Let us endeavor to determine the nature of these pulls. Each pull holds the two remaining ones in equilibrium. The pull OY we will replace

(following Stevinus's principle) by two new rectangular
pulls, one in the direction *Ou* (the prolongation of
OX), and one at right angles thereto in the direction
Ov. And let us similarly resolve the pull *OZ* in the
directions *Ou* and *Ow*. The sum of the pulls in the di-
rection *Ou*, then, must balance the pull *OX*, and the
two pulls in the directions *Ov* and *Ow* must mutually
destroy each other. Taking the two latter as equal
and opposite, and representing them by *Om* and *On*,
we determine coincidently with the operation the com-
ponents *Op* and *Oq* parallel to *Ou*, as well also as the
pulls *Or*, *Os*. Now the sum *Op* + *Oq* is equal and op-
posite to the pull in the direction of *OX;* and if we
draw *st* parallel to *OY*, or *rt* parallel to *OZ*, either line
will cut off the portion *Ot* = *Op* + *Oq* : with which re-
sult the general principle of the parallelogram of forces
is reached.

The general case of composition may be deduced
in still another way from the special composition of
rectangular forces. Let *OA* and *OB* be the two forces
acting at *O*. For *OB* substitute
a force *OC* acting parallel to
OA and a force *OD* acting at
right angles to *OA*. There
then act for *OA* and *OB* the
two forces *OE* = *OA* + *OC*

Fig. 28.

and *OD*, the resultant of which forces *OF* is at the same
time the diagonal of the parallelogram *OAFB* con-
structed on *OA* and *OB* as sides.
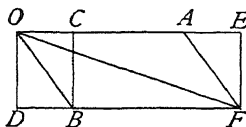
3. The principle of the parallelogram of forces,
when reached by the method of Stevinus, presents it-
self as an *indirect* discovery. It is exhibited as a con-
sequence and as the condition of known facts. We
perceive, however, merely that it *does* exist, not, as yet

why it exists; that is, we cannot reduce it (as in dy-
namics) to still simpler propositions. In statics, in-
deed, the principle was not fully admitted until the
time of Varignon, when dynamics, which leads directly
to the principle, was already so far advanced that its
adoption therefrom presented no difficulties. The prin-
ciple of the parallelogram of forces was first clearly
enunciated by NEWTON in his *Principles of Natural Phi-
losophy*. In the same year, VARIGNON, independently of
Newton, also enunciated the principle, in a work sub-
mitted to the Paris Academy (but not published un-
til after its author's death), and made, by the aid of a
geometrical theorem, extended practical application
of it. *

The geometrical theorem referred to is this. If we
consider (Fig. 29) a parallelogram the sides of which
are p and q, and the diagonal is r, and from any point m
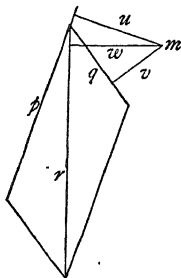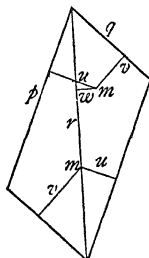
in the plane of the par-
allelogram we draw per-
pendiculars on these
three straight lines,
which perpendiculars
we will designate as
u, v, w, then $p \cdot u +
q \cdot v = r \cdot w$. This is
easily proved by draw-
ing straight lines from m

Fig. 29.　　　　Fig. 30.

to the extremities of the diagonal and of the sides of
the parallelogram, and considering the areas of the
triangles thus formed, which are equal to the halves
of the products specified. If the point m be taken
within the parallelogram and perpendiculars then be

* In the same year, 1687, Father Bernard Lami published a little appendix
to his *Traité de méchanique*, developing the same principle.—*Trans.*

drawn, the theorem passes into the form $p \cdot u - q \cdot v = r \cdot w$. Finally, if m be taken on the diagonal and perpendiculars again be drawn, we shall get, since the perpendicular let fall on the diagonal is now zero, $p \cdot u - q \cdot v = 0$ or $p \cdot u = q \cdot v$.

With the assistance of the observation that forces The deduc-
tion. are proportional to the motions produced by them in equal intervals of time, Varignon easily advances from the composition of motions to the composition of forces. Forces, which acting at a point are represented in magnitude and direction by the sides of a parallelogram, are replaceable by a single force, similarly represented by the diagonal of that parallelogram.

If now, in the parallelogram considered, p and q Moments of
forces. represent the concurrent forces (the components) and r the force competent to take their place (the resultant), then the products pu, qv, rw are called the moments of these forces with respect to the point m. If the point m lie in the direction of the resultant, the two moments pu and qv are with respect to it equal to each other.

4. With the assistance of this principle Varignon is Varignon's
treatment
of the sim-
ple ma-
chines. now in a position to treat the machines in a much simpler manner than were his predecessors. Let us consider, for example, (Fig. 31) a rigid body capable of rotation about an axis passing through O. Perpendicular to the axis we conceive a plane, and select therein two

Fig. 31.

points A, B, on which two forces P and Q in the plane are supposed to act. We recognise with Varignon

The deduc-
tion of the
law of the
lever from
the paral-
lelogram-
principle. that the effect of the forces is not altered if their points
of application be displaced along their line of action,
since all points in the same direction are rigidly con-
nected with one another and each one presses and pulls
the other.   We may, accordingly, suppose P applied
at any point in the direction AX, and Q at any point
in the direction BY, consequently also at their point
of intersection M. With the forces as displaced to M,
then, we construct a parallelogram, and replace the
forces by their resultant.   We have now to do only
with the effect of the latter. If it act only on movable
points, equilibrium will not obtain.   If, however, the
direction of its action pass through the axis, through
the point O, which is not movable, no motion can take
place and equilibrium will obtain.   In the latter case
O is a point on the resultant, and if we drop the per-
pendiculars u and v from O on the directions of the
forces p, q, we shall have, in conformity with the the-
orem before mentioned, $p \cdot u = q \cdot v$. With this we
have deduced the law of the lever from the principle
of the parallelogram of forces.

Varignon explains in like manner a number of other
cases of equilibrium by the equilibration of the result-
ant force by some obstacle or restraint.   On the in-
clined plane, for example, equilibrium exists if the re-
sultant is found to be at right angles to the plane.   In
fact, Varignon rests statics in its entirety on a dynamic
foundation; to his mind, it is but a special case of dy-
namics.   The more general dynamical case constantly
hovers before him and he restricts himself in his inves-
tigation voluntarily to the case of equilibrium.   We
are confronted here with a dynamical statics, such
as was possible only after the researches of Galileo.
Incidentally, it may be remarked, that from Varignon

is derived the majority of the theorems and methods of presentation which make up the statics of modern elementary text-books.

5. As we have already seen, purely statical consid-erations also lead to the proposition of the parallel-ogram of forces. In special cases, in fact, the principle admits of being very easily verified. We recognise at once, for instance, that any number whatsoever of equal forces acting (by pull or pressure) in the same plane at a point, around which their suc-cessive lines make equal angles, are in equilibrium. If, for exam-ple, (Fig. 32) the three equal forces *OA*, *OB*, *OC* act on the point *O* at angles of 120°, each two of the forces holds the third in equilibrium. We see imme-diately that the resultant of *OA* and *OB* is equal and opposite to *OC*. It is represented by *OD* and is at the same time the diagonal of the parallelogram *OADB*, which readily follows from the fact that the radius of a circle is also the side of the hexagon included by it.
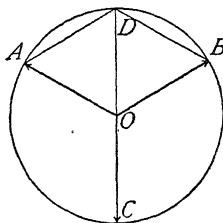
Fig. 32.

6. If the concurrent forces act in the same or in opposite directions, the resultant is equal to the sum or the difference of the components. We rec-ognise both cases with-out any difficulty as particular cases of the principle of the paral-lelogram of forces. If in the two drawings of Fig. 33 we imagine the angle *AOB* to be gradually reduced to the value 0°, and the angle *A' O' B'* increased to the
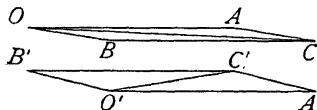
Fig. 33.

. value 180°, we shall perceive that OC passes into $OA +$ $AC = OA + OB$ and $O'C'$ into $O'A' — A'C' = O'A'$ $— O'B'$. The principle of the parallelogram of forces includes, accordingly, propositions which are generally made to precede it as independent theorems.

The princi-ple a propo-sition de-rived from experience.

7. The principle of the parallelogram of forces, in the form in which it was set forth by Newton and Varignon, clearly discloses itself as a proposition derived from experience. A point acted on by two forces describes with accelerations proportional to the forces two mutually independent motions. On this fact the parallelogram construction is based. DANIEL BER-NOULLI, however, was of opinion that the proposition of the parallelogram of forces was a *geometrical* truth, independent of physical experience. And he attempted to furnish for it a geometrical demonstration, the chief features of which we shall here take into consideration, as the Bernoullian view has not, even at the present day, entirely disappeared.

Daniel Ber-noulli's at-tempted *geometrical* demonstra-tion of the truth.

If two equal forces, at right angles to each other (Fig. 34), act on a point, there can be no doubt, according to Bernoulli, that the line of bisection of the angle (conformably to the principle of symmetry) is the direction of the resultant r. To determine geometrically also the magnitude of the resultant, each of the forces p is decomposed into two equal forces q, parallel and perpendicular to r. The relation in respect of magnitude thus produced between p and q is consequently the same as that between r and p. We have, accordingly:
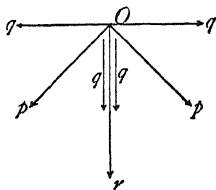
$$p = \mu \cdot q \text{ and } r = \mu \cdot p; \text{ whence } r = \mu^2 q.$$

Fig 34.

Since, however, the forces q acting at right angles to r destroy each other, while those parallel to r constitute the resultant, it further follows that

$$r = 2q; \text{ hence } \mu = \sqrt{2}, \text{ and } r = \sqrt{2} \cdot p.$$

The resultant, therefore, is represented also in respect of magnitude by the diagonal of the square constructed on p as side.

Similarly, the magnitude may be determined of the resultant of unequal rectangular components. Here, however, nothing is known before-hand concerning the direction of the resultant r. If we decompose the components p, q (Fig. 35), parallel and perpendicular to the yet undetermined direction r, into the forces u, s and v, t, the new forces will form with the components p, q the same angles that p,

Fig. 35.

The case of unequal rectangular components

q form with r. From which fact the following relations in respect of magnitude are determined:

$$\frac{r}{p} = \frac{p}{u} \text{ and } \frac{r}{q} = \frac{q}{v}, \ \frac{r}{q} = \frac{p}{s} \text{ and } \frac{r}{p} = \frac{q}{t},$$

from which two latter equations follows $s = t = pq/r$. On the other hand, however,

$$r = u + v = \frac{p^2}{r} + \frac{q^2}{r} \text{ or } r^2 = p^2 + q^2.$$

The diagonal of the rectangle constructed on p and q represents accordingly the magnitude of the resultant.

Therefore, for all rhombs, the *direction* of the resultant is determined; for all rectangles, the *magnitude;* and for squares both magnitude *and* direction. Bernoulli then solves the problem of substituting for

General results.

two equal forces acting at one given angle, other equal, equivalent forces acting at a different angle ; and finally arrives by circumstantial considerations, not wholly exempt from mathematical objections, but amended later by Poisson, at the general principle.

8. Let us now examine the physical aspect of this question. As a proposition derived from experience, the principle of the parallelogram of forces was already known to Bernoulli. What Bernoulli really does, therefore, is to simulate towards himself *a complete ignorance* of the proposition and then attempt to philosophise it abstractly out of the fewest possible assumptions. Such work is by no means devoid of meaning and purpose. On the contrary, we discover by such procedures, how few and how imperceptible the *experiences* are that suffice to supply a principle. Only we must not deceive ourselves, as Bernoulli did ; we must keep before our minds *all* the assumptions, and should overlook no experience which we involuntarily employ. What are the assumptions, then, contained in Bernoulli's deduction?

9. Statics, primarily, is acquainted with force only as a pull or a pressure, that from whatever source it may come always admits of being replaced by the pull or the pressure of a weight. All forces thus may be regarded as quantities *of the same kind* and be measured by weights. Experience further instructs us, that the particular factor of a force which is determinative of equilibrium or determinative of motion, is contained not only in the *magnitude* of the force but also in its *direction*, which is made known by the direction of the resulting motion, by the direction of a stretched cord, or in some like manner. We may ascribe magnitude indeed to other things given in physical experience,

such as temperature, potential function, but not direction. The fact that both magnitude *and* direction are determinative in the efficiency of a force impressed on a point is an important though it may be an unobtrusive experience.

Granting, then, that the magnitude and direction of forces impressed on a point *alone* are decisive, it will be perceived that two equal and opposite forces, as they cannot *uniquely* and precisely determine *any* motion, are in equilibrium. So, also, at right angles to its direction, a force *p* is unable uniquely to determine a motional effect. But if a force *p* is inclined at an angle to another direction *s s'* (Fig. 36), it *is* able to determine a motion in that direction. Yet experience alone can inform us, that the motion is determined in the direction of *s' s* and not in that of *s s'* ; that is to say, in the direction of the side of the *acute* angle or in the direction of the *projection* of *p* on *s's*.
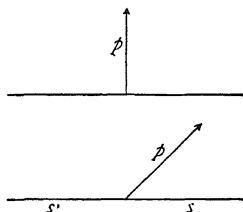
Fig. 36.

Now this latter experience is made use of by Bernoulli at the very start. The *sense*, namely, of the resultant of two equal forces acting at right angles to one another is obtainable only on the ground of this experience. From the principle of symmetry follows only, that the resultant falls in the *plane* of the forces and coincides with the line of bisection of the angle, not however that it falls in the *acute* angle. But if we surrender this latter determination, our whole proof is exploded before it is begun.

10. If, now, we have reached the conviction that our knowledge of the effect of the *direction* of a force is

solely obtainable from experience, still less then shall we believe it in our power to ascertain by any other way the *form* of this effect. It is utterly out of our power, to divine, that a force p acts in a direction s that makes with its own direction the angle α, exactly as a force $p \cos \alpha$ in the direction s; a statement equivalent to the proposition of the parallelogram of forces. Nor was it in Bernoulli's power to do this. Nevertheless, he makes use, scarcely perceptible it is true, of experiences that involve by implication this very mathematical fact.

A person already *familiar* with the composition and resolution of forces is well aware that several forces acting at a point are, as regards their effect, replaceable, in *every* respect and in *every* direction, by a *single* force. This knowledge, in Bernoulli's mode of proof, is expressed in the fact that the forces p, q are regarded as absolutely qualified to replace in all respects the forces s, u and t, v, as well in the direction of r as in every other direction. Similarly r is regarded as the equivalent of p and q. It is further assumed as wholly indifferent, whether we estimate s, u, t, v first in the directions of p, q, and then p, q in the direction of r, or s, u, t, v be estimated directly and from the outset in the direction of r. But this is something that a person only can know who has antecedently acquired a very extensive experience concerning the composition and resolution of forces. We reach most simply the knowledge of the fact referred to, by starting from the knowledge of another fact, namely that a force p acts in a direction making with its own an angle α, with an effect equivalent to $p \cdot \cos \alpha$. As a fact, this is the way the perception of the truth *was* reached.

Let the coplanar forces P, P', P''. . . be applied to

one and the same point at the angles α, α', α'' . . . with
a given direction X. These forces, let us suppose, are
replaceable by a single force Π, which makes with X
an angle μ. By the familiar principle we have then

$$\Sigma P \cos\alpha = \Pi \cos\mu.$$

If Π is still to remain the substitute of this system of
forces, whatever direction X may take on the system
being turned through any angle δ, we shall further
have

$$\Sigma P \cos(\alpha + \delta) = \Pi \cos(\mu + \delta),$$

or

$$(\Sigma P\cos\alpha - \Pi\cos\mu)\cos\delta - (\Sigma P\sin\alpha - \Pi\sin\mu)\sin\delta = 0.$$

If we put

$$\Sigma P \cos\alpha - \Pi \cos\mu = A,$$
$$-(\Sigma P\sin\alpha - \Pi\sin\mu) = B,$$
$$\tan\tau = \frac{B}{A},$$

it follows that

$$A\cos\delta + B\sin\delta = \sqrt{A^2 + B^2}\,\sin(\delta + \tau) = 0,$$

which equation can subsist for *every* δ only on the con-
dition that

$$A = \Sigma P\cos\alpha - \Pi\cos\mu = 0$$

and

$$B = (\Sigma P\sin\alpha - \Pi\sin\mu) = 0 \; ;$$

whence results

$$\Pi\cos\mu = \Sigma P\cos\alpha$$
$$\Pi\sin\mu = \Sigma P\sin\alpha.$$

From these equations follow for Π and μ the deter-
minate values

$$\Pi = \sqrt{[(\Sigma P\sin\alpha)^2 + (\Sigma P\cos\alpha)^2]}$$

and

$$\tan\mu = \frac{\Sigma P\sin\alpha}{\Sigma P\cos\alpha}.$$

The actual
results not
deducible
on any
other sup-
position. Granting, therefore, that the effect of a force in every
direction can be measured by its projection on that di-
rection, then truly every system of forces acting at a
point is replaceable by a *single* force, determinate in
magnitude and direction. This reasoning does not hold,
however, if we put in the place of $\cos \alpha$ any general func-
tion of an angle, $\varphi(\alpha)$. Yet if this be done, and we still
regard the resultant as determinate, we shall obtain for
$\varphi(\alpha)$, as may be seen, for example, from Poisson's
deduction, the form $\cos \alpha$. The experience that several
forces acting at a point are always, in every respect,
replaceable by a single force, is therefore *mathemat-
ically equivalent* to the principle of the parallelogram
of forces or to the principle of projection.   The prin-
ciple of the parallelogram or of projection is, how-
ever, much easier reached by observation than the
more general experience above mentioned by statical
observations.   And as a fact, the principle of the par-
allelogram was reached earlier.   It would require in-
deed an almost superhuman power of ·perception to
deduce mathematically, without the guidance of any
further knowledge of the actual conditions of the ques-
tion, the principle of the parallelogram from the gen-
eral principle of the equivalence of several forces to a
single one.   We criticise accordingly in the deduction
of Bernoulli this, that that which is easier to observe
is reduced to that which is more difficult to observe.
This is a violation of the economy of science.   Bernoulli
is also deceived in imagining that he does not proceed
from any fact whatever of observation.

We must further remark that the fact that the forces
are independent of one another, which is involved in
the law of their composition, is another experience
which Bernoulli throughout tacitly employs.   As long

as we have to do with uniform or symmetrical systems of forces, all equal in magnitude, each can be affected by the others, even if they are not independent, only to the same extent and in the same way. Given but three forces, however, of which two are symmetrical to the third, and even then the reasoning, provided we admit that the forces may not be independent, presents considerable difficulties.

11. Once we have been led, directly or indirectly, to the principle of the parallelogram of forces, once we have *perceived* it, the principle is just as much an observation as any other. If the observation is recent, it of course is not accepted with the same confidence as old and frequently verified observations. We then seek to support the new observation by the old, to demonstrate their agreement. By and by the new observation acquires equal standing with the old. It is then no longer necessary constantly to reduce it to the latter. Deduction of this character is expedient only in cases in which observations that are difficult directly to obtain can be reduced to simpler ones more easily obtained, as is done with the principle of the parallelogram of forces in dynamics.

12. The proposition of the parallelogram of forces has also been illustrated by experiments especially instituted for the purpose. An apparatus very well adapted to this end was contrived by Cauchy. The centre of a horizontal divided circle (Fig. 37) is marked by a pin. Three threads f, f', f'', tied together at a point, are passed over grooved wheels r, r', r'', which can be fixed at any point in the circumference of the circle, and are loaded by the weights p, p', p''. If three equal weights be attached, for instance, and the wheels placed at the marks of division 0, 120, 240, the point at

which the strings are knotted will assume a position just above the centre of the circle. Three equal forces acting at angles of 120°, accordingly, are in equilibrium.
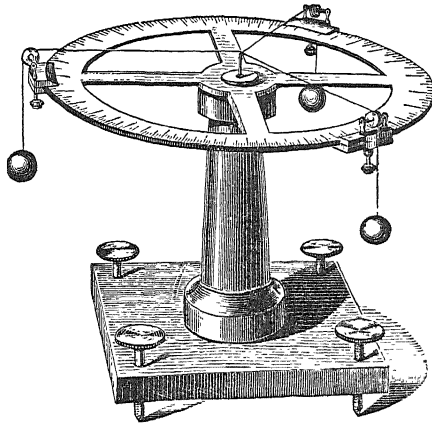
Fig. 37.

If we wish to represent another and different case, we may proceed as follows. We imagine any two forces p, q acting at any angle α, represent (Fig. 38) them by lines, and construct on them as sides a parallelogram. We supply, further, a force equal and opposite to the resultant r. The three forces p, q, $-r$ hold each other in equilibrium, at the angles visible from the construction. We now place the wheels of the divided circle on the points of division o, α, $\alpha + \beta$, and load the appropriate strings with the weights p, q, r. The point at which the strings are knotted will come to a position exactly above the middle point of the circle.
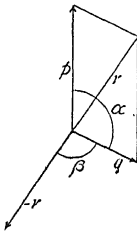
Fig. 38.

IV.

THE PRINCIPLE OF VIRTUAL VELOCITIES.

1. We now pass to the discussion of the principle of virtual (possible) displacements.* The truth of this principle was first remarked by STEVINUS at the close of the sixteenth century in his investigations on the equilibrium of pulleys and combinations of pulleys. Stevinus treats combinations of pulleys in the same way they are treated at the present day. In the case

---

*Termed in English the principle of "virtual velocities," this being the original phrase (*vitesse virtuelle*) introduced by John Bernoulli. See the text, page 56. The word *virtualis* seems to have been the fabrication of Duns Scotus (see the *Century Dictionary*, under *virtual*); but *virtualiter* was used by Aquinas, and *virtus* had been employed for centuries to translate δύναμις, and therefore as a synonym for *potentia*. Along with many other scholastic terms, *virtual* passed into the ordinary vocabulary of the English language. Everybody remembers the passage in the third book of *Paradise Lost*,

> " Love not the heav'nly Spirits, and how thir Love
> Express they, by looks onely, or do they mix
> Irradiance, *virtual* or immediate touch ? "—*Milton*.

So, we all remember how it was claimed before our revolution that America had "*virtual* representation " in parliament. In these passages, as in Latin, *virtual* means : existing in effect, but not actually. In the same sense, the word passed into French ; and was made pretty common among philosophers by Leibnitz. Thus, he calls innate ideas in the mind of a child, not yet brought to consciousness, " des connoissances *virtuelles*."

The principle in question was an extension to the case of more than two forces of the old rule that "what a machine gains in *power*, it loses in *velocity*." Bernoulli's modification reads that the sum of the products of the forces into their virtual velocities must vanish to give equilibrium. He says, in effect : give the system any possible and infinitesimal motion you please, and then the simultaneous displacements of the points of application of the forces, *resolved in the directions of those forces*, though they are not exactly velocities, since they are only displacements in one time, are, nevertheless, *virtually* velocities, for the purpose of applying the rule that what a machine gains in power, it loses in *velocity*.

Thomson and Tait say : "If the point of application of a force be displaced through a small space, the resolved part of the displacement in the direction of the force has been called its *Virtual Velocity*. This is positive or negative according as the virtual velocity is in the same, or in the opposite, direction to that of the force." This agrees with Bernoulli's definition which may be found in Varignon's *Nouvelle mécanique*, Vol. II, Chap. ix.—*Trans.*

a (Fig. 39) equilibrium obtains, when an equal weight P
is suspended at each side, for reasons already familiar.
In b, the weight P is suspended by two parallel cords,
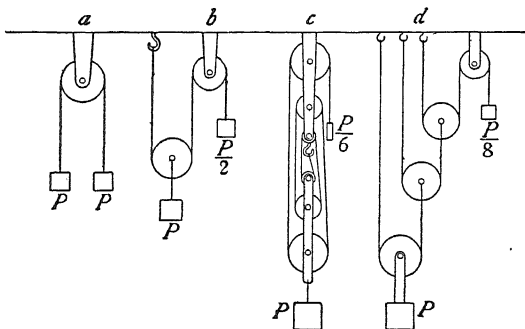
Fig. 39.

each of which accordingly supports the weight $P/2$,
with which weight in the case of equilibrium the free
end of the cord must also be loaded.   In c, P is sus-
pended by six cords, and the weighting of the free ex-
tremity with $P/6$ will accordingly produce equilibrium.
In d, the so-called Archimedean or potential pulley,* P
in the first instance is suspended by two cords, each
of which supports $P/2$; one of these two cords in turn
is suspended by two others, and so on to the end, so
that the free extremity will be held in equilibrium by
the weight $P/8$.   If we impart to these assemblages
of pulleys displacements corresponding to a descent of
the weight P through the distance h, we shall observe
that as a result of the arrangement of the cords

$$\left.\begin{array}{lll} \text{the counterweight} & P \\ \text{``} & \text{``} & P/2 \\ \text{``} & \text{``} & P/6 \\ \text{``} & \text{``} & P/8 \end{array}\right\} \text{will ascend} \left\{\begin{array}{lll} \text{a distance } h \text{ in } a \\ \text{``} & \text{``} & 2h \text{ `` } b \\ \text{``} & \text{``} & 6h \text{ `` } c \\ \text{``} & \text{``} & 8h \text{ `` } d \end{array}\right.$$

* These terms are not in use in English.—*Trans.*

In a system of pulleys in equilibrium, therefore, the products of the weights into the displacements they sustain are respectively equal. (" Ut spatium agentis ad spatium patientis, sic potentia patientis ad potentiam agentis."—Stevini, *Hypomnemata*, T. IV, lib. 3, p. 172.) In this remark is contained the germ of the principle of virtual displacements.

His conclusions the germ of the principle.

2. GALILEO recognised the truth of the principle in another case, and that a somewhat more general one; namely, in its application to the inclined plane. On an inclined plane (Fig. 40), the length of which AB is double the height BC, a load Q placed on AB is held in equilibrium by the load P acting along the height BC, if $P = Q/2$. If the machine be

Galileo's recognition of the principle in the case of the inclined plane.
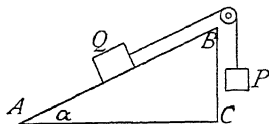
Fig. 40.

set in motion, $P = Q/2$ will descend, say, the vertical distance h, and Q will ascend the same distance h along the incline AB. Galileo, now, allowing the phenomenon to exercise its full effect on his mind, perceives, that equilibrium is determined not by the weights alone but also by their *possible approach to and recession from the centre of the earth.* Thus, while $Q/2$ descends along the vertical height the distance h, Q ascends h along the inclined length, vertically, however, only $h/2$; the result being that the products $Q(h/2)$ and $(Q/2)h$ come out equal on both sides. The elucidation that Galileo's observation affords and the light it diffuses, can hardly be emphasised strongly enough. The observation is so natural and unforced, moreover, that we admit it at once. What can appear simpler than that no motion takes place in a system of heavy

Character of Galileo's observation

bodies when on the whole no heavy mass can descend. Such a fact appears instinctively acceptable.

Galileo's conception of the inclined plane strikes us as much less ingenious than that of Stevinus, but we recognise it as more natural and more profound. It is in this fact that Galileo discloses such scientific greatness : that he had the *intellectual audacity* to see, in a subject long before investigated, *more* than his predecessors had seen, and to trust to his own perceptions. With the frankness that was characteristic of him he unreservedly places before the reader his own view, together with the considerations that led him to it.

3. TORRICELLI, by the employment of the notion of "centre of gravity," has put Galileo's principle in a form in which it appeals still more to our instincts, but in which it is also incidentally applied by Galileo himself. According to Torricelli equilibrium exists in a machine when, on a displacement being imparted to it, the centre of gravity of the weights attached thereto cannot descend. On the supposition of a displacement in the inclined plane last dealt with, P, let us say, descends the distance h, in compensation wherefor Q vertically ascends $h . \sin \alpha$. Assuming that the centre of gravity does not descend, we shall have

$$\frac{P . h - Q . h \sin \alpha}{P + Q} = 0, \text{ or } P . h - Q . h \sin \alpha = 0,$$

or

$$P = Q \sin \alpha = Q \frac{BC}{AB}.$$

If the weights bear to one another some different proportion, then the centre of gravity *can* descend when a displacement is made, and equilibrium will not obtain. We expect the state of equilibrium *instinctively*, when the centre of gravity of a system of heavy bodies can-

not descend. The Torricellian form of expression, how-
ever, contains in no respect more than the Galilean.

4. As with systems of pulleys and with the inclined
plane, so also the validity of the principle of virtual
displacements is easily demonstrable for the other ma-
chines : for the lever, the wheel and axle, and the rest.
In a wheel and axle, for instance, with the radii R, r
and the respective weights P, Q, equilibrium exists,
as we know, when $PR = Qr$. If we turn the wheel
and axle through the angle α, P will descend $R\alpha$, and
Q will ascend $r\alpha$. According to the conception of
Stevinus and Galileo, when equilibrium exists, $P . R\alpha$
$= Q . r\alpha$, which equation expresses the same thing as
the preceding one.

5. When we compare a system of heavy bodies in
which motion is taking place, with a similar system
which is in equilibrium, the question forces itself upon
us : What constitutes the difference of the two cases?
What is the factor operative here that determines mo-
tion, the factor that disturbs equilibrium,—the factor
that is present in the one case and absent in the other?
Having put this question to himself, Galileo discovers
that not only the weights, but also the distances of
their vertical descents (the amounts of their vertical
displacements) are the factors that determine motion.
Let us call $P, P', P'' \ldots$ the weights of a system of
heavy bodies, and $h, h', h'' \ldots$ their respective, simul-
taneously possible vertical displacements, where dis-
placements downwards are reckoned as positive, and
displacements upwards as negative. Galileo finds
then, that the criterion or test of the state of equilib-
rium is contained in the fulfilment of the condition
$Ph + P'h' + P''h'' + \ldots = 0$. The sum $Ph + P'h'$
$+ P''h'' + \ldots$ is the factor that destroys equilibrium,

the factor that determines motion. Owing to its importance this sum has in recent times been characterised by the special designation *work*.

6. Whereas the earlier investigators, in the comparison of cases of equilibrium and cases of motion, directed their attention to the weights and their distances from the axis of rotation and recognised *the statical moments* as the decisive factors involved, Galileo fixes his attention on the weights and their distances of descent and discerns *work* as the decisive factor involved. It cannot of course be prescribed to the inquirer *what* mark or criterion of the condition of equilibrium he shall take account of, when several are present to choose from. The result alone can determine whether his choice is the right one. But if we cannot, for rea-

sons already stated, regard the significance of the statical moments as given independently of experience, as something self-evident, no more can we entertain this view with respect to the import of work. Pascal errs, and many modern inquirers share this error with him, when he says, on the occasion of applying the principle of virtual displacements to fluids: "Etant clair que c'est la même chose de faire faire un pouce de chemin à cent livres d'eau, que de faire faire cent pouces de chemin à une livre d'eau." This is correct only on the supposition that we have already come to recognise work as the decisive factor; and that it is so is a fact which experience alone can disclose.

If we have an equal-armed, equally-weighted lever before us, we recognise the equilibrium of the lever as the only effect that is uniquely determined, whether we regard the weights and the distances or the weights and the vertical displacements as the conditions that determine motion. Experimental knowledge of this

or a similar character must, however, in the necessity of
the case precede any judgment of ours with regard to
the phenomenon in question. The particular way in
which the disturbance of equilibrium depends on the
conditions mentioned, that is to say, the significance
of the statical moment (PL) or of the work (Ph), is
even less capable of being philosophically excogitated
than the general fact of the dependence.

7. When two equal weights with equal and op-posite possible displacements are opposed to each other, we recognise at once the subsistence of equilib-rium. We might now be tempted to reduce the more general case of the weights P, P' with the capacities of displacement h, h', where Reduction of the general case of the princi-ple to the simpler and special case

$Ph = P'h'$, to the sim-
pler case. Suppose we
have, for example, (Fig.
41) the weights 3 P and
4 P on a wheel and axle
with the radii 4 and 3.
We divide the weights
into equal portions of the
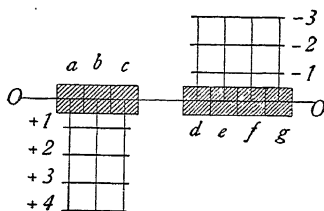
Fig 41.

definite magnitude P, which we designate by a, b, c,
d, e, f, g. We then transport a, b, c to the level $+ 3$,
and d, e, f to the level $- 3$. The weights will, of
themselves, neither enter on this displacement nor
will they resist it. We then take simultaneously the
weight g at the level 0 and the weight a at the level
$+ 3$, push the first upwards to $- 1$ and the second
downwards to $+ 4$, then again, and in the same way,
g to $- 2$ and b to $+ 4$, g to $- 3$ and c to $+ 4$. To all
these displacements the weights offer no resistance,
nor do they produce them of themselves. Ultimately,
however, a, b, c (or $3P$) appear at the level $+ 4$ and

d, e, f, g (or $4P$) at the level — 3. Consequently,
with respect also to the last-mentioned total displace-
ment, the weights neither produce it of themselves
nor do they resist it ; that is to say, given the ratio of
displacement here specified, and the weights will be
in equilibrium.   The equation $4 . 3P — 3 . 4P = 0$ is,
therefore, characteristic of equilibrium in the case as-
sumed.   The generalisation $(Ph — P'h' = 0)$ is ob-
vious.

If we carefully examine the reasoning of this case,
we shall quite readily perceive that the inference in-
volved cannot be drawn unless we take for granted
that the *order* of the operations performed and the *path*
by which the transferences are effected, are indifferent,
that is unless we have previously discerned that work
is determinative.   We should commit, if we accepted
this inference, the same error that Archimedes com-
mitted in his deduction of the law of the lever ; as has
been set forth at length in a preceding section and
need not in the present case be so exhaustively dis-
cussed.   Nevertheless, the reasoning we have pre-
sented is useful, in the respect that it brings palpably
home to the mind the relationship of the simple and
the complicated cases.

8. The *universal* applicability of the principle of
virtual displacements to all cases of equilibrium, was
perceived by JOHN BERNOULLI ; who communicated his
discovery to Varignon in a letter written in 1717.   We
will now enunciate the principle in its most general
form.   At the points A, B, C . . . (Fig. 42) the forces
P, P', P'' . . . are applied.   Impart to the points any
infinitely small displacements v, v', v'' . . . compatible
with the character of the connections of the points (so-
called virtual displacements), and construct the pro-

jections p, p', p'' of these displacements on the direc- tions of the forces. These projections we consider positive when they fall in the direction of the force, and negative when they fall in the opposite direction. The products Pp, $P'p'$, $P''p''$, ... are called virtual moments, and in the two cases just mentioned have
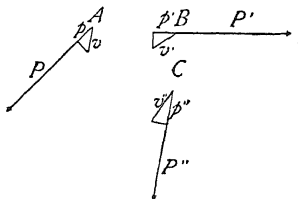
Fig. 42.

contrary signs. Now, the principle asserts, that for the case of equilibrium $Pp + P'p' + P''p'' + \ldots = 0$, or more briefly $\Sigma Pp = 0$.

9. Let us now examine a few points more in detail. Previous to Newton a force was almost universally conceived simply as the pull or the pressure of a heavy body. The mechanical researches of this period dealt almost exclusively with heavy bodies. When, now, in the Newtonian epoch, the generalisation of the idea of force was effected, all mechanical principles known to be applicable to heavy bodies could be transferred at once to any forces whatsoever. It was possible to replace every force by the pull of a heavy body on a string. In this sense we may also apply the principle of virtual displacements, at first discovered only for heavy bodies, to any forces whatsoever.

Virtual displacements are displacements consistent with the character of the connections of a system and with one another. If, for example, the two points of a system, A and B, at which forces act, are connected (Fig. 43, 1) by a rectangularly bent lever, free to revolve about C, then, if $CB = 2CA$, all virtual displacements of B and A are elements of the arcs of circles having C as centre; the displacements of B are

· always double the displacements of A, and both are in every case at right angles to each other. If the points A, B (Fig. 43, 2) be connected by a thread of the length
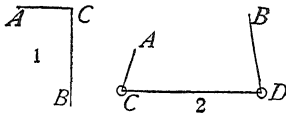
Fig. 43.

l, adjusted to slip through stationary rings at C and D, then all those displacements of A and B are virtual in which the points referred to move upon or within two spherical surfaces described with the radii r_1 and r_2 about C and D as centres, where $r_1 + r_2 + CD = l$.

The reason for the use of infinitely small displacements. The use of *infinitely small* displacements instead of *finite* displacements, such as Galileo assumed, is justified by the following consideration. If two weights are in equilibrium on an inclined plane (Fig. 44), the equilibrium will not be disturbed if the inclined plane, at points at which it is not in immediate contact with the bodies considered, passes into
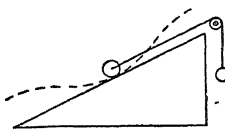
Fig. 44.

the bodies considered, passes into a surface of a different form. The essential condition is, therefore, the momentary possibility of displacement in the momentary configuration of the system. To judge of equilibrium we must assume displacements vanishingly small and such only; as otherwise the system might be carried over into an entirely different adjacent configuration, for which perhaps equilibrium would not exist.

A limitation. That the displacements themselves are not decisive but only the extent to which they occur in the directions of the forces, that is only their *projections* on the lines of the forces, was, in the case of the inclined plane, perceived clearly enough by Galileo himself.

With respect to the expression of the principle, it will be observed, that no problem whatever is presented

if all the material points of the system on which forces act, are independent of each other. Each point thus conditioned can be in equilibrium only in the event that it is not movable in the direction in which the force acts. The virtual moment of each such point vanishes separately. If some of the points be independent of each other, while others in their displacements are dependent on each other, the remark just made holds good for the former ; and for the latter the fundamental proposition discovered by Galileo holds, that the sum of their virtual moments is equal to zero. Hence, the sum-total of the virtual moments of all jointly is equal to zero.

10. Let us now endeavor to get some idea of the significance of the principle, by the consideration of a few simple examples that cannot be dealt with by the ordinary method of the lever, the inclined plane, and the like.

The differential pulley of Weston (Fig. 45) consists of two coaxial rigidly connected cylinders of slightly different radii r_1 and r_2 $< r_1$. A cord or chain is passed round the cylinders in the manner indicated in the figure. If we pull in the direction of the arrow with the force P, and rotation takes place

Fig. 45.

through the angle φ, the weight Q attached below will be raised. In the case of equilibrium there will exist between the two virtual moments involved the equation

$$Q\frac{(r_1 - r_2)}{2}\varphi = Pr_1\,\varphi, \text{ or } P = Q\frac{r_1 - r_2}{2r_1}.$$

A wheel and axle of weight Q (Fig. 46), which on the unrolling of a cord to which the weight P is attached rolls itself up on a second cord wound round the axle and rises, gives for the virtual moments in the case of equilibrium the equation
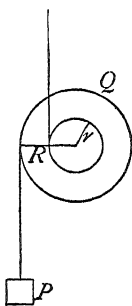
$$P(R - r)\, \varphi = Q\,r\varphi, \text{ or } P = \frac{Q\,r}{R - r}.$$

In the particular case $R - r = 0$, we must also put, for equilibrium, $Qr = 0$, or, for finite values of r, $Q = 0$. In reality the string behaves in this case like a loop in which the weight Q is placed. The latter can, if it be different from zero, continue to roll itself downwards on the string without moving the weight P. If, however, when $R = r$, we also put $Q = 0$, the result will be $P = \frac{0}{0}$, an indeterminate value. As a matter of fact, *every* weight P holds the apparatus in equilibrium, since when $R = r$ *none* can possibly descend.

Fig. 46.

A double cylinder (Fig. 47) of the radii r, R lies with friction on a horizontal surface, and a force Q is brought to bear on the string attached to it. Calling the resistance due to friction P, equilibrium exists when $P = (R - r/R)\, Q$. If $P >$ $(R - r/R)\, Q$, the cylinder, on the application of the force, will roll itself up on the string.
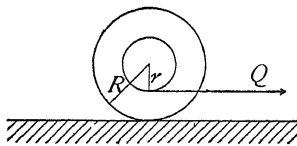
Fig. 47.

Roberval's Balance (Fig. 48) consists of a parallelogram with variable angles, two opposite sides of which, the upper and lower, are capable of rotation about their middle points A, B. To the two remaining sides, which are always vertical, horizontal rods are

fastened. If from these rods we suspend two equal weights P, equilibrium will subsist independently of the position of the points of suspension, because on displacement the descent of the one weight is always equal to the ascent of the other.
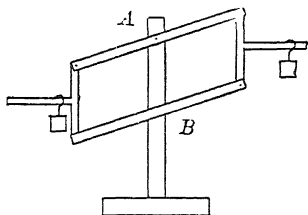
Fig. 48.

At three fixed points A, B, C (Fig. 49) let pulleys be placed, over which three strings are passed loaded with equal weights and knotted at O. In what position of the strings will equilibrium exist? We will call the lengths of the three strings $AO = s_1$, $BO = s_2$,
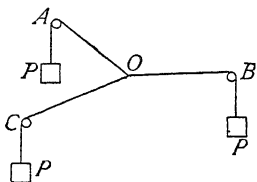
Fig. 49.
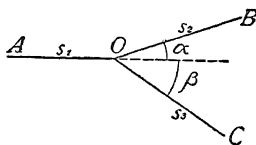
Fig. 50.

$CO = s_3$. To obtain the equation of equilibrium, let us displace the point O in the directions s_2 and s_3 the infinitely small distances δs_2 and δs_3, and note that by so doing every direction of displacement in the plane ABC (Fig. 50) can be produced. The sum of the virtual moments is

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} P\delta s_2 - P\delta s_2 \cos\alpha + P\delta s_2 \cos(\alpha + \beta) \\ + P\delta s_3 - P\delta s_3 \cos\beta + P\delta s_3 \cos(\alpha + \beta) \end{array} \right\} = 0,$$

or

$$[1 - \cos\alpha + \cos(\alpha + \beta)]\ \delta s_2 + [1 - \cos\beta + \cos(\alpha + \beta)]\ \delta s_3 = 0.$$

But since each of the displacements δs_2, δs_3 is ar-

bitrary, and each independent of the other, and may by themselves be taken $= 0$, it follows that

$$1 - \cos \alpha + \cos (\alpha + \beta) = 0$$
$$1 - \cos \beta + \cos (\alpha + \beta) = 0.$$

Therefore

$$\cos \alpha = \cos \beta,$$

and each of the two equations may be replaced by

$$1 - \cos \alpha + \cos 2\alpha = 0;$$
$$\text{or } \cos \alpha = \tfrac{1}{2},$$
$$\text{wherefore } \alpha + \beta = 120°.$$

Remarks on the preceding case.

Accordingly, in the case of equilibrium, each of the strings makes with the others angles of 120°; which is, moreover, directly obvious, since three equal forces can be in equilibrium only when such an arrangement exists. This once known, we may find the position of the point O with respect to ABC in a number of different ways. We may proceed for instance as follows. We construct on AB, BC, CA, severally, as sides, equilateral triangles. If we describe circles about these triangles, their common point of intersection will be the point O sought; a result which easily follows from the well-known relation of the angles at the centre and circumference of circles.

The case of a bar revolvable about one of its extremities.

A bar OA (Fig. 51) is revolvable about O in the plane of the paper and makes with a fixed straight line OX the variable angle α. At A there is applied a force P which makes with OX the angle γ, and at B, on a ring displaceable along the length of the bar, a force Q, making with OX the angle β. We impart to the bar an infinitely
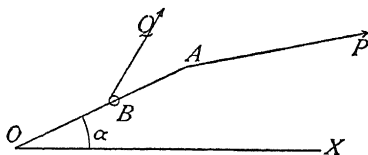
Fig. 51.

small rotation, in consequence of which B and A move forward the distances δs and δs_1 at right angles to OA, and we also displace the ring the distance δr along the bar. The variable distance OB we will call r, and we will let $OA = a$. For the case of equilibrium we have then

$$Q\delta r \cos(\beta - \alpha) + Q\delta s \sin(\beta - \alpha) + P\delta s_1 \sin(\alpha - \gamma) = 0.$$

As the displacement δr has no effect whatever on the other displacements, the virtual moment therein involved must, by itself, $= 0$, and since δr may be of any magnitude we please, the coefficient of this virtual moment must also $= 0$. We have, therefore,

$$Q \cos(\beta - \alpha) = 0,$$

or when Q is different from zero,

$$\beta - \alpha = 90°.$$

Further, in view of the fact that $\delta s_1 = (a/r)\,\delta s$, we also have

$$rQ \sin(\beta - \alpha) + a\,P \sin(\alpha - \gamma) = 0,$$

or since $\sin(\beta - \alpha) = 1$,

$$rQ + aP \sin(\alpha - \gamma) = 0 ;$$

wherewith the relation of the two forces is obtained.

11. An advantage, not to be overlooked, which every general principle, and therefore also the principle of virtual displacements, furnishes, consists in the fact that it saves us to a great extent the necessity of considering every new particular case presented. In the possession of this principle we need not, for

Fig. 52.

example, trouble ourselves about the details of a machine. If a new machine say were so enclosed in a
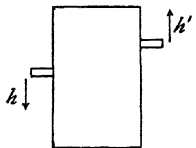
box (Fig. 52), that only two levers projected as points of application for the force P and the weight P', and we should find the simultaneous displacements of these levers to be h and h', we should know immediately that in the case of equilibrium $Ph = P'h'$, whatever the construction of the machine might be. Every principle of this character possesses therefore a distinct *economical* value.

Further remarks on the general expression of the principle.   12. We return to the general expression of the principle of virtual displacements, in order to add a few
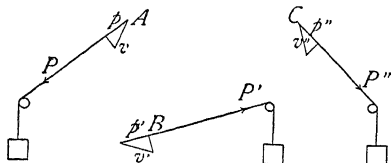
Fig. 53.

further remarks. If at the points A, B, C . . . . the forces P, P', P'' . . . . act, and p, p', p'' . . . . are the projections of infinitely small mutually compatible displacements, we shall have for the case of equilibrium

$$P p + P'p' + P''p'' + \ldots = 0.$$

If we replace the forces by strings which pass over pulleys in the directions of the forces and attach thereto the appropriate weights, this expression simply asserts that the *centre of gravity* of the system of weights as a whole cannot descend. If, however, in certain displacements it were possible for the centre of gravity to *rise*, the system would still be in equilibrium, as the heavy bodies would not, of themselves, enter on any such motion. In this case the sum above given would be negative, or less than zero. The general expression of the condition of equilibrium is, therefore,

Modification of the previous equation of condition.

$$P p + P'p' + P''p'' + \ldots \overline{\le} 0.$$

When for every virtual displacement there exists

another *equal* and *opposite* to it, as is the case for example in the simple machines, we may restrict ourselves to the upper sign, to the *equation*. For if it were possible for the centre of gravity to ascend in certain displacements, it would also have to be possible, in consequence of the assumed reversibility of all the virtual displacements, for it to descend. Consequently, in the present case, a possible rise of the centre of gravity is incompatible with equilibrium.

The question assumes a different aspect, however, when the displacements are not all reversible. Two bodies connected together by strings can approach each other but cannot recede from each other beyond the length of the strings. A body is able to slide or roll on the surface of another body ; it can move away from the surface of the second body, but it cannot penetrate it. In these cases, therefore, there are displacements that cannot be reversed. Consequently, for certain displacements a *rise* of the centre of gravity may take place, while the contrary displacements, to which the *descent* of the centre of gravity corresponds, are impossible. We must therefore hold fast to the more general condition of equilibrium, and say, the sum of the virtual moments is *equal to or less* than zero.

13. LAGRANGE in his *Analytical Mechanics* attempted a deduction of the principle of virtual displacements, which we will now consider. At the points *A*, *B*, *C* . . . . (Fig. 54) the forces *P*, *P'*, *P''* . . . . act. We imagine rings placed at the points in question, and other rings *A'*, *B'*, *C'* . . . . fastened to points lying in the directions of the forces. We seek some common measure $Q/2$ of the forces *P*, *P'*, *P''* . . . . that enables us to put :

$$2n \cdot \frac{Q}{2} = P,$$

$$2n' \cdot \frac{Q}{2} = P',$$

$$2n'' \cdot \frac{Q}{2} = P'',$$

where n, n', n'' . . . . are whole numbers. Further, we make fast to the ring A' a string, carry this string *back* and *forth* n times between A' and A, then through B',
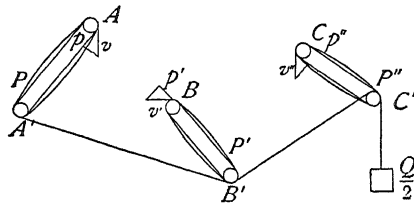
Fig. 54.

n' times back and forth between B' and B, then through C', n'' times back and forth between C' and C, and, finally, let it drop at C', attaching to it there the weight $Q/2$. As the string has, now, in all its parts the tension $Q/2$, we replace by these ideal pulleys all the forces present in the system by the single force $Q/2$. If then the virtual (possible) displacements in any given configuration of the system are such that, these displacements occurring, a descent of the weight $Q/2$ can take place, the weight will actually descend and produce those displacements, and equilibrium therefore will not obtain. But on the other hand, no motion will ensue, if the displacements leave the weight $Q/2$ in its original position, or raise it. The expression of this condition, reckoning the projections of the virtual displacements in the directions of the forces positive,

and having regard for the number of the turns of the string in each single pulley, is

$$2np + 2n'p' + 2n''p'' + \ldots \lesseqgtr 0.$$

Equivalent to this condition, however, is the expression

$$2n\frac{Q}{2}p + 2n'\frac{Q}{2}p' + 2n''\frac{Q}{2}p'' + \ldots \lesseqgtr 0,$$

or

$$Pp + P'p' + P''p'' + \ldots \lesseqgtr 0.$$

14. The deduction of Lagrange, if stripped of the rather odd fiction of the pulleys, really possesses convincing features, due to the fact that the action of a single weight is much more immediate to our experience and is more easily followed than the action of several weights. Yet it is not proved by the Lagrangian deduction that work is the factor determinative of the disturbance of equilibrium, but is, by the employment of the pulleys, rather assumed by it. As a matter of fact every pulley involves the fact enunciated and recognised by the principle of virtual displacements. The replacement of all the forces by a single weight that does the same work, presupposes a knowledge of the import of work, and can be proceeded with on this assumption alone. The fact that some certain cases are more familiar to us and more immediate to our experience has as a necessary result that we accept them without analysis and make them the foundation of our deductions without clearly instructing ourselves as to their real character.

It often happens in the course of the development of science that a new principle perceived by some inquirer in connection with a fact, is not immediately recognised and rendered familiar in its entire generality.

The expedients employed to support all new principles.

Then, every expedient calculated to promote these ends, is, as is proper and natural, called into service. All manner of facts, in which the principle, although contained in them, has not yet been recognised by inquirers, but which from other points of view are more familiar, are called in to furnish a support for the new conception. It does not, however, beseem mature science to allow itself to be deceived by procedures of this sort. If, throughout all facts, we clearly *see* and *discern* a principle which, though not admitting of proof, can yet be known to *prevail,* we have advanced much farther in the consistent conception of nature than if we suffered ourselves to be overawed by a specious demonstration. If we have reached this point of view, we shall, it is true, regard the Lagrangian deduction with quite different eyes ; yet it will engage nevertheless our attention and interest, and excite our satisfaction from the fact that it makes palpable the similarity of the simple and complicated cases.

Value of the Lagrangian proof.

15. MAUPERTUIS discovered an interesting proposition relating to equilibrium, which he communicated to the Paris Academy in 1740 under the name of the "Loi de repos." This principle was more fully discussed by EULER in 1751 in the Proceedings of the Berlin Academy. If we cause infinitely small displacements in any system, we produce a sum of virtual moments $Pp + P'p' + P''p'' + \ldots$, which only reduces to zero in the case of equilibrium. This sum is the work corresponding to the displacements, or since for infinitely small displacements it is itself infinitely small, the corresponding element of work. If the displacements are continuously increased till a finite displacement is produced, the elements of the work will, by summation, produce a finite amount of work. So, if we

The *Loi de repos.*

start from any given initial configuration of the system and pass to any given final configuration, a certain amount of work will have to be done. Now Maupertuis observed that the work done when a final configura- tion is reached which is a configuration of equilibrium, is generally a maximum or a minimum ; that is, if we carry the system through the configuration of equilib- rium the work done is previously and subsequently less or previously and subsequently greater than at the configuration of equilibrium itself. For the configura- tion of equilibrium

$$Pp + P'p' + P''p'' + \ldots = 0,$$

that is, the element of the work or the differential (more correctly the variation) of the work is equal to zero. If the differential of a function can be put equal to zero, the function has generally a maximum or mini- mum value.

16. We can produce a very clear representation to the eye of the import of Maupertuis's principle.

We imagine the forces of a system replaced by Lagrange's pulleys with the weight $Q/2$. We suppose that each point of the system is restricted to movement on a certain curve and that the motion is such that when one point occupies a definite position on its curve all the other points assume uniquely determined po- sitions on their respective curves. The simple ma- chines are as a rule systems of this kind. Now, while imparting displacements to the system, we may carry a vertical sheet of white paper horizontally over the weight $Q/2$, while this is ascending and descending on a vertical line, so that a pencil which it carries shall describe a curve upon the paper (Fig. 55). When the pencil stands at the points *a*, *c*, *d* of the curve, there are,

we see, adjacent positions in the system of points at
which the weight $Q/2$ will stand higher or lower than in
the configuration given. The weight will then, if the
system be left to itself, pass into this lower position and
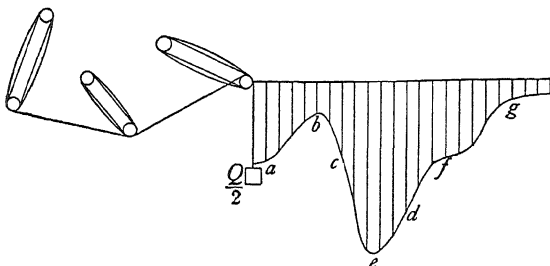
Fig. 55.

displace the system with it. Accordingly, under condi-
tions of this kind, equilibrium does not subsist. If
the pencil stands at e, then there exist only adjacent
configurations for which the weight $Q/2$ stands higher.
But of itself the system will not pass into the last-
named configurations. On the contrary, every dis-
placement in such a direction, will, by virtue of the
tendency of the weight to move downwards, be re-
versed. *Stable equilibrium, therefore, is the condition*
*that corresponds to the lowest position of the weight or to
a maximum of work done in the system.* If the pencil
stands at b, we see that every appreciable displace-
ment brings the weight $Q/2$ lower, and that the weight
therefore will continue the displacement begun. But,
assuming infinitely small displacements, the pencil
moves in the horizontal tangent at b, in which event
the weight cannot descend. Therefore, *unstable equi-*
*librium is the state that corresponds to the highest position
of the weight $Q/2$, or to a minimum of work done in the
system.* It will be noted, however, that conversely

every case of equilibrium is not the correspondent of a maximum or a minimum of work performed. If the pencil is at *f*, at a point of horizontal contrary flexure, the weight in the case of infinitely small displacements neither rises nor falls. Equilibrium exists, although the work done is neither a maximum nor a minimum. The equilibrium of this case is the so-called *mixed* equilibrium * : for some disturbances it is stable, for others unstable. Nothing prevents us from regarding mixed equilibrium as belonging to the unstable class. When the pencil stands at *g*, where the curve runs along horizontally a finite distance, equilibrium likewise exists. Any small displacement, in the configuration in question, is neither continued nor reversed. This kind of equilibrium, to which likewise neither a maximum nor a minimum corresponds, is termed [*neutral* or] *indifferent*. If the curve described by *Q*/2 has a cusp pointing upwards, this indicates a minimum of work done but no equilibrium (not even unstable equilibrium). To a cusp pointing downwards a maximum and stable equilibrium correspond. In the last named case of equilibrium the sum of the virtual moments is not equal to zero, but is negative.

17. In the reasoning just presented, we have assumed that the motion of a point of a system on one curve determines the motion of all the other points of the system on their respective curves. The movability of the system becomes multiplex, however, when each point is displaceable on a surface, in a manner such that the position of one point on its surface determines

---

* This term is not used in English, because our writers hold that no equilibrium is conceivable which is not stable or neutral for some possible displacements. Hence what is called *mixed* equilibrium in the text is called unstable equilibrium by English writers, who deny the existence of equilibrium unstable in every respect.—*Trans.*

uniquely the position of all the other points on their surfaces. In this case, we are not permitted to consider the *curve* described by $Q/2$, but are obliged to picture to ourselves a surface described by $Q/2$. If, to go a step further, each point is movable throughout a space, we can no longer represent to ourselves in a purely geometrical manner the circumstances of the motion, by means of the locus of $Q/2$. In a correspondingly higher degree is this the case when the position of *one* of the points of the system does not determine conjointly all the other positions, but the character of the system's motion is more multiplex still. In all these cases, however, the curve described by $Q/2$ (Fig. 55) can serve us as a symbol of the phenomena to be considered. In these cases also we rediscover the Maupertuisian propositions.

urther ex-
:nsion of
ie same
lea.

We have also supposed, in our considerations up to this point, that constant forces, forces independent of the position of the points of the system, are the forces that act in the system. If we assume that the forces do depend on the position of the points of the system (but not on the time), we are no longer able to conduct

Fig. 56.

our operations with simple pulleys, but must devise apparatus the force active in which, still exerted by $Q/2$, varies with the displacement: the ideas we have reached, however, still obtain. The depth of the descent of the weight $Q/2$ is in every case the measure of the work performed, which is always the same in the same configuration of the system and is independent of the path of transference. A contrivance which would develop by means of a constant weight a force varying with the displacement, would be, for example, a wheel
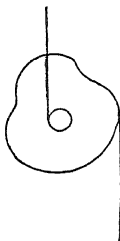
and axle (Fig. 56) with a non-circular wheel. It would not repay the trouble, however, to enter into the details of the reasoning indicated in this case, since we perceive at a glance its feasibility.

18. If we know the relation that subsists between the work done and the so-called *vis viva* of a system, a relation established in dynamics, we arrive easily at the principle communicated by COURTIVRON in 1749 to the Paris Academy, which is this: For the configuration of $\frac{\text{stable}}{\text{unstable}}$ equilibrium, at which the work done is a $\frac{\text{maximum}}{\text{minimum}}$, the vis viva of the system, in motion, is also a $\frac{\text{maximum}}{\text{minimum}}$ in its transit through these configurations.

19. A heavy, homogeneous triaxial ellipsoid resting on a horizontal plane is admirably adapted to illustrate the various classes of equilibrium. When the ellipsoid rests on the extremity of its smallest axis, it is in stable equilibrium, for any displacement it may suffer elevates its centre of gravity. If it rest on its longest axis, it is in unstable equilibrium. If the ellipsoid stand on its mean axis, its equilibrium is mixed. A homogeneous sphere or a homogeneous right cylinder on a horizontal plane illus-

Fig. 57.

trates the case of indifferent equilibrium. In Fig. 57 we have represented the paths of the centre of gravity of a cube rolling on a horizontal plane about one of its edges. The position *a* of the centre of gravity is the position of stable equilibrium, the position *b*, the position of unstable equilibrium.
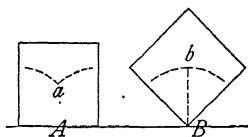
The catenary.

20. We will now consider an example which at first sight appears very complicated but is elucidated at once by the principle of virtual displacements. John and James Bernoulli, on the occasion of a conversation on mathematical topics during a walk in Basel, lighted on the question of what form a chain would take that was freely suspended and fastened at both ends. They soon and easily agreed in the view that the chain would assume that form of equilibrium at which its centre of gravity lay in the lowest possible position. As a matter of fact we really do perceive that equilibrium subsists when all the links of the chain have sunk as low as possible, when none can sink lower without raising in consequence of the connections of the system an equivalent mass equally high or higher. When the centre of gravity has sunk as low as it possibly can sink, when all has happened that can happen, stable equilibrium exists. The *physical* part of the problem is disposed of by this consideration. The determination of the curve that has the lowest centre of gravity for a given length between the two points *A*, *B*, is simply a *mathematical* problem. (See Fig. 58.)

The principle is simply the recognition of a fact.

21. Collecting all that has been presented, we see, that there is contained in the principle of virtual displacements simply the recognition of a fact that was instinctively familiar to us long previously, only that we had not apprehended it so precisely and clearly. This fact consists in the circumstance that heavy bodies, of themselves, move only downwards. If several such bodies be joined together so that they can suffer no displacement independently of each other, they will then move only in the event that some heavy mass is *on the whole* able to descend, or as the principle, with a more perfect adaptation of our ideas to
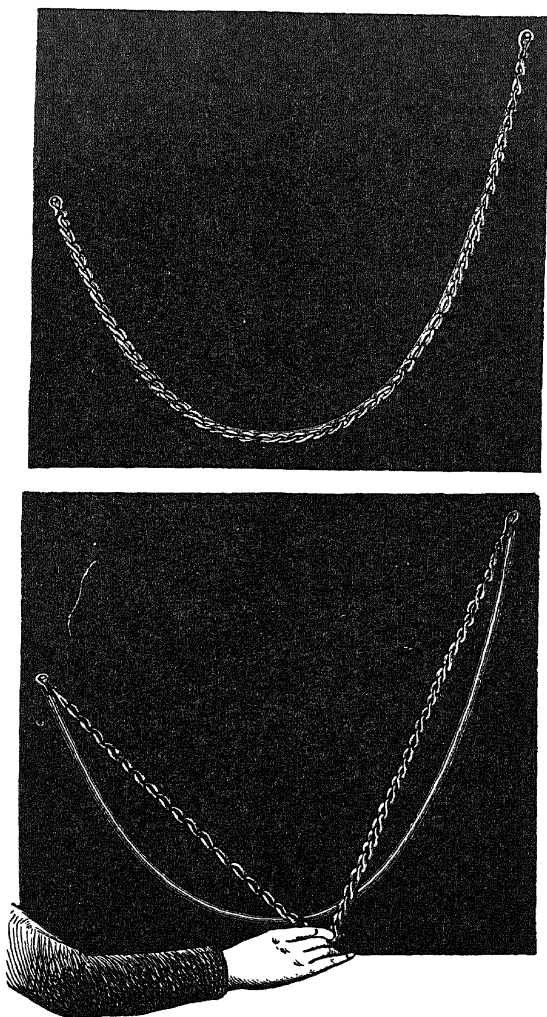
Fig. 58.

<div style="float:left; margin-right:1em;">What this
fact is.</div>

the facts, more exactly expresses it, only in the event that *work* can be performed. If, extending the notion of force, we transfer the principle to forces other than those due to gravity, the recognition is again contained therein of the fact that the natural occurrences in question take place, of themselves, *only in a definite sense* and not in the opposite sense. Just as heavy bodies descend downwards, so differences of temperature and electrical potential cannot increase of their own accord but only diminish, and so on. If occurrences of this kind be so connected that they can take place only in the contrary sense, the principle then establishes, more precisely than our instinctive apprehension could do this, the factor *work* as determinative and decisive of the direction of the occurrences. The equilibrium equation of the principle may be reduced in every case to the trivial statement, that *when nothing can happen nothing does happen.*

<div style="float:left; margin-right:1em;">The prin-
ciple in the
light of
Gauss's
view.</div>

22. It is important to obtain clearly the perception, that we have to deal, in the case of all principles, merely with the ascertainment and establishment of a *fact.* If we neglect this, we shall always be sensible of some deficiency and will seek a verification of the principle, that is not to be found. Jacobi states in his *Lectures on Dynamics* that Gauss once remarked that Lagrange's equations of motion had not been proved, but only historically enunciated. And this view really seems to us to be the correct one in regard to the principle of virtual displacements.

<div style="float:left; margin-right:1em;">The differ-
ent tasks of
early and of
subsequent
inquirers in
any depart-
ment.</div>

The task of the early inquirers, who lay the foundations of any department of investigation, is entirely different from that of those who follow. It is the business of the former to seek out and to establish the facts of most cardinal importance only; and, as history

teaches, more brains are required for this than is generally supposed. When the most important facts are once furnished, we are then placed in a position to work them out deductively and logically by the methods of mathematical physics; we can then organise the department of inquiry in question, and show that in the acceptance of some *one* fact a whole series of others is included which were not to be immediately discerned in the first. The one task is as important as the other. We should not however confound the one with the other. We cannot prove by mathematics that nature *must* be exactly what it is. But we can prove, that one set of observed properties determines conjointly another set which often are not directly manifest.

Let it be remarked in conclusion, that the principle of virtual displacements, like every general principle, brings with it, by the insight which it furnishes, *disillusionment* as well as elucidation. It brings with it disillusionment to the extent that we recognise in it facts which were long before known and even instinctively perceived, our present recognition being simply more distinct and more definite; and elucidation, in that it enables us to see everywhere throughout the most complicated relations the same simple facts.

Every general principle brings with it disillusionment as well as elucidation.

v.

RETROSPECT OF THE DEVELOPMENT OF STATICS.

1. Having passed successively in review the principles of statics, we are now in a position to take a brief supplementary survey of the development of the principles of the science as a whole. This development, falling as it does in the earliest period of mechanics, —the period which begins in Grecian antiquity and

Review of statics as a whole.

reaches its close at the time when Galileo and his younger contemporaries were inaugurating modern mechanics,—illustrates in an excellent manner the process of the formation of science generally. All conceptions, all methods are here found in their simplest form, and as it were in their infancy. These beginnings

The origin of science. point unmistakably to their origin in the experiences of the manual arts. To the necessity of putting these experiences into *communicable* form and of disseminating them beyond the confines of class and craft, science owes its origin. The collector of experiences of this kind, who seeks to preserve them in written form, finds before him many different, or at least supposably different, experiences. His position is one that enables him to review these experiences more frequently, more variously, and more impartially than the individual workingman, who is always limited to a narrow province. The facts and their dependent rules are brought into closer temporal and spatial proximity in his mind and writings, and thus acquire the opportunity of revealing

The economy of communication. their relationship, their connection, and their gradual transition the one into the other. The desire to simplify and abridge the labor of communication supplies a further impulse in the same direction. Thus, from economical reasons, in such circumstances, great numbers of facts and the rules that spring from them are condensed into a system and comprehended in a *single* expression.

The general character of principles. 2. A collector of this character has, moreover, opportunity to take note of some *new* aspect of the facts before him—of some aspect which former observers had not considered. A rule, reached by the observation of facts, cannot possibly embrace the *entire* fact, in all its infinite wealth, in all its inexhaustible manifoldness;

on the contrary, it can furnish only a rough *outline* of the fact, one-sidedly emphasising the feature that is of importance for the given technical (or scientific) aim in view. *What* aspects of a fact are taken notice of, will consequently depend upon circumstances, or even on the caprice of the observer. Hence there is always opportunity for the discovery of new aspects of the fact, which will lead to the establishment of new rules of equal validity with, or superior to, the old. So, for instance, the weights and the lengths of the lever-arms were regarded at first, by Archimedes, as the conditions that determined equilibrium. Afterwards, by Da Vinci and Ubaldi the weights and the perpendicular distances from the axis of the lines of force were recognised as the determinative conditions. Still later, by Galileo, the weights and the amounts of their displacements, and finally by Varignon the weights and the directions of the pulls with respect to the axis were taken as the elements of equilibrium, and the enunciation of the rules modified accordingly.

Their form in many aspects, accidental.

3. Whoever makes a new observation of this kind, and establishes such a new rule, knows, of course, our liability to error in attempting mentally to represent the fact, whether by concrete images or in abstract conceptions, which we must do in order to have the mental model we have constructed always at hand as a substitute for the fact when the latter is partly or wholly inaccessible. The circumstances, indeed, to which we have to attend, are accompanied by so many other, collateral circumstances, that it is frequently difficult to single out and consider those that are essential to the purpose in view. Just think how the facts of friction, the rigidity of ropes and cords, and like conditions in machines, obscure and obliterate the pure outlines of

Our liability to error in the mental reconstruction of facts.

the main facts. No wonder, therefore, that the discoverer or verifier of a new rule, urged by mistrust of himself, seeks after a *proof* of the rule whose validity he believes he has discerned. The discoverer or verifier does not at the outset fully trust in the rule; or, it may be, he is confident only of a part of it. So, Archimedes, for example, doubted whether the effect of the action of weights on a lever was *proportional* to the lengths of the lever-arms, but he accepted without hesitation the fact of their influence in some way. Daniel Bernoulli does not question the influence of the direction of a force generally, but only the form of its influence. As a matter of fact, it is far easier to observe that a circumstance *has* influence in a given case, than to determine *what* influence it has. In the latter inquiry we are in much greater degree liable to error. The attitude of the investigators is therefore perfectly natural and defensible.

The proof of the correctness of a new rule can be attained by the repeated application of it, the frequent comparison of it with experience, the putting of it to the *test* under the most diverse circumstances. This process would, in the natural course of events, get carried out in time. The discoverer, however, hastens to reach his goal more quickly. He compares the results that flow from his rule with all the experiences with which he is familiar, with all older rules, repeatedly tested in times gone by, and watches to see if he do not light on contradictions. In this procedure, the greatest credit is, as it should be, conceded to the oldest and most familiar experiences, the most thoroughly tested rules. Our instinctive experiences, those generalisations that are made involuntarily, by the irresistible force of the innumerable facts that press in upon

us, enjoy a peculiar authority; and this is perfectly warranted by the consideration that it is precisely the elimination of subjective caprice and of individual error that is the object aimed at.

In this manner Archimedes *proves* his law of the lever, Stevinus his law of inclined pressure, Daniel Bernoulli the parallelogram of forces, Lagrange the principle of virtual displacements. Galileo alone is perfectly aware, with respect to the last-mentioned principle, that his new observation and perception are of equal rank with *every former* one—that it is derived from *the same* source of experience. He attempts no demonstration. Archimedes, in his proof of the principle of the lever, uses facts concerning the centre of gravity, which he had probably proved by means of the very principle now in question; yet we may suppose that these facts were otherwise so familiar, as to be unquestioned,—so familiar indeed, that it may be doubted whether he remarked that he had employed them in demonstrating the principle of the lever. The instinctive elements embraced in the views of Archimedes and Stevinus have been discussed at length in the proper place.

4. It is quite in order, on the making of a new discovery, to resort to all proper means to bring the new rule to the test. When, however, after the lapse of a reasonable period of time, it has been sufficiently often subjected to direct testing, it becomes science to recognise that any other proof than that has become quite needless; that there is no sense in considering a rule as the better established for being founded on others that have been reached by the very same method of observation, only earlier; that one well-considered and tested observation is as good as another. To-day, we

should regard the principles of the lever, of statical moments, of the inclined plane, of virtual displacements, and of the parallelogram of forces as discovered by *equivalent* observations. It is of no importance *now*, that some of these discoveries were made directly, while others were reached by roundabout ways and as dependent upon other observations. It is more in keeping, furthermore, with the economy of thought and with

Insight better than artificial demonstration. the æsthetics of science, directly to *recognise* a principle (say that of the statical moments) as the key to the understanding of *all* the facts of a department, and *really see* how it *pervades* all those facts, rather than to hold ourselves obliged first to make a clumsy and lame deduction of it from unobvious propositions that involve the same principle but that happen to have become earlier familiar to us. This process science and the individual (in historical study) may go through once for all. But having done so both are free to adopt a more convenient point of view.

The mistake of the mania for demonstration. 5. In fact, this mania for demonstration in science results in a rigor that is *false* and *mistaken*. Some propositions are held to be possessed of more certainty than others and even regarded as their necessary and incontestable foundation ; whereas actually no higher, or perhaps not even so high, a degree of certainty attaches to them. Even the rendering clear of the degree of certainty which exact science aims at, is not attained here. Examples of such mistaken rigor are to be found in almost every text-book. The deductions of Archimedes, not considering their historical value, are infected with this erroneous rigor. But the most conspicuous example of all is furnished by Daniel Bernoulli's deduction of the parallelogram of forces (*Comment. Acad. Petrop.* T. I.).

6. As already seen, instinctive knowledge enjoys our exceptional confidence. No longer knowing *how* we have acquired it, we cannot criticise the logic by which it was inferred. We have personally contributed nothing to its production. It confronts us with a force and irresistibleness foreign to the products of voluntary reflective experience. It appears to us as something free from subjectivity, and extraneous to us, although we have it constantly at hand so that it is more ours than are the individual facts of nature.

All this has often led men to attribute knowledge of this kind to an entirely different source, namely, to view it as existing *a priori* in us (previous to all experience). That this opinion is untenable was fully explained in our discussion of the achievements of Stevinus. Yet even the authority of instinctive knowledge, however important it may be for actual processes of development, must ultimately give place to that of a clearly and deliberately observed principle. Instinctive knowledge is, after all, only experimental knowledge, and as such is liable, we have seen, to prove itself utterly insufficient and powerless, when some new region of experience is suddenly opened up.

7. The *true* relation and connection of the different principles is the *historical* one. The one extends farther in this domain, the other farther in that. Notwithstanding that some one principle, say the principle of virtual displacements, may control with facility a greater number of cases than other principles, still no assurance can be given that it will always maintain its supremacy and will not be outstripped by some new principle. All principles single out, more or less arbitrarily, now this aspect now that aspect of the same facts, and contain an abstract summarised rule for the

refigurement of the facts in thought. We can never assert that this process has been definitively completed. Whosoever holds to this opinion, will not stand in the way of the advancement of science.

Conception of force in statics.

8. Let us, in conclusion, direct our attention for a moment to the conception of force in statics. Force is any circumstance of which the consequence is motion. Several circumstances of this kind, however, each single one of which determines motion, may be so conjoined that in the result there shall be no motion. Now statics investigates what this mode of conjunction, in general terms, is. Statics does not further concern itself about the particular character of the motion conditioned by the forces. The circumstances determinative of motion that are best known to us, are our own vo-

The origin of the notion of pressure.

litional acts—our innervations. In the motions which we ourselves determine, as well as in those to which we are forced by external circumstances, we are always sensible of a pressure. Thence arises our habit of representing all circumstances determinative of motion as something akin to volitional acts—as *pressures*. The attempts we make to set aside this conception, as subjective, animistic, and unscientific, fail invariably. It cannot profit us, surely, to do violence to our own natural-born thoughts and to doom ourselves, in that regard, to voluntary mental penury. We shall subsequently have occasion to observe, that the conception referred to also plays a part in the foundation of dynamics.

We are able, in a great many cases, to replace the circumstances determinative of motion, which occur in nature, by our innervations, and thus to reach the idea of a gradation of the intensity of forces. But in the estimation of this intensity we are thrown entirely on the

resources of our memory, and are also unable to com- municate our sensations. Since it is possible, however, to represent *every* condition that determines motion by a weight, we arrive at the perception that all circumstances determinative of motion (all forces) are alike in character and may be replaced and measured by quantities that stand for weight. The measurable weight serves us, as a certain, convenient, and communicable index, in mechanical researches, just as the thermometer in thermal researches is an exacter substitute for our perceptions of heat. As has pre- viously been remarked, statics cannot wholly rid itself of all knowledge of phenomena of motion. This particularly appears in the determination of the direction of a force by the direction of the motion which it would produce if it acted alone. By the point of application of a force we mean that point of a body whose motion is still determined by the force when the point is freed from its connections with the other parts of the body.

Force accordingly is any circumstance that de- termines motion ; and its attributes may be stated as follows. The direction of the force is the direction of motion which is determined by that force, alone. The point of application is that point whose motion is determined independently of its connections with the system. The magnitude of the force is that weight which, acting (say, on a string) in the direction determined, and applied at the point in question, determines the same motion or maintains the same equilibrium. The other circumstances that modify the determination of a motion, but by themselves alone are unable to produce it, such as virtual displacements, the arms of levers, and so forth, may be termed collateral conditions determinative of motion and equilibrium.

VI.

THE PRINCIPLES OF STATICS IN THEIR APPLICATION TO
FLUIDS.

No essen-
tially new
points of
view in-
volved in
this subject.
1. The consideration of fluids has not supplied stat-
ics with many essentially new points of view, yet nu-
merous applications and confirmations of the principles
already known have resulted therefrom, and physical
experience has been greatly enriched by the investiga-
tions of this domain. We shall devote, therefore, a few
pages to this subject.

2. To ARCHIMEDES also belongs the honor of found-
ing the domain of the statics of liquids.   To him we
owe the well-known proposition concerning the buoy-
ancy, or loss of weight, of bodies immersed in liquids,
of the discovery of which Vitruvius, *De Architectura,*
Lib. IX, gives the following account :

Vitruvius's
account of
Archime-
des's dis-
covery.
"Though Archimedes discovered   many curious
"matters that evince great intelligence, that which I am
"about to mention is the most extraordinary.   Hiero,
"when he obtained the regal power in Syracuse, hav-
"ing, on the fortunate turn of his affairs, decreed a
"votive crown of gold to be placed in a certain temple
"to the immortal gods, commanded it to be made of
"great value, and assigned for this purpose an appro-
"priate weight of the metal to the manufacturer.   The
"latter, in due time, presented the work to the king,
"beautifully wrought ; and the weight appeared to cor-
"respond with that of the gold which had been as-
"signed for it.

"But a report having been circulated, that some of
"the gold had been abstracted, and that the deficiency

"thus caused had been supplied by silver, Hiero was
"indignant at the fraud, and, unacquainted with the
"method by which the theft might be detected, re-
"quested Archimedes would undertake to give it his
"attention. Charged with this commission, he by
"chance went to a bath, and on jumping into the tub,
"perceived that, just in the proportion that his body
"became immersed, in the same proportion the water
"ran out of the vessel. Whence, catching at the
"method to be adopted for the solution of the proposi-
"tion, he immediately followed it up, leapt out of the
"vessel in joy, and returning home naked, cried out
"with a loud voice that he had found that of which he
"was in search, for he continued exclaiming, in Greek,
" $\varepsilon \ddot{v}\rho\eta\varkappa\alpha$, $\varepsilon \ddot{v}\rho\eta\varkappa\alpha$, (I have found it, I have found it !)"

3. The observation which led Archimedes to his
proposition, was accordingly this, that a body im-
mersed in water must *raise* an equivalent quantity of
water; exactly as if the body lay on one pan of a balance
and the water on the other. This conception, which
at the present day is still the most natural and the
most direct, also appears in Archimedes's treatises *On
Floating Bodies,* which unfortunately have not been
completely preserved but have in part been restored
by F. Commandinus.

The assumption from which Archimedes starts
reads thus:

"It is assumed as the essential property of a liquid
that in all uniform and continuous positions of its parts
the portion that suffers the lesser pressure is forced
upwards by that which suffers the greater pressure.
But each part of the liquid suffers pressure from the
portion perpendicularly above it if the latter be sinking
or suffer pressure from another portion."

Archimedes now, to present the matter briefly,
conceives the entire spherical earth as fluid in consti-
tution, and cuts out of it pyramids the vertices of
which lie at the centre (Fig. 59). All these pyramids
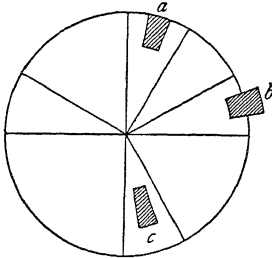
Fig. 59.

must, in the case of equilib-
rium, have the same weight,
and the similarly situated
parts of the same must all
suffer the same pressure.
If we plunge a body *a* of
the same specific gravity as
water into one of the pyra-
mids, the body will com-
pletely submerge, and, in
the case of equilibrium, will supply by its weight the
pressure of the displaced water. The body *b*, of less
specific gravity, can sink, without disturbance of equi-
librium, only to the point at which the water beneath
it suffers the same pressure from the weight of the
body as it would if the body were taken out and the
submerged portion replaced by water. The body *c*,
of a greater specific gravity, sinks as deep as it possibly
can. That its weight is lessened in the water by an
amount equal to the weight of the water displaced,
will be manifest if we imagine the body joined to
another of less specific gravity so that a third body is
formed having the same specific gravity as water,
which just completely submerges.

The state of
the science
in the six-
teenth cen-
tury.   4. When in the sixteenth century the study of the
works of Archimedes was again taken up, scarcely the
principles of his researches were understood. The
complete comprehension of his deductions was at that
time impossible.

          Stevinus rediscovered by a method of his own the

most important principles of hydrostatics and the de- The discov-
eries of Ste-
vinus.
ductions therefrom. It was principally two ideas from
which Stevinus derived his fruitful conclusions. The
one is quite similar to that relating to the endless
chain. The other consists in the assumption that the
solidification of a fluid in equilibrium does not disturb
its equilibrium.

Stevinus first lays down this principle. Any given The first
fundamen-
mass of water *A* (Fig. 60), immersed in water, is in tal princi-
equilibrium in all its parts. If *A* ple.
were not supported by the sur-
rounding water but should, let us
say, descend, then the portion of
water taking the place of *A* and
placed thus in the same circum-
stances, would, on the same as-
sumption, also have to descend.
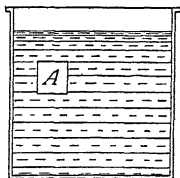
Fig. 60.

This assumption leads, therefore, to the establishment
of a perpetual motion, which is contrary to our ex-
perience and to our instinctive knowledge of things.

Water immersed in water loses accordingly its The second
fundamen-
whole weight. If, now, we imagine the surface of the tal princi-
submerged water solidified, the vessel formed by this ple.
surface, the *vas superficiarium* as Stevinus calls it, will
still be subjected to the same circumstances of pres-
sure. If *empty*, the vessel so formed will suffer an
upward pressure in the liquid equal to the weight of the
water displaced. If we fill the solidified surface with
some other substance of any specific gravity we may
choose, it will be plain that the diminution of the
weight of the body will be equal to the weight of the
fluid displaced on immersion.

In a rectangular, vertically placed parallelepipedal
vessel filled with a liquid, the pressure on the horizontal

base is equal to the weight of the liquid. The pressure
is equal, also, for all parts of the bottom of the same
area. When now Stevinus imagines portions of the
liquid to be cut out and replaced by rigid immersed
bodies of the same specific gravity, or, what is the
same thing, imagines parts of the liquid to become so-
lidified, the relations of pressure in the vessel will not
be altered by the procedure. But we easily obtain in
this way a clear view of the law that the pressure on
the base of a vessel is independent of its form, as well
as of the laws of pressure in communicating vessels,
and so forth.

5. GALILEO treats the equilibrium of liquids in com-
municating vessels and the problems connected there-
with by the help of the principle of virtual displace-
ments. NN (Fig. 61) being the
common level of a liquid in equilib-
rium in two communicating vessels,
Galileo explains the equilibrium
here presented by observing that in
the case of any disturbance the dis-
placements of the columns are to
each other in the inverse proportion
of the areas of the transverse sec-

Fig. 61.

tions and of the weights of the columns—that is, as
with machines in equilibrium. But this is not quite cor-
rect. The case does not exactly correspond to the
cases of equilibrium investigated by Galileo in ma-
chines, which present indifferent equilibrium. With
liquids in communicating tubes every disturbance of the
common level of the liquids produces an elevation of
the centre of gravity. In the case represented in Fig.
61, the centre of gravity S of the liquid displaced from
the shaded space in A is elevated to S', and we may

regard the rest of the liquid as not having been moved. Accordingly, in the case of equilibrium, the centre of gravity of the liquid lies at its lowest possible point.

6. PASCAL likewise employs the principle of virtual displacements, but in a more correct manner, leaving the weight of the liquid out of account and considering only the pressure at the surface. If we imagine two communicating vessels to be closed by pistons (Fig. 62), and these pistons loaded with weights proportional to their surface-areas, equilibrium will obtain, because in consequence of the invariability of the volume of the liquid the displacements in every disturbance are inversely proportional to the weights. For Pascal, accordingly, it *follows*, as a necessary consequence, from the principle of virtual displacements, that in the case of equilibrium every pressure on a superficial portion of a liquid is propagated with undiminished effect to every other superficial portion, however and in whatever position it be placed. No objection is to be made to *discovering* the principle in this way. Yet we shall see later on that the more natural and satisfactory conception is to regard the principle as immediately given.

Fig. 62.

The same principle made use of by Pascal.

7. We shall now, after this historical sketch, again examine the most important cases of liquid equilibrium, and from such different points of view as may be convenient.

Detailed consideration of the subject.

The fundamental property of liquids given us by experience consists in the flexure of their parts on the slightest application of pressure. Let us picture to ourselves an element of volume of a liquid, the gravity of which we disregard—say a tiny cube. If the slightest

The funda-
mental
property of
liquids the
mobility of
their parts.

excess of pressure be exerted on one of the surfaces of this cube, (which we now conceive, for the moment, as a fixed geometrical locus, containing the fluid but not of its substance) the liquid (supposed to have previously been in equilibrium and at rest) will yield and pass out in all directions through the other five surfaces of the cube. A solid cube can stand a pressure on its upper and lower surfaces different in magnitude from that on its lateral surfaces; or *vice versa*. A fluid cube, on the other hand, can retain its shape only if the same perpendicular pressure be exerted on all its sides. A similar train of reasoning is applicable to all polyhe‐ drons. In this conception, as thus geometrically eluci‐ dated, is contained nothing but the crude experience that the particles of a liquid yield to the slightest pres‐ sure, and that they retain this property also in the in‐ terior of the liquid when under a high pressure; it being observable, for example, that under the condi‐ tions cited minute heavy bodies sink in fluids, and so on.

A second
property
the com-
pressibility
of their vol-
ume.

With the mobility of their parts liquids combine still another property, which we will now consider. Li‐ quids suffer through pressure a diminution of volume which is proportional to the pressure exerted on unit of surface. Every alteration of pressure carries along with it a proportional alteration of volume and density. If the pressure diminish, the volume becomes greater, the density less. The volume of a liquid continues to diminish therefore on the pressure being increased, till the point is reached at which the elasticity generated within it equilibrates the increase of the pressure.

8. The earlier inquirers, as for instance those of the Florentine Academy, were of the opinion that liquids were incompressible. In 1761, however, JOHN CANTON performed an experiment by which the compressibility

of water was demonstrated. A thermometer glass is
filled with water, boiled, and then sealed. (Fig. 63.)
The liquid reaches to *a*. But since the space above *a* is
airless, the liquid supports no atmospheric pres-
sure.   If the sealed end be broken off, the liquid
will sink to *b*.   Only a portion, however, of this
displacement is to be placed to the credit of the
compression of the liquid by atmospheric pres-
sure.   For if we place the glass before breaking
off the top under an air-pump and exhaust the
chamber, the liquid will sink to *c*. This last phe-
nomenon is due to the fact that the pressure that

Fig. 63.

bears down on the exterior of the glass and diminishes
its capacity, is now removed. On breaking off the top,
this exterior pressure of the atmosphere is compensated
for by the interior pressure then introduced, and an
enlargement of the capacity of the glass again sets in.
The portion *c b*, therefore, answers to the actual com-
pression of the liquid by the pressure of the atmos-
phere.

The first to institute exact experiments on the com-
pressibility of water, was OERSTED, who employed to
this end a very ingenious method.   A
thermometer glass *A* (Fig. 64) is filled
with boiled water and is inverted, with
open mouth, into a vessel of mercury.
Near it stands a manometer tube *B* filled
with air and likewise inverted with open
mouth in the mercury.   The whole ap-
paratus is then placed in a vessel filled
with water, which is compressed by the
aid of a pump. By this means the water

Fig. 64.

in *A* is also compressed, and the filament of quicksilver
which rises in the capillary tube of the thermometer-

glass indicates this compression. The alteration of capacity which the glass *A* suffers in the present instance, is merely that arising from the pressing together of its walls by forces which are equal on all sides.
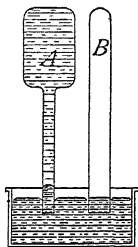
The experiments of Grassi.

The most delicate experiments on this subject have been conducted by GRASSI with an apparatus constructed by Regnault, and computed with the assistance of Lamé's correction-formulæ. To give a tangible idea of the compressibility of water, we will remark that Grassi observed for boiled water at 0° under an increase of one atmospheric pressure a diminution of the original volume amounting to 5 in 100,000 parts. If we imagine, accordingly, the vessel *A* to have the capacity of one litre (1000 ccm.), and affix to it a capillary tube of 1 sq. mm. cross-section, the quicksilver filament will ascend in it 5 cm. under a pressure of one atmosphere.

Surface-pressure induces in liquids an alteration of density.

9. Surface-pressure, accordingly, induces a physical alteration in a liquid (an alteration in density), which can be detected by sufficiently delicate means—even optical. We are always at liberty to think that portions of a liquid under a higher pressure are more dense, though it may be very slightly so, than parts under a less pressure.

The implications of this fact.

Let us imagine now, we have in a liquid (in the interior of which no forces act and the gravity of which we accordingly neglect) two portions subjected to unequal pressures and contiguous to one another. The portion under the greater pressure, being denser, will expand, and press against the portion under the less pressure, until the forces of elasticity as lessened on the one side and increased on the other establish equilibrium at the bounding surface and both portions are equally compressed.

If we endeavor, now, quantitatively to elucidate our mental conception of these two facts, the easy mobility and the compressibility of the parts of a liquid, so that they will fit the most diverse classes of experience, we shall arrive at the following proposition : When equilibrium subsists in a liquid, in the interior of which no forces act and the gravity of which we neglect, the same equal pressure is exerted on each and every equal surface-element of that liquid however and wherever situated. The pressure, therefore, is the same at all points and is independent of direction.

Special experiments in demonstration of this principle have, perhaps, never been instituted with the requisite degree of exactitude. But the proposition has by our experience of liquids been made very familiar, and readily explains it.

10. If a liquid be enclosed in a vessel (Fig. 65) which is supplied with a piston A, the cross-section of which is unit in area, and with a piston B which for the time being is made stationary, and on the piston A a load p be placed, then the same pressure p, gravity neglected, will prevail throughout all the parts of the vessel. The piston will penetrate inward and the walls of the vessel will continue to be deformed till the point is reached

Fig. 65.

at which the elastic forces of the rigid and fluid bodies perfectly equilibrate one another. If then we imagine the piston B, which has the cross-section f, to be movable, a force $f . p$ alone will keep it in equilibrium.
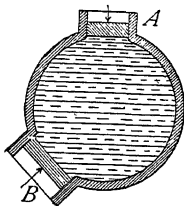
Concerning Pascal's deduction of the proposition before discussed from the principle of virtual displacements, it is to be remarked that the conditions of dis-

placement which he perceived hinge wholly upon the
fact of the ready mobility of the parts and on the
equality of the pressure throughout every portion of
the liquid. If it were possible for a greater compression
to take place in one part of a liquid than in another,
the ratio of the displacements would be disturbed and
Pascal's deduction would no longer be admissible.
That the property of the equality of the pressure is a
property given in experience, is a fact that cannot be
escaped ; as we shall readily admit if we recall to mind
that the same law that Pascal deduced for liquids also
holds good for gases, where even approximately there
can be no question of a constant volume. This latter
fact does not afford any difficulty to our view ; but to
that of Pascal it does. In the case of the lever also, be
it incidentally remarked, the ratios of the virtual dis-
placements are assured by the elastic forces of the
lever-body, which do not permit of any great devia-
tion from these relations.

11. We shall now consider the action of liquids un-
der the influence of gravity. The upper surface of a
liquid in equilibrium is horizontal,
NN (Fig. 66). This fact is at once
rendered intelligible when we re-
flect that every alteration of the sur-
face in question elevates the centre
of gravity of the liquid, and pushes
the liquid mass resting in the shaded

Fig. 66.

space beneath NN and having the centre of gravity S
into the shaded space above NN having the centre of
gravity S'. Which alteration, of course, is at once re-
versed by gravity.
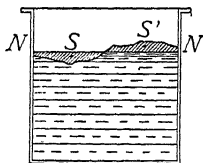
        Let there be in equilibrium in a vessel a heavy
liquid with a horizontal upper surface. We consider

(Fig. 67) a small rectangular parallelepipedon in the
interior. The area of its horizontal base, we will say, is
α, and the length of its vertical edges dh. The weight
of this parallelepipedon is therefore $\alpha\,dh\,s$, where s is
its specific gravity. If the paral-
lelepipedon do not sink, this is
possible only on the condition that
a greater pressure is exerted on the
lower surface by the fluid than on
the upper. The pressures on the
upper and lower surfaces we will

Fig. 67.

respectively designate as αp and $\alpha\,(p+dp)$. Equi-
librium obtains when $\alpha\,dh\,.\,s = \alpha\,dp$ or $dp/dh = s$,
where h in the downward direction is reckoned as posi-
tive. We see from this that for equal increments of h
vertically downwards the pressure p must, correspond-
ingly, also receive equal increments. So that $p =
hs + q$; and if q, the pressure at the upper surface,
which is usually the pressure of the atmosphere, be-
comes $= 0$, we have, more simply, $p = hs$, that is, the
pressure is proportional to the depth beneath the sur-
face. If we imagine the liquid to be pouring into a ves-
sel, and this condition of affairs not yet attained, every
liquid particle will then sink until the compressed par-
ticle beneath balances by the elasticity developed in it
the weight of the particle above.
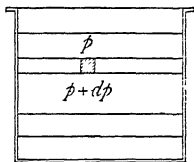
From the view we have here presented it will be fur-
ther apparent, that the increase of pressure in a liquid
takes place solely in the direction in which gravity
acts. Only at the lower surface, at the base, of the
parallelepipedon, is an excess of elastic pressure on the
part of the liquid beneath required to balance the
weight of the parallelepipedon. Along the two sides of
the vertical containing surfaces of the parallelepipedon,

the liquid is in a state of equal compression, since no
force acts in the vertical containing surfaces that would
determine a greater compression on the one side than
on the other.

Level sur-
faces.

If we picture to ourselves the totality of all the
points of the liquid at which the same pressure p acts,
we shall obtain a surface—a so-called *level surface*. If
we displace a particle in the direction of the action of
gravity, it undergoes a change of pressure. If we dis-
place it at right angles to the direction of the action of
gravity, no alteration of pressure takes place. In the
latter case it remains on the same level surface, and
the element of the level surface, accordingly, stands at
right angles to the direction of the force of gravity.

Imagining the earth to be fluid and spherical, the
level surfaces are concentric spheres, and the directions
of the forces of gravity (the radii) stand at right angles
to the elements of the spherical surfaces. Similar ob-
servations are admissible if the liquid particles be acted
on by other forces than gravity, magnetic forces, for
example.

Their func-
tion in
thought.

The level surfaces afford, in a certain sense, a dia-
gram of the force-relations to which a fluid is subjected;
a view further elaborated by analytical hydrostatics.

12. The increase of the pressure with the depth be-
low the surface of a heavy liquid may be illustrated by
a series of experiments which we chiefly owe to Pas-
cal. These experiments also well illustrate the fact,
that the pressure is independent of the direction. In
Fig. 68, 1, is an empty glass tube g ground off at the
bottom and closed by a metal disc $p\,p$, to which a
string is attached, and the whole plunged into a vessel
of water. When immersed to a sufficient depth we
may let the string go, without the metal disc, which is

supported by the pressure of the liquid, falling. In 2,
the metal disc is replaced by a tiny column of mer-
cury. If (3) we dip an open siphon tube filled with
mercury into the water, we shall
see the mercury, in consequence
of the pressure at *a*, rise into
the longer arm. In 4, we see a
tube, at the lower extremity of
which a leather bag filled with
mercury is tied: continued im-
mersion forces the mercury
higher and higher into the tube.
In 5, a piece of wood *h* is driven
by the pressure of the water into
the small arm of an empty siphon
tube. In 6, a piece of wood *H*
immersed in mercury adheres to
the bottom of the vessel, and is
pressed firmly against it for as
long a time as the mercury is
kept from working its way un-
derneath it.

13. Once we have made quite
clear to ourselves that the pres-
sure in the interior of a heavy
liquid increases proportionally to
the depth below the surface, the
law that the pressure at the base
of a vessel is independent of its
form will be readily perceived.
The pressure increases as we de-
scend at an equal rate, whether the vessel (Fig. 69)
has the form *abcd* or *ebcf*. In both cases the walls
of the vessel where they meet the liquid, go on deforming
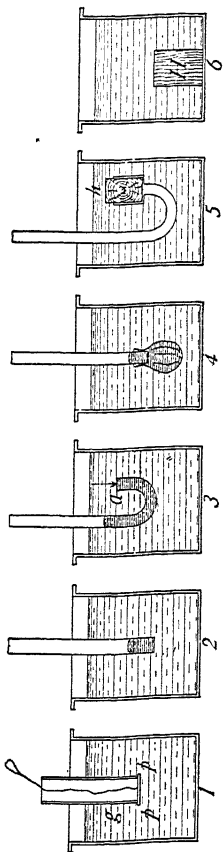
Fig. 68.

The pres-
sure at the
base of a
vessel inde-
pendent of
its form.

till the point is reached at which they equilibrate by the
elasticity developed in them the pressure exerted by the
fluid, that is, take the place as regards pressure of the

Fig. 69.

fluid adjoining.   This fact is
a direct justification of Ste-
vinus's fiction of the solidi-
fied fluid supplying the place
of the walls of the vessel.
The pressure on the base
always remains $P = A h s$,
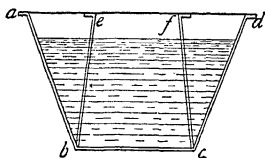
where A denotes the area of the base, h the depth of
the horizontal plane base below the level, and s the
specific gravity of the liquid.

Elucida-
tion of this
fact.

The fact that, the walls of the vessel being neg-
lected, the vessels 1, 2, 3 of Fig. 70 of equal base-
area and equal pressure-height weigh differently in the
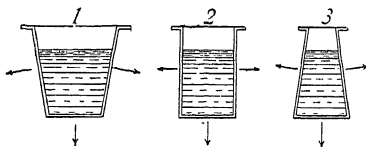
Fig. 70.

balance, of course
in no wise con-
tradicts the laws
of pressure men-
tioned.   If we take
into account   the

lateral pressure, we shall see that in the case of 1 we
have left an extra component downwards, and in the
case of 3 an extra component upwards, so that on the
whole the resultant superficial pressure is always equal
to the weight.

The princi-
ple of vir-
tual dis-
placements
applied to
the consid-
eration of
problems of
this class.

14. The principle of virtual displacements is ad-
mirably adapted to the acquisition of clearness and
comprehensiveness in cases of this character, and we
shall accordingly make use of it.   To begin with, how-
ever, let the following be noted.   If the weight q (Fig.
71) descend from position 1 to position 2, and a weight
of exactly the same size move at the same time from

2 to 3, the work performed in this operation is $q h_1 +$ Prelimi-
nary re-
marks.
$q h_2 = q (h_1 + h_2)$, the same, that is, as if the weight
q passed directly from 1 to 3 and the weight at 2 re-
mained in its original position. The observation is
easily generalised.
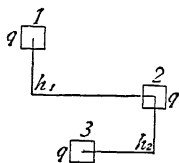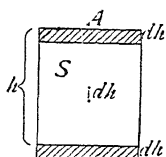
Fig 71.   Fig. 72.

Let us consider a heavy homogeneous rectangular
parallelepipedon, with vertical edges of the length h,
base A, and the specific gravity s (Fig. 72). Let this
parallelepipedon (or, what is the same thing, its centre
of gravity) descend a distance dh. The work done is
then $A h s . dh$, or, also, $A dh s . h$. In the first expres-
sion we conceive the whole weight $A h s$ displaced the
vertical distance dh; in the second we conceive the
weight $A dh s$ as having descended from the upper
shaded space to the lower shaded space the distance h,
and leave out of account
the rest of the body.
Both methods of concep-
tion are admissible and
equivalent.

15. With the aid of
this observation we shall
obtain a clear insight into

Pascal's
paradox.

Fig. 73.

the paradox of Pascal, which consists of the following.
The vessel g (Fig. 73), fixed to a separate support and
consisting of a narrow upper and a very broad lower
cylinder, is closed at the bottom by a movable piston,
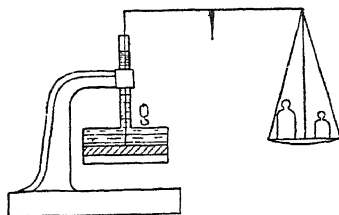
which, by means of a string passing through the axis of the cylinders, is independently suspended from the extremity of one arm of a balance. If g be filled with water, then, despite the smallness of the quantity of water used, there will have to be placed on the other scale-pan, to balance it, several weights of considerable size, the sum of which will be $A h s$, where A is the piston-area, h the height of the liquid, and s its specific gravity. But if the liquid be frozen and the mass loosened from the walls of the vessel, a very small weight will be sufficient to preserve equilibrium.

The explanation of the paradox Let us look to the virtual displacements of the two cases (Fig. 74). In the first case, supposing the piston to be lifted a distance dh, the virtual moment is
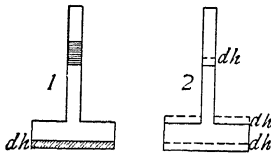
Fig. 74.

$A \, dhs \, . \, h$ or $A \, hs \, . \, dh$. It thus comes to the same thing, whether we consider the mass that the motion of the piston displaces to be lifted to the upper surface of the fluid through the entire pressure-height, or consider the entire weight $A \, hs$ lifted the distance of the piston-displacement dh. In the second case, the mass that the piston displaces is not lifted to the upper surface of the fluid, but suffers a displacement which is much smaller—the displacement, namely, of the piston. If A, a are the sectional areas respectively of the greater and the less cylinder, and k and l their respective heights, then the virtual moment of the present case is $A \, dhs \, . \, k + a \, dhs \, . \, l = (A k + a l) \, s \, . \, dh$; which is equivalent to the lifting of a much smaller weight $(A k + a l) \, s$, the distance dh.

16. The laws relating to the lateral pressure of liquids are but slight modifications of the laws of basal

pressure. If we have, for example, a cubical vessel The laws of lateral pressure.
of 1 decimetre on the side, which is a vessel of litre
capacity, the pressure on any one of the vertical lateral
walls *ABCD*, when the vessel is filled with water, is
easily determinable. The deeper the migratory element
considered descends beneath the surface, the greater
the pressure will be to which it is subjected. We easily
perceive, thus, that the pressure on a lateral wall is rep-
resented by a wedge of water *ABCDHI* resting upon

the wall horizontally
placed, where *ID* is at
right angles to *BD* and
ID = *HC* = *AC*. The
lateral pressure accor-
dingly is equal to half
a kilogramme.

Fig 75.

To determine the
point of application of the resultant pressure, conceive
ABCD again horizontal with the water-wedge resting
upon it. We cut off $AK = BL = \frac{2}{3}AC$, draw the
straight line *KL* and bisect it at *M*; *M* is the point of
application sought, for through this point the vertical
line cutting the centre of gravity of the wedge passes.

A plane inclined figure forming the base of a vessel The pres-sure on a plane in-clined base.
filled with a liquid, is divided into the elements α, α',
α'' . . . with the depths h, h', h'' . . . below the level of
the liquid. The pressure on the base is

$$(\alpha h + \alpha' h' + \alpha'' h'' + \ldots) s.$$

If we call the total base-area *A*, and the depth of its
centre of gravity below the surface *H*, then

$$\frac{\alpha h + \alpha' h' + \alpha'' h'' + \ldots}{\alpha + \alpha' + \alpha'' + \ldots} = \frac{\alpha h + \alpha' h' + \ldots}{A} = H,$$

whence the pressure on the base is *AHs*.

17. The principle of Archimedes can be deduced in
various ways. After the manner of Stevinus, let us
conceive in the interior of the liquid a portion of it
solidified. This portion now, as before, will be sup-
ported by the circumnatant liquid. The resultant of
the forces of pressure acting on the surfaces is accor-
dingly applied at the centre of gravity of the liquid dis-
placed by the solidified body, and is equal and opposite
to its weight. If now we put in the place of the solid-
ified liquid another different body of the same form, but
of a different specific gravity, the forces of pressure at
the surfaces will remain the same. Accordingly, there
now act on the body two forces, the weight of the body,
applied at the centre of gravity of the body, and the up-
ward buoyancy, the resultant of the surface-pressures,
applied at the centre of gravity of the displaced liquid.
The two centres of gravity in question coincide only in
the case of homogeneous solid bodies.

If we immerse a rectangular parallelepipedon of al-
titude h and base a, with edges vertically placed, in a
liquid of specific gravity s, then the pressure on the
upper basal surface, when at a depth k below the level
of the liquid is $\alpha k s$, while the pressure on the lower
surface is $\alpha (k + h) s$. As the lateral pressures destroy
each other, an excess of pressure $\alpha h s$ upwards re-
mains; or, where v denotes the volume of the paral-
lelepipedon, an excess $v . s$.

We shall approach nearest the fundamental con-
ception from which Archimedes started, by recourse to
the principle of virtual displacements. Let a paral-
lelepipedon (Fig. 76) of the specific gravity σ, base a,
and height h sink the distance dh. The virtual mo-
ment of the transference from the upper into the lower
shaded space of the figure will be $a\, dh . \sigma h$. But while

this is done, the liquid rises from the lower into the up-per space, and its moment is $a\,dh\,s\,h$. The total vir-tual moment is therefore $a\,h\,(\sigma - s)\,dh = (p - q)\,dh$, where p denotes the weight of the body and q the weight of the displaced liquid.
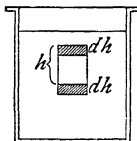
Fig. 76.
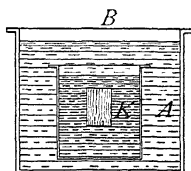
Fig. 77.

18. The question might occur to us, whether the upward pressure of a body in a liquid is affected by the immersion of the latter in another liquid. As a fact, this very question has been proposed. Let therefore (Fig. 77) a body K be submerged in a liquid A and the liquid with the containing vessel in turn submerged in another liquid B. If in the determination of the loss of weight in A it were proper to take account of the loss of weight of A in B, then K's loss of weight would necessarily vanish when the fluid B became identical with A. Therefore, K immersed in A would suffer a loss of weight and it would suffer none. Such a rule would be nonsensical.

With the aid of the principle of virtual displace- ments, we easily comprehend the more complicated cases of this character. If a body be first gradually immersed in B, then partly in B and partly in A, finally in A wholly; then, in the second case, consider-ing the virtual moments, both liquids are to be taken into account in the proportion of the volume of the body immersed in them. But as soon as the body is wholly immersed in A, the level of A on further dis-

placement no longer rises, and therefore B is no longer of consequence.

19. Archimedes's principle may be illustrated by a pretty experiment. From the one extremity of a scale-beam (Fig. 78) we hang a hollow cube H, and beneath it a solid cube M, which exactly fits into the first cube. We put weights into the opposite pan, until the scales are in equilibrium. If now M be submerged in water by lifting a vessel which stands beneath it, the equilibrium will be disturbed; but it will be immediately restored if H, the hollow cube, be filled with water.
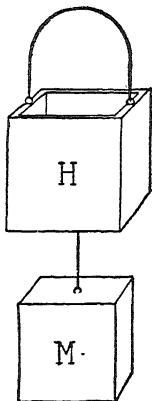
A counter-experiment is the following. H is left suspended alone at the one extremity of the balance, and into the opposite pan is placed a vessel of water, above which on an independent support M hangs by a thin wire. The scales are brought to equilibrium. If now M be lowered until it is immersed in the water, the equilibrium of the scales will be disturbed; but on filling H with water, it will be restored.

Fig. 78.

At first glance this experiment appears a little paradoxical. We feel, however, instinctively, that M cannot be immersed in the water without exerting a pressure that affects the scales. When we reflect, that the level of the water in the vessel rises, and that the solid body M equilibrates the surface-pressure of the water surrounding it, that is to say represents and takes the place of an equal volume of water, it will be found that the paradoxical character of the experiment vanishes.

20. The most important statical principles have been reached in the investigation of solid bodies. This course is accidentally the *historical* one, but it is by no means the only possible and *necessary* one. The different methods that Archimedes, Stevinus, Galileo, and the rest, pursued, place this idea clearly enough before the mind. As a matter of fact, general statical principles, might, with the assistance of some very simple propositions from the statics of rigid bodies, have been reached in the investigation of liquids. Stevinus certainly came very near such a discovery. We shall stop a moment to discuss the question.

Let us imagine a liquid, the weight of which we neglect. Let this liquid be enclosed in a vessel and subjected to a definite pressure. A portion of the liquid, let us suppose, solidifies. On the closed surface normal forces act proportional to the elements of the area, and we see without difficulty that their resultant will always be $= 0$.

If we mark off by a closed curve a portion of the closed surface, we obtain, on either side of it, a non-closed surface. All surfaces which are bounded by the same curve (of double curvature) and on which forces act normally (in the same sense) proportional to the elements of the area, have lines coincident in position for the resultants of these forces.
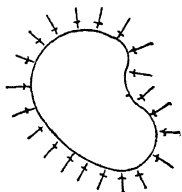
Fig. 79.

Let us suppose, now, that a fluid cylinder, determined by any closed plane curve as the perimeter of its base, solidifies. We may neglect the two basal surfaces, perpendicular to the axis. And instead of the cylindrical surface the closed curve simply may be considered. From this method follow quite analogous

propositions for normal forces proportional to the ele-
ments of a plane curve.

If the closed curve pass into a triangle, the con-
sideration will shape itself thus. The resultant normal
forces applied at the middle points of the sides of the
triangle, we represent in direction, sense, and magni-

Fig. 80.

tude by straight lines (Fig. 80). The
lines mentioned intersect at a point—
the centre of the circle described about
the triangle. It will further be noted,
that by the simple parallel displace-
ment of the lines representing the forces a triangle is
constructible which is similar and congruent to the
original triangle.
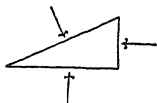
Thence follows this proposition :

Any three forces, which, acting at a point, are pro-
portional and parallel in direction to the sides of a tri-
angle, and which on meeting by parallel displacement
form a congruent triangle, are in equilibrium. We see
at once that this proposition is simply a different form
of the principle of the parallelogram of forces.

If instead of a triangle we imagine a polygon, we
shall arrive at the familiar proposition of the polygon
of forces.

We conceive now in a heavy liquid of specific gravity
x a portion solidified. On the element α of the closed
encompassing surface there acts a normal force $\alpha x z$,
where z is the distance of the element from the level of
the liquid. We know from the outset the result.

If normal forces which are determined by $\alpha x z$,
where α denotes an element of area and z its perpen-
dicular distance from a given plane E, act on a closed
surface inwards, the resultant will be $V. x$, in which ex-
pression V represents the enclosed volume. The

resultant acts at the centre of gravity of the volume, is perpendicular to the plane mentioned, and is directed towards this plane.

Under the same conditions let a rigid curved surface be bounded by a plane curve, which encloses on the plane the area A. The resultant of the forces acting on the curved surface is R, where

$$R^2 = (AZ\varkappa)^2 + (V\varkappa)^2 - AZV\varkappa^2 \cos \nu,$$

in which expression Z denotes the distance of the centre of gravity of the surface A from E, and ν the normal angle of E and A.

In the proposition of the last paragraph mathematically practised readers will have recognised a particular case of Green's Theorem, which consists in the reduction of surface-integrations to volume-integrations or *vice versa*.

We may, accordingly, *see into* the force-system of a fluid in equilibrium, or, if you please, *see out* of it, systems of forces of greater or less complexity, and thus reach by a short path propositions *a posteriori*. It is a mere accident that Stevinus did not light on these propositions. The method here pursued corresponds exactly to his. In this manner new discoveries can still be made.

21. The paradoxical results that were reached in the investigation of liquids, supplied a stimulus to further reflection and research. It should also not be left unnoticed, that the conception of a *physico-mechanical continuum* was first formed on the occasion of the investigation of liquids. A much freer and much more fruitful mathematical mode of view was developed thereby, than was possible through the study even of

systems of several solid bodies. The origin, in fact, of important modern mechanical ideas, as for instance that of the potential, is traceable to this source.

VII.

THE PRINCIPLES OF STATICS IN THEIR APPLICATION TO
GASEOUS BODIES.

Character of this department of inquiry.   1. The same views that subserve the ends of science in the investigation of liquids are applicable with but slight modifications to the investigation of gaseous bodies. To this extent, therefore, the investigation of gases does not afford mechanics any very rich returns. Nevertheless, the first steps that were taken in this province possess considerable significance from the point of view of the progress of civilisation and so have a high import for science generally.

The elusiveness of its subject-matter.   Although the ordinary man has abundant opportunity, by his experience of the resistance of the air, by the action of the wind, and the confinement of air in bladders, to perceive that air is of the nature of a body, yet this fact manifests itself infrequently, and never in the obvious and unmistakable way that it does in the case of solid bodies and fluids. It is known, to be sure, but is not sufficiently familiar to be prominent in popular thought. In ordinary life the presence of the air is scarcely ever thought of. (See p. 517.)

The effect of the first disclosures in this province.   Although the ancients, as we may learn from the accounts of Vitruvius, possessed instruments which, like the so-called hydraulic organs, were based on the condensation of air, although the invention of the air-gun is traced back to Ctesibius, and this instrument was also known to Guericke, the notions which people held with regard to the nature of the air as late even

OTTO De GUERICKE

Serenifs: ac Potentifs: Elector: Brandeb:
Confiliarius et Civitat: Magdeb. Conful.

as the seventeenth century were exceedingly curious and loose. We must not be surprised, therefore, at the intellectual commotion which the first more important experiments in this direction evoked. The enthusiastic description which Pascal gives of Boyle's air-pump experiments is readily comprehended, if we transport ourselves back into the epoch of these discoveries. What indeed could be more wonderful than the sudden discovery that a thing which we do not see, hardly feel, and take scarcely any notice of, constantly envelopes us on all sides, penetrates all things; that it is the most important condition of life, of combustion, and of gigantic mechanical phenomena. It was on this occasion, perhaps, first made manifest by a great and striking disclosure, that physical science is not restricted to the investigation of palpable and grossly sensible processes.

The views entertained on this subject in Galileo's time. 2. In Galileo's time philosophers explained the phenomenon of suction, the action of syringes and pumps by the so-called *horror vacui*—nature's abhorrence of a vacuum. Nature was thought to possess the power of preventing the formation of a vacuum by laying hold of the first adjacent thing, whatsoever it was, and immediately filling up with it any empty space that arose. Apart from the ungrounded speculative element which this view contains, it must be conceded, that to a certain extent it really represents the phenomenon. The person competent to enunciate it must actually have discerned some principle in the phenomenon. This principle, however, does not fit all cases. Galileo is said to have been greatly surprised at hearing of a newly constructed pump accidentally supplied with a very long suction-pipe which was not able to raise water to a height of more than eighteen Italian

ells. His first thought was that the *horror vacui* (or the *resistenza del vacuo*) possessed a measurable power. The greatest height to which water could be raised by suction he called *altezza limitatissima.* He sought, moreover, to determine directly the weight able to draw out of a closed pump-barrel a tightly fitting piston resting on the bottom.

3. TORRICELLI hit upon the idea of measuring the resistance to a vacuum by a column of mercury instead of a column of water, and he expected to obtain a column of about $\frac{1}{14}$ of the length of the water column. His expectation was confirmed by the experiment performed in 1643 by Viviani in the well-known manner, and which bears to-day the name of the Torricellian experiment. A glass tube somewhat over a metre in length, sealed at one end and filled with mercury, is stopped at the open end with the finger, inverted in a dish of mercury, and placed in a vertical position. Removing the finger, the column of mercury falls and remains stationary at a height of about 76 cm. By this experiment it was rendered quite probable, that some very definite pressure forced the fluids into the vacuum. What pressure this was, Torricelli very soon divined.

Torricelli's experiment

Galileo had endeavored, some time before this, to determine the weight of the air, by first weighing a glass bottle containing nothing but air and then again weighing the bottle after the air had been partly expelled by heat. It was known, accordingly, that the air was heavy. But to the majority of men the *horror vacui* and the weight of the air were very distantly connected notions. It is possible that in Torricelli's case the two ideas came into sufficient proximity to lead him to the conviction that all phenomena ascribed to the *horror vacui* were explicable in a simple and

Galileo's attempt to weigh air.

logical manner by the pressure exerted by the weight of a fluid column—a column of air. Torricelli discovered, therefore, the pressure of the atmosphere ; he also first observed by means of his column of mercury the variations of the pressure of the atmosphere.

4. The news of Torricelli's experiment was circulated in France by Mersenne, and came to the knowledge of Pascal in the year 1644. The accounts of the theory of the experiment were presumably so imperfect that PASCAL found it necessary to reflect independently thereon. (*Pesanteur de l'air.* Paris, 1663.)

He repeated the experiment with mercury and with a tube of water, or rather of red wine, 40 feet in length. He soon convinced himself by inclining the tube that the space above the column of fluid was really empty ; and he found himself obliged to defend this view against the violent attacks of his countrymen. Pascal pointed out an easy way of producing the vacuum which they regarded as impossible, by the use of a glass syringe, the nozzle of which was closed with the finger under water and the piston then drawn back without much difficulty. Pascal showed, in addition, that a curved siphon 40 feet high filled with water does not flow, but can be made to do so by a sufficient inclination to the perpendicular. The same experiment was made on a smaller scale with mercury. The same siphon flows or does not flow according as it is placed in an inclined or a vertical position.

In a later performance, Pascal refers expressly to the fact of the weight of the atmosphere and to the pressure due to this weight. He shows, that minute animals, like flies, are able, without injury to themselves, to stand a high pressure in fluids, provided only the pressure is equal on all sides ; and he applies this

at once to the case of fishes and of animals that live in the air. Pascal's chief merit, indeed, is to have estab- lished a complete analogy between the phenomena con- ditioned by liquid pressure (water-pressure) and those conditioned by atmospheric pressure.

5. By a series of experiments Pascal shows that mercury in consequence of atmospheric pressure rises into a space containing no air in the same way that, in consequence of water-pressure, it rises into a space

containing no water. If into a deep ves-sel filled with water (Fig. 81) a tube be sunk at the lower end of which a bag of mercury is tied, but so inserted that the upper end of the tube projects out of the water and thus contains only air, then the deeper the tube is sunk into the water the higher will the mercury, subjected

Fig. 81.

to the constantly increasing pressure of the water, as-cend into the tube. The experiment can also be made, with a siphon-tube, or with a tube open at its lower end.
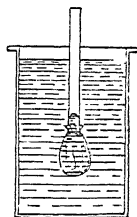
Undoubtedly it was the attentive consideration of this very phenomenon that led Pascal to the idea that the barometer-column must necessarily stand lower at the summit of a mountain than at its base, and that it could accordingly be employed to determine the height of mountains. He communicated this idea to his brother-in-law, Perier, who forthwith successfully performed the experiment on the summit of the Puy de Dôme. (Sept. 19, 1648.)

Pascal referred the phenomena connected with ad- hesion-plates to the pressure of the atmosphere, and gave as an illustration of the principle involved the re-sistance experienced when a large hat lying flat on a table is suddenly lifted. The cleaving of wood to the

bottom of a vessel of quicksilver is a phenomenon of the same kind.
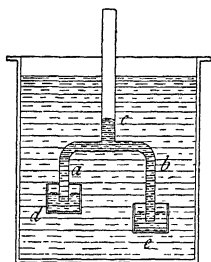
Pascal imitated the flow produced in a siphon by atmospheric pressure, by the use of water-pressure.

The two open unequal arms *a* and *b* of a three-armed tube *a b c* (Fig. 82) are dipped into the vessels of mercury *e* and *d*. If the whole arrangement then be immersed in a deep vessel of water, yet so that the long *open* branch shall always project above the upper surface, the mercury will gradually rise in the branches *a* and *b*, the columns finally unite, and a stream begin to flow from the vessel *d* to the vessel *e* through the siphon-tube open above to the air.

Fig. 82.
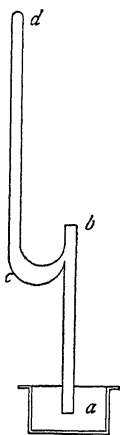
The Torricellian experiment was modified by Pascal in a very ingenious manner. A tube of the form *a b c d* (Fig. 83), of double the length of an ordinary barometer-tube, is filled with mercury. The openings *a* and *b* are closed with the fingers and the tube placed in a dish of mercury with the end *a* downwards. If now *a* be opened, the mercury in *c d* will all fall into the expanded portion at *c*, and the mercury in *a b* will sink to the height of the ordinary barometer-column. A vacuum is produced at *b* which presses the finger closing the hole painfully inwards.

Fig. 83.

If *b* also be opened the column in *a b* will sink completely, while the mercury in the expanded portion *c*, being now exposed to the pressure of the

atmosphere, will rise in cd to the height of the barometer-column. Without an air-pump it was hardly possible to combine the experiment and the counter-experiment in a simpler and more ingenious manner than Pascal thus did.

6. With regard to Pascal's mountain-experiment, we shall add the following brief supplementary remarks. Let b_0 be the height of the barometer at the level of the sea, and let it fall, say, at an elevation of m metres, to kb_0, where k is a proper fraction. At a further elevation of m metres, we must expect to obtain the barometer-height $k . k b_0$, since we here pass through a stratum of air the density of which bears to that of the first the proportion of $k : 1$. If we pass upwards to the altitude $h = n . m$ metres, the barometer-height corresponding thereto will be

$$b_h = k^n . b_0 \text{ or } n = \frac{\log b_h - \log b_0}{\log k} \text{ or}$$

$$h = \frac{m}{\log k} (\log b_h - \log b_0).$$

The principle of the method is, we see, a very simple one; its difficulty arises solely from the multifarious collateral conditions and corrections that have to be looked to.

7. The most original and fruitful achievements in the domain of aërostatics we owe to OTTO VON GUE-RICKE. His experiments appear to have been suggested in the main by philosophical speculations. He proceeded entirely in his own way; for he first heard of the Torricellian experiment from Valerianus Magnus at the Imperial Diet of Ratisbon in 1654, where he demonstrated the experimental discoveries made by him about 1650. This statement is confirmed by his method

of constructing a water-barometer which was entirely different from that of Torricelli.

Guericke's book (*Experimenta nova, ut vocantur, Magdeburgica.* Amsterdam. 1672) makes us realise the narrow views men took in his time. The fact that he was able gradually to abandon these views and to acquire broader ones by his individual endeavor speaks favorably for his intellectual powers. We perceive with astonishment how short a space of time separates us from the era of scientific barbarism, and can no longer marvel that the barbarism of the social order still so oppresses us.

In the introduction to this book and in various other places, Guericke, in the midst of his experimental investigations, speaks of the various objections to the Copernican system which had been drawn from the Bible, (objections which he seeks to invalidate,) and discusses such subjects as the locality of heaven, the locality of hell, and the day of judgment. Disquisitions on empty space occupy a considerable portion of the work.

Guericke regards the air as the exhalation or odor of bodies, which we do not perceive because we have been accustomed to it from childhood. Air, to him, is not an element. He knows that through the effects of heat and cold it changes its volume, and that it is compressible in Hero's Ball, or *Pila Heronis* ; on the basis of his own experiments he gives its pressure at 20 ells of water, and expressly speaks of its weight, by which flames are forced upwards.

8. To produce a vacuum, Guericke first employed a wooden cask filled with water. The pump of a fire-engine was fastened to its lower end. The water, it was thought, in following the piston and the action of

Guericke's First Experiments. (*Experim. Magdeb.*)

His at-
tempts to
produce a
vacuum.

gravity, would fall and be pumped out. Guericke ex-
pected that empty space would remain. The fastenings
of the pump repeatedly proved to be too weak, since in
consequence of the atmospheric pressure that weighed
on the piston considerable force had to be applied to
move it. On strengthening the fastenings three power-
ful men finally accomplished the exhaustion. But,
meantime the air poured in through the joints of the
cask with a loud blast, and no vacuum was obtained.
In a subsequent experiment the small cask from which
the water was to be exhausted was immersed in a larger
one, likewise filled with water. But in this case, too, the
water gradually forced its way into the smaller cask.

His final
success.

Wood having proved in this way to be an unsuit-
able material for the purpose, and Guericke having re-
marked in the last experiment indications of success,
the philosopher now took a large hollow sphere of
copper and ventured to exhaust the air directly. At
the start the exhaustion was successfully and easily
conducted. But after a few strokes of the piston, the
pumping became so difficult that four stalwart men
(*viri quadrati*), putting forth their utmost efforts, could
hardly budge the piston. And when the exhaustion
had gone still further, the sphere suddenly collapsed,
with a violent report. Finally by the aid of a copper
vessel of perfect spherical form, the production of the
vacuum was successfully accomplished. Guericke de-
scribes the great force with which the air rushed in on
the opening of the cock.

9. After these experiments Guericke constructed
an independent air-pump. A great glass globular re-
ceiver was mounted and closed by a large detachable
tap in which was a stop-cock. Through this opening
the objects to be subjected to experiment were placed

in the receiver. To secure more perfect closure the Guerick
air-pum
receiver was made to stand, with its stop-cock under
water, on a tripod, beneath which the pump proper was
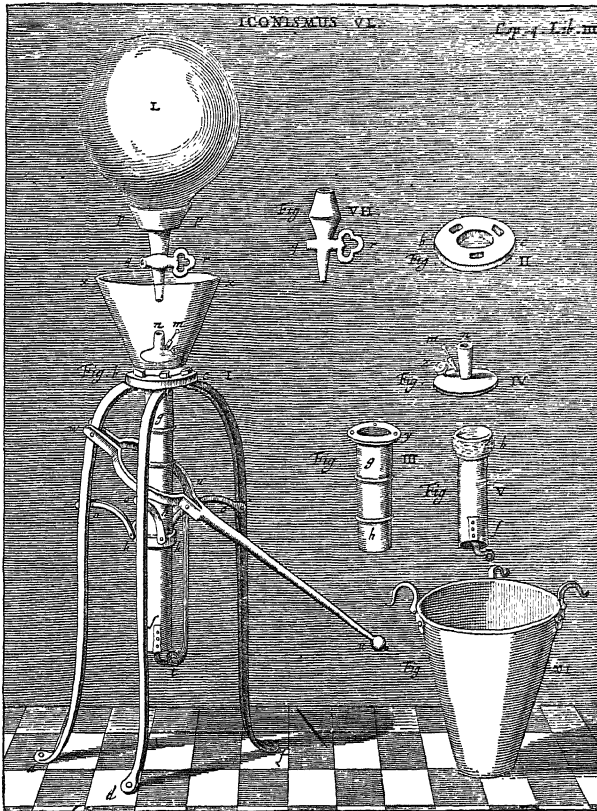
Guericke's Air-pump. (*Experim. Magdeb.*)

placed. Subsequently, separate receivers, connected
with the exhausted sphere, were also employed in the
experiments.

The phenomena which Guericke observed with this apparatus are manifold and various. The noise which water in a vacuum makes on striking the sides of the glass receiver, the violent rush of air and water into exhausted vessels suddenly opened, the escape on exhaustion of gases absorbed in liquids, the liberation of their fragrance, as Guericke expresses it, were immediately remarked. A lighted candle is extinguished on exhaustion, because, as Guericke conjectures, it derives its nourishment from the air. Combustion, as his striking remark is, is not an annihilation, but a transformation of the air.

A bell does not ring in a vacuum. Birds die in it. Many fishes swell up, and finally burst. A grape is kept fresh *in vacuo* for over half a year.

By connecting with an exhausted cylinder a long tube dipped in water, a water-barometer is constructed. The column raised is 19–20 ells high; and Von Guericke explained all the effects that had been ascribed to the *horror vacui* by the principle of atmospheric pressure.

An important experiment consisted in the weighing of a receiver, first when filled with air and then when exhausted. The weight of the air was found to vary with the circumstances ; namely, with the temperature and the height of the barometer. According to Guericke a definite ratio of weight between air and water does not exist.

But the deepest impression on the contemporary world was made by the experiments relating to atmospheric pressure. An exhausted sphere formed of two hemispheres tightly adjusted to one another was rent asunder with a violent report only by the traction of sixteen horses. The same sphere was suspended from

a beam, and a heavily laden scale-pan was attached to the lower half.

The cylinder of a large pump is closed by a piston. To the piston a rope is tied which leads over a pulley and is divided into numerous branches on which a great number of men pull. The moment the cylinder is connected with an exhausted receiver, the men at the ropes are thrown to the ground. In a similar manner a huge weight is lifted.

Guericke mentions the compressed-air gun as something already known, and constructs independently an instrument that might appropriately be called a rarified-air gun. A bullet is driven by the external atmospheric pressure through a suddenly exhausted tube, forces aside at the end of the tube a leather valve which closes it, and then continues its flight with a considerable velocity.

Guericke's air-gun.

Closed vessels carried to the summit of a mountain and opened, blow out air; carried down again in the same manner, they suck in air. From these and other experiments Guericke discovers that the air is elastic.

10. The investigations of Guericke were continued by an Englishman, ROBERT BOYLE.* The new experiments which Boyle had to supply were few. He observes the propagation of light in a vacuum and the action of a magnet through it; lights tinder by means of a burning glass; brings the barometer under the receiver of the air-pump, and was the first to construct a balance-manometer ["the statical manometer"]. The ebullition of heated fluids and the freezing of water on exhaustion were first observed by him.

The investigations of Robert Boyle.

Of the air-pump experiments common at the present day may also be mentioned that with falling bodies,

* And published by him in 1660, before the work of Von Guericke.—*Trans.*

The fall of
bodies in a
vacuum. which confirms in a simple manner the view of Galileo
that when the resistance of the air has been eliminated
light and heavy bodies both fall with the same velo-
city. In an exhausted glass tube a leaden bullet and a
piece of paper are placed. Putting the tube in a ver-
tical position and quickly turning it about a horizontal
axis through an angle of 180°, both bodies will be seen
to arrive simultaneously at the bottom of the tube.

Of the quantitative data we will mention the fol-
lowing. The atmospheric pressure that supports a
column of mercury of 76 cm. is easily calculated from
the specific gravity 13·60 of mercury to be 1·0336 kg.
to 1 sq.cm. The weight of 1000 cu.cm. of pure, dry
air at 0° C. and 760 mm. of pressure at Paris at an ele-
vation of 6 metres will be found to be 1·293 grams,
and the corresponding specific gravity, referred to
water, to be 0·001293.

11. Guericke knew of only *one* kind of air. We
may imagine therefore the excitement it created when
in 1755 BLACK discovered carbonic acid gas (fixed air)
and CAVENDISH in 1766 hydrogen (inflammable air),
discoveries which were soon followed by other similar
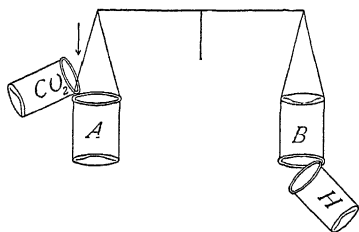
ones. The dissimilar
physical properties of
gases are very strik-
ing. Faraday has il-
lustrated their great
inequality of weight
by a beautiful lecture-
experiment. If from
a balance in equilib-

Fig. 84.

rium, we suspend (Fig. 84) two beakers *A*, *B*, the one
in an upright position and the other with its opening
downwards, we may pour heavy carbonic acid gas from

above into the one and light hydrogen from beneath
into the other. In both instances the balance turns in
the direction of the arrow. To-day, as we know, the
decanting of gases can be made directly visible by the
optical method of Foucault and Toeppler.

12. Soon after Torricelli's discovery, attempts were The mercu-
made to employ practically the vacuum thus produced. pump.
The so-called mercurial air-pumps were tried. But no
such instrument was successful until the present cen-
tury. The mercurial air-pumps now in common use
are really barometers of which the extremities are sup-
plied with large expansions and so connected that their
difference of level may be easily varied. The mercury
takes the place of the piston of the ordinary air-pump.

13. The expansive force of the air, a property ob- Boyle's law.
served by Guericke, was more accurately investigated
by BOYLE, and, later, by MARIOTTE. The law which
both found is as follows. If V be called the volume of
a given quantity of air and P its pressure on unit area
of the containing vessel, then the product $V.P$ is
always $=$ a constant quantity. If the volume of the
enclosed air be reduced one-half, the air will exert
double the pressure on unit of area; if the volume of
the enclosed quantity be doubled, the pressure will
sink to one-half; and so on. It is quite correct—as a
number of English writers have maintained in recent
times—that Boyle and not Mariotte is to be regarded
as the discoverer of the law that usually goes by
Mariotte's name. Not only is this true, but it must
also be added that Boyle knew that the law did not
hold exactly, whereas this fact appears to have escaped
Mariotte.

The method pursued by Mariotte in the ascertain-
ment of the law was very simple. He partially filled

Torricellian tubes with mercury, measured the volume of the air remaining, and then performed the Torricel-

lian experiment. The new volume of air was thus obtained, and by subtracting the height of the column of mercury from the barometer-height, also the new pressure to which the same quantity of air was now subjected.
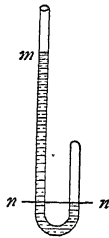
To condense the air Mariotte employed a siphon-tube with vertical arms. The smaller arm in which the air was contained was sealed at the upper end; the longer, into which the mercury was poured, was open at the upper end. The volume of the air was read off on the graduated tube, and to the difference of level of the mercury in the two arms the barometer-height was added. At the present day both sets of experiments are performed in the simplest manner by fastening a cylindrical glass tube (Fig. 86) rr, closed at the top, to a vertical scale and connecting it by a caoutchouc tube kk with a second open glass tube $r'r'$, which is movable up and down the scale. If the tubes be partly filled with mercury, any difference of level whatsoever of the two surfaces of mercury may be produced by displacing $r'r'$, and the corresponding variations of volume of the air enclosed in rr observed.

Fig. 85.
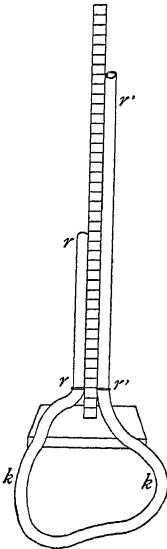
His appa-
ratus.

Fig. 86.

It struck Mariotte on the occasion of his investigations that any small quantity of air cut off completely

from the rest of the atmosphere and therefore not The expansive force of isolated portions of the atmosphere. directly affected by the latter's weight, also supported the barometer-column ; as where, to give an instance, the open arm of a barometer-tube is closed. The simple explanation of this phenomenon, which, of course, Mariotte immediately found, is this, that the air before enclosure must have been compressed to a point at which its tension balanced the gravitational pressure of the atmosphere ; that is to say, to a point at which it exerted an equivalent elastic pressure.

We shall not enter here into the details of the arrangement and use of air-pumps, which are readily understood from the law of Boyle and Mariotte.

14. It simply remains for us to remark, that the discoveries of aërostatics furnished so much that was new and wonderful that a valuable intellectual stimulus proceeded from the science.

CHAPTER II.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE PRINCIPLES OF DYNAMICS.

I.

GALILEO'S ACHIEVEMENTS.

Dynamics
wholly a
modern
science.

1. We now pass to the discussion of the funda-
mental principles of dynamics. This is entirely a mod-
ern science. The mechanical speculations of the an-
cients, particularly of the Greeks, related wholly to
statics. Dynamics was founded by GALILEO. We shall
readily recognise the correctness of this assertion if we
but consider a moment a few propositions held by the
Aristotelians of Galileo's time. To explain the descent
of heavy bodies and the rising of light bodies, (in li-
quids for instance,) it was assumed that every thing and
object sought its *place*: the place of heavy bodies was
below, the place of light bodies was above. Motions
were divided into natural motions, as that of descent,
and violent motions, as, for example, that of a pro-
jectile. From some few superficial experiments and
observations, philosophers had concluded that heavy
bodies fall more quickly and lighter bodies more slowly,
or, more precisely, that bodies of greater weight fall
more quickly and those of less weight more slowly. It
is sufficiently obvious from this that the dynamical
knowledge of the ancients, particularly of the Greeks,
was very insignificant, and that it was left to modern

times to lay the true foundations of this department of inquiry. (See Appendix, VII., p. 520.)

GALILEVS GALILEI FLORENTINVS
ANNVM AGENS LXXVIII
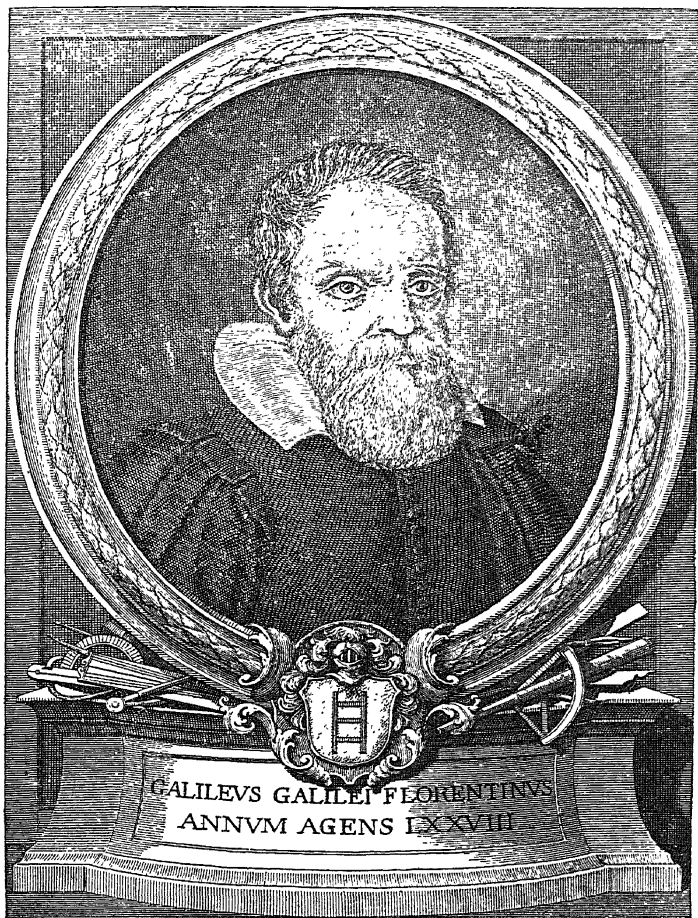
F.n Zucchi sculp

2. The treatise *Discorsi e dimostrazioni matematiche*, in which Galileo communicated to the world the first

Galileo's investigation of the laws of falling bodies. dynamical investigation of the laws of falling bodies, appeared in 1638. The modern spirit that Galileo discovers is evidenced here, at the very outset, by the fact that he does not ask *why* heavy bodies fall, but propounds the question, *How* do heavy bodies fall? in agreement with what *law* do freely falling bodies move? The method he employs to ascertain this law is this. He makes certain assumptions. He does not, however, like Aristotle, rest there, but endeavors to ascertain by trial whether they are correct or not.

His first, erroneous theory. The first theory on which he lights is the following. It seems in his eyes plausible that a freely falling body, inasmuch as it is plain that its velocity is constantly on the increase, so moves that its velocity is double after traversing double the distance, and triple after traversing triple the distance; in short, that the velocities acquired in the descent increase proportionally to the distances descended through. Before he proceeds to test experimentally this hypothesis, he reasons on it logically, implicates himself, however, in so doing, in a fallacy. He says, if a body has acquired a certain velocity in the first distance descended through, double the velocity in double such distance descended through, and so on; that is to say, if the velocity in the second instance is double what it is in the first, then the double distance will be traversed in the same time as the original simple distance. If, accordingly, in the case of the double distance we conceive the first half traversed, no time will, it would seem, fall to the account of the second half. The motion of a falling body appears, therefore, to take place instantaneously; which not only contradicts the hypothesis but also ocular evidence. We shall revert to this peculiar fallacy of Galileo's later on.

3. After Galileo fancied he had discovered this as- His second, correct, as-
sumption.
sumption to be untenable, he made a second one, ac-
cording to which the velocity acquired is proportional
to the time of the descent. That is, if a body fall once,
and then fall again during twice as long an interval of
time as it first fell, it will attain in the second instance
double the velocity it acquired in the first. He found
no self-contradiction in this theory, and he accordingly
proceeded to investigate by experiment whether the
assumption accorded with observed facts. It was dif-
ficult to prove by any direct means that the velocity
acquired was proportional to the time of descent. It
was easier, however, to investigate by what law the
distance increased with the time; and he consequently
deduced from his assumption the relation that obtained
between the distance and the time, and tested this by
experiment. The deduction
is simple, distinct, and per-
fectly correct. He draws
(Fig. 87) a straight line, and
on it cuts off successive por-
tions that represent to him
the times elapsed. At the extremities of these por-
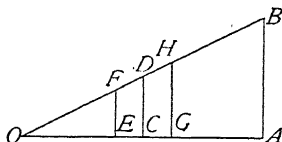
Fig. 87.

Discussion and eluci-dation of the true theory.

tions he erects perpendiculars (ordinates), and these
represent the velocities acquired. Any portion *OG* of
the line *OA* denotes, therefore, the time of descent
elapsed, and the corresponding perpendicular *GH* the
velocity acquired in such time.

If, now, we fix our attention on the progress of the
velocities, we shall observe with Galileo the following
fact: namely, that at the instant *C*, at which one-half
OC of the time of descent *OA* has elapsed, the velocity
CD is also one-half of the final velocity *AB*.

If now we examine two instants of time, *E* and *G*,

equally distant in opposite directions from the instant
C, we shall observe that the velocity HG exceeds the
mean velocity CD by the same amount that EF falls
short of it.   For every instant antecedent to C there
exists a corresponding one equally distant from it sub-
sequent to C.   Whatever loss, therefore, as compared
with *uniform* motion with half the final velocity, is suf-
fered in the first half of the motion, such loss is made
up in the second half.   The distance fallen through we
may consequently regard as having been *uniformly* de-
scribed with half the final velocity.   If, accordingly,
we make the final velocity v proportional to the time
of descent t, we shall obtain $v = gt$, where g denotes
the final velocity acquired in unit of time—the so-called
acceleration.   The space s descended through is there-
fore given by the equation $s = (gt/2) t$ or $s = gt^2/2$.
Motion of this sort, in which, agreeably to the assump-
tion, equal velocities constantly accrue in equal inter-
vals of time, we call *uniformly accelerated motion.*

If we collect the times of descent, the final veloci-
ties, and the distances traversed, we shall obtain the
following table:

t.	v.	s.
1.	$1g$.	$1 \times 1 . \dfrac{g}{2}$
2.	$2g$.	$2 \times 2 . \dfrac{g}{2}$
3.	$3g$.	$3 \times 3 . \dfrac{g}{2}$
4.	$4g$.	$4 \times 4 . \dfrac{g}{2}$
$\vdots$	$\vdots$	$\vdots$
	tg.	$t \times t . \dfrac{g}{2}$

4. The relation obtaining between t and s admits of experimental proof; and this Galileo accomplished in the manner which we shall now describe.

We must first remark that no part of the knowledge and ideas on this subject with which we are now so familiar, existed in Galileo's time, but that Galileo had to create these ideas and means for us. Accordingly, it was impossible for him to proceed as we should do to-day, and he was obliged, therefore, to pursue a different method. He first sought to retard the motion of descent, that it might be more accurately observed. He made observations on balls, which he caused to roll down inclined planes (grooves); assuming that only the velocity of the motion would be lessened here, but that the form of the law of descent would remain unmodified. If, beginning from the upper extremity, the distances 1, 4, 9, 16 . . . be notched off on the groove, the respective times of descent will be representable, it was assumed, by the numbers 1, 2, 3, 4 . . . ; a result which was, be it added, confirmed. The observation of the times involved, Galileo accomplished in a very ingenious manner. There were no clocks of the modern kind in his day: such were first rendered possible by the dynamical knowledge of which Galileo laid the foundations. The mechanical clocks which were used were very inaccurate, and were available only for the measurement of great spaces of time. Moreover, it was chiefly water-clocks and sand-glasses that were in use—in the form in which they had been handed down from the ancients. Galileo, now, constructed a very simple clock of this kind, which he especially adjusted to the measurement of small spaces of time; a thing not customary in those days. It consisted of a vessel of water of very large transverse dimensions, having in

the bottom a minute orifice which was closed with the
finger. As soon as the ball began to roll down the in-
clined plane Galileo removed his finger and allowed the
water to flow out on a balance; when the ball had ar-
rived at the terminus of its path he closed the orifice.
As the pressure-height of the fluid did not, owing to
the great transverse dimensions of the vessel, percept-
ibly change, the weights of the water discharged from
the orifice were proportional to the times. It was in
this way actually shown that the times increased simply,
while the spaces fallen through increased quadratically.
The inference from Galileo's assumption was thus con-
firmed by experiment, and with it the assumption itself.

5. To form some notion of the relation which sub-
sists between motion on an inclined plane and that of
free descent, Galileo made the assumption, that a body
which falls through the height of an inclined plane
attains the same final velocity as a body which falls
through its length. This is an assumption that will
strike us as rather a bold one; but in the manner in
which it was enunciated and employed by Galileo, it is
quite natural. We shall endeavor to explain the way by
which he was led to it. He says: If a body fall freely
downwards, its velocity increases proportionally to the
time. When, then, the body has arrived at a point be-
low, let us imagine its velocity reversed and directed
upwards; the body then, it is clear, will rise. We make
the observation that its motion in this case is a reflection,
so to speak, of its motion in the first case. As then its
velocity increased proportionally to the time of descent,
it will now, conversely, diminish in that proportion.
When the body has continued to rise for as long a
time as it descended, and has reached the height from
which it originally fell, its velocity will be reduced to

zero. We perceive, therefore, that a body will rise,
in virtue of the velocity acquired in its descent, just as
high as it has fallen. If, accordingly, a body falling
down an inclined plane could acquire a velocity which
would enable it, when placed on a differently inclined
plane, to rise higher than the point from which it had
fallen, we should be able to effect the elevation of
bodies by gravity alone. There is contained, accord-
ingly, in this assumption, that the velocity acquired by
a body in descent depends solely on the *vertical* height
fallen through and is independent of the inclination of
the path, nothing more than the uncontradictory ap-
prehension and recognition of the *fact* that heavy bodies
do not possess the tendency to rise, but only the ten-
dency to fall. If we should assume that a body fall-
ing down the length of an inclined plane in some way
or other attained a greater velocity than a body that
fell through its height, we should only have to let the
body pass with the acquired velocity to another in-
clined or vertical plane to make it rise to a greater ver-
tical height than it had fallen from. And if the velo-
city attained on the inclined plane were less, we should
only have to reverse the process to obtain the same re-
sult. In both instances a heavy body could, by an ap-
propriate arrangement of inclined planes, be forced
continually upwards solely by its own weight—a state
of things which wholly contradicts our instinctive
knowledge of the nature of heavy bodies. (See p. 522.)

6. Galileo, in this case, again, did not stop with
the mere philosophical and logical discussion of his
assumption, but tested it by comparison with expe-
rience.

He took a simple filar pendulum (Fig. 88) with a
heavy ball attached. Lifting the pendulum, while

elongated its full length, to the level of a given altitude,
and then letting it fall, it ascended to the same level
on the opposite side.   If it does not do so *exactly*,
Galileo said, the resistance of the air must be the cause
of the deficit.   This is inferrible from the fact that the
deficiency is greater in the case of a cork ball than it is
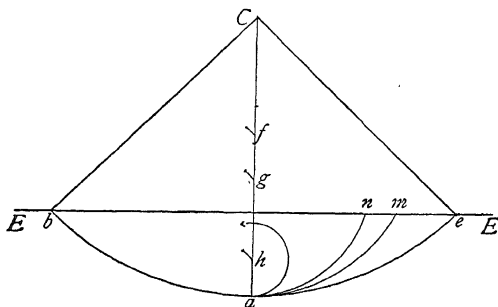
Fig. 88.

in the case of a heavy metal one.   However, this neg-
lected, the body ascends to the same altitude on the
opposite side.   Now it is permissible to regard the mo-
tion of a pendulum in the arc of a circle as a motion
of descent along a series of inclined planes of different
inclinations.   This seen, we can, with Galileo, easily
cause the body to rise on a different arc—on a different
series of inclined planes.   This we accomplish by driv-
ing in at one side of the thread, as it vertically hangs,
a nail *f* or *g*, which will prevent any given portion of
the thread from taking part in the second half of the
motion.   The moment the thread arrives at the line of
equilibrium and strikes the nail, the ball, which has
fallen through *b a*, will begin to ascend by a different
series of inclined planes, and describe the arc *a m* or *a n*.
Now if the inclination of the planes had any influence

on the velocity of descent, the body could not rise to
the same horizontal level from which it had fallen.
But it does. By driving the nail sufficiently low down,
we may shorten the pendulum for half of an oscillation
as much as we please ; the phenomenon, however, al-
ways remains the same. If the nail h be driven so low
down that the remainder of the string cannot reach to
the plane E, the ball will turn completely over and
wind the thread round the nail ; because when it has
attained the greatest height it can reach it still has a
residual velocity left.

7. If we assume thus, that the same final velocity is
attained on an inclined plane whether the body fall
through the height or the length of the plane,—in which
assumption nothing more is contained than that a body
rises by virtue of the velocity it has acquired in falling
just as high as it has fallen,—we shall easily arrive,
with Galileo, at the perception that the times of the de-
scent along the height and the length of an inclined
plane are in the simple proportion of the height and
the length ; or, what is the same, that the accelerations
are inversely proportional to the times of descent.
The acceleration along the height will consequently
bear to the acceleration along
the length the proportion of the
length to the height.   Let AB
(Fig. 89) be the height and AC
the length of the inclined plane.

The assumption leads to the law of relative accelerations sought.
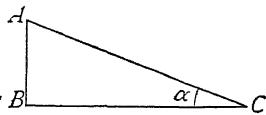
Fig. 89.

Both will be descended through in uniformly accel-
erated motion in the times t and t_1 with the final ve-
locity v.   Therefore,

$$AB = \frac{v}{2}t \text{ and } AC = \frac{v}{2}t_1, \frac{AB}{AC} = \frac{t}{t_1}.$$

If the accelerations along the height and the length be called respectively g and g_1, we also have

$$v = g t \text{ and } v = g_1 t_1, \text{ whence } \frac{g_1}{g} = \frac{t}{t_1} = \frac{AB}{AC} = \sin \alpha.$$

In this way we are able to deduce from the acceleration on an inclined plane the acceleration of free descent.

A corollary of the preceding law. From this proposition Galileo deduces several corollaries, some of which have passed into our elementary text-books. The accelerations along the height and length are in the inverse proportion of the height and length. If now we cause one body to fall along the length of an inclined plane and simultaneously another to fall freely along its height, and ask what the distances are that are traversed by the two in equal intervals of time, the solution of the problem will be readily found (Fig. 90) by simply letting fall from B a perpendicular on the length. The part AD, thus cut off, will be the distance traversed by the one body on the inclined plane, while the second body is freely falling through the height of the plane.
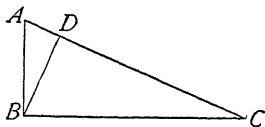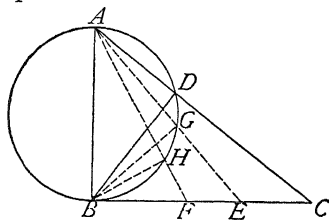
Fig. 90.　　　　Fig. 91.

Relative times of description of the chords and diameters of circles. If we describe (Fig. 91) a circle on AB as diameter, the circle will pass through D, because D is a right angle. It will be seen thus, that we can imagine any number of inclined planes, AE, AF, of any degree of inclination, passing through A, and that in every

case the chords *A G*, *A H* drawn in this circle from the
upper extremity of the diameter will be traversed in
the same time by a falling body as the vertical diame-
ter itself.   Since, obviously, only the lengths and in-
clinations are essential here, we may also draw the
chords in question from the lower extremity of the
diameter, and say generally : The vertical diameter
of a circle is described by a falling particle in the same
time that any chord through either extremity is so
described.

We shall present another corollary, which, in the
pretty form in which Galileo gave it, is usually no
longer incorporated in elementary expositions.   We
imagine gutters radiating in a vertical plane from a

The figure
formed by
bodies fall-
ing in the
chords of
circles.

common point *A* at a
number of different
degrees of inclination
to the horizon (Fig.
92). We place at their
common extremity *A*
a like number of heavy
bodies and cause them
to begin simultaneous-
ly their motion of des-
cent. The bodies will
always form at any one

Fig. 92.
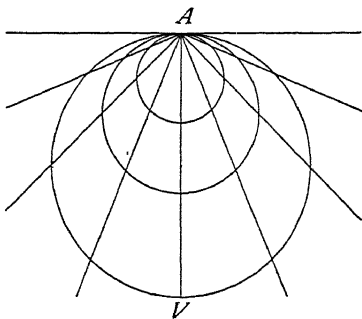
instant of time a circle. After the lapse of a longer time
they will be found in a circle of larger radius, and the
radii increase proportionally to the squares of the
times.   If we imagine the gutters to radiate in a space
instead of a plane, the falling bodies will always form
a sphere, and the radii of the spheres will increase pro-
portionally to the squares of the times.   This will be

perceived by imagining the figure revolved about the vertical *A V.*

8. We see thus,—as deserves again to be briefly noticed,—that Galileo did not supply us with a *theory* of the falling of bodies, but investigated and established, wholly without preformed opinions, the *actual facts* of falling.

Gradually *adapting*, on this occasion, his thoughts to the facts, and everywhere logically abiding by the ideas he had reached, he hit on a conception, which to himself, perhaps less than to his successors, appeared in the light of a new law. In all his reasonings, Galileo followed, to the greatest advantage of science, a principle which might appropriately be called the *principle* *of continuity.* Once we have reached a theory that applies to a particular case, we proceed gradually to modify in thought the conditions of that case, as far as it is at all possible, and endeavor in so doing to adhere throughout as closely as we can to the conception originally reached. There is no method of procedure more surely calculated to lead to that comprehension of all natural phenomena which is the *simplest* and also attainable with the least expenditure of mentality and feeling. (Compare Appendix, IX., p. 523.)

A particular instance will show more clearly than any general remarks what we mean. Galileo con-
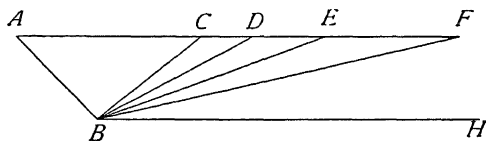
Fig. 93.

siders (Fig. 93) a body which is falling down the inclined plane *AB*, and which, being placed with the

velocity thus acquired on a second plane *BC*, for ex-
ample, ascends this second plane. On all planes *BC*,
BD, and so forth, it ascends to the horizontal plane
that passes through *A*. But, just as it falls on *BD*
with less *acceleration* than it does on *BC*, so similarly
it will ascend on *BD* with less *retardation* than it will
on *BC*. The nearer the planes *BC*, *BD*, *BE*, *BF* ap-
proach to the horizontal plane *BH*, the less will the
retardation of the body on those planes be, and the
longer and further will it move on them. On the hori-
zontal plane *BH* the retardation vanishes *entirely* (that
is, of course, neglecting friction and the resistance of
the air), and the body will continue to move infinitely
long and infinitely far with *constant* velocity. Thus ad-
vancing to the limiting case of the problem presented,
Galileo discovers the so-called law of inertia, according
to which a body not under the influence of forces, i. e.
of special circumstances that change motion, will re-
tain forever its velocity (and direction). We shall
presently revert to this subject.

9. The motion of falling that Galileo found actually
to exist, is, accordingly, a motion of which the velocity
increases proportionally to the time—a so-called uni-
formly accelerated motion.

It would be an anachronism and utterly unhistorical
to attempt, as is sometimes done, to derive the uniformly
accelerated motion of falling bodies from the constant
action of the force of gravity. "Gravity is a constant
force; *consequently* it generates in equal elements of
time equal increments of velocity; thus, the motion
produced is uniformly accelerated." Any exposition
such as this would be unhistorical, and would put the
whole discovery in a false light, for the reason that the
notion of force as we hold it to-day was first created

Forces and
accelera-
tions.
by Galileo.   Before Galileo *force* was known solely as *pressure.*   Now, no one can know, who has not learned it from experience, that generally pressure produces motion, much less *in what manner* pressure passes into motion ; that not position, nor velocity, but acceleration, is determined by it.   This cannot be philosophically deduced from the conception, itself. Conjectures may be set up concerning it. But experience alone can definitively inform us with regard to it.

10. It is not by any means self-evident, therefore, that the circumstances which determine motion, that is, forces, immediately produce accelerations. A glance at other departments of physics will at once make this clear.   The differences of temperature of bodies also determine alterations. However, by differences of temperature not compensatory *accelerations* are determined, but compensatory *velocities.*

The fact
that forces
determine
accelera-
tions is an
experimen-
tal fact.
That it is *accelerations* which are the immediate effects of the circumstances that determine motion, that is, of the forces, is a fact which Galileo *perceived* in the natural phenomena.   Others before him had also perceived many things. The assertion that everything seeks its place also involves a correct observation. The observation, however, does not hold good in all cases, and it is not exhaustive.   If we cast a stone into the air, for example, it no longer seeks its place ; since its place is below. But the acceleration towards the earth, the retardation of the upward motion, the fact that Galileo perceived, is still present. His observation always remains correct ; it holds true more generally ; it embraces in *one* mental effort *much more.*

11. We have already remarked that Galileo discovered the so-called law of inertia quite incidentally. A body on which, as we are wont to say, no force acts,

preserves its direction and velocity unaltered.   The History of
fortunes of this law of inertia have been strange.   It called law
appears never to have played a prominent part in Gali- of inertia.
leo's thought.   But Galileo's successors, particularly
Huygens and Newton, formulated it as an independent
law.   Nay, some have even made of inertia a general
property of matter.   We shall readily perceive, how-
ever, that the law of inertia is not at all an indepen-
dent law, but is contained implicitly in Galileo's per-
ception that all circumstances determinative of motion,
or forces, produce *accelerations*.

In fact, if a force determine, not position, not velo- The law a
city, but acceleration, *change* of velocity, it stands to ference
reason that where there is no force there will be no leo's funda-
change of velocity.   It is not necessary to enunciate servation.
this in independent form.   The embarrassment of the
neophyte, which also overcame the great investigators
in the face of the great mass of new material presented,
alone could have led them to conceive the *same* fact as
two different facts and to formulate it twice.

In any event, to represent inertia as self-evident, or Erroneous
to derive it from the general proposition that "the ef- deducing it.
fect of a cause persists," is totally wrong.   Only a
mistaken straining after rigid logic can lead us so out
of the way.   Nothing is to be accomplished in the pres-
ent domain with scholastic propositions like the one
just cited.   We may easily convince ourselves that the
contrary proposition, "cessante causa cessat effectus,"
is as well supported by reason.   If we call the acquired
velocity "the effect," then the first proposition is cor-
rect ; if we call the acceleration "effect," then the sec-
ond proposition holds.

12. We shall now examine Galileo's researches from
another side.   He began his investigations with the

notions familiar to his time—notions developed mainly
in the practical arts.　One notion of this kind was that
of velocity, which is very readily obtained from the con-
sideration of a uniform motion.　If a body traverse in
every second of time the same distance c, the distance
traversed at the end of t seconds will be $s = ct$.　The
distance c traversed in a second of time we call the ve-
locity, and obtain it from the examination of any por-
tion of the distance and the corresponding time by the
help of the equation $c = s/t$, that is, by dividing the
number which is the measure of the distance traversed
by the number which is the measure of the time elapsed.

Now, Galileo could not complete his investigations
without tacitly modifying and extending the traditional
idea of velocity.　Let us represent for distinctness sake
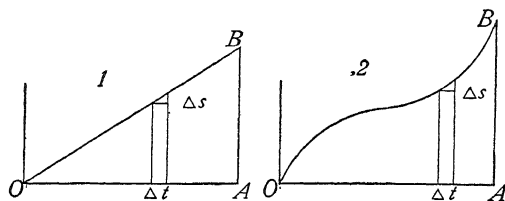
Fig. 94.

in 1 (Fig. 94) a uniform motion, in 2 a variable motion,
by laying off as abscissæ in the direction OA the elapsed
times, and erecting as ordinates in the direction AB the
distances traversed.　Now, in 1, whatever increment
of the distance we may divide by the corresponding in-
crement of the time, in all cases we obtain for the ve-
locity c the *same* value.　But if we were thus to proceed
in 2, we should obtain widely differing values, and
therefore the word "velocity" as ordinarily understood,
ceases in this case to be unequivocal. If, however, we
consider the increase of the distance in a sufficiently

small element of time, where the element of the curve
in 2 approaches to a straight line, we may regard the
increase as uniform. The velocity in this element of
the motion we may then define as the quotient, $\varDelta s / \varDelta t$,
of the element of the time into the corresponding ele-
ment of the distance. Still more precisely, the velocity
at any instant is defined as the limiting value which
the ratio $\varDelta s / \varDelta t$ assumes as the elements become in-
finitely small—a value designated by ds/dt. This new
notion includes the old one as a particular case, and is,
moreover, immediately applicable to uniform motion.
Although the express formulation of this idea, as thus
extended, did not take place till long after Galileo, we
see none the less that he made use of it in his reason-
ings.

13. An entirely new notion to which Galileo was
led is the idea of *acceleration.* In uniformly acceler-
ated motion the velocities increase with the time
agreeably to the same law as in uniform motion the
spaces increase with the times. If we call v the velo-
city acquired in time t, then $v = gt$. Here g denotes
the increment of the velocity in unit of time or the ac-
celeration, which we also obtain from the equation
$g = v/t$. When the investigation of variably accel-
erated motions was begun, this notion of accelera-
tion had to experience an extension similar to that of
the notion of velocity. If in 1 and 2 the times be again
drawn as abscissæ, but now the *velocities* as ordinates,
we may go through anew the whole train of the pre-
ceding reasoning and define the acceleration as dv/dt,
where dv denotes an infinitely small increment of the
velocity and dt the corresponding increment of the
time. In the notation of the differential calculus we

have for the acceleration of a *rectilinear* motion, $\varphi = dv/dt = d^2 s/dt^2$.

The ideas here developed are susceptible, moreover, of graphic representation. If we lay off the times as abscissæ and the distances as ordinates, we shall perceive, that the velocity at each instant is measured by the slope of the curve of the distance. If in a similar manner we put times and velocities together, we shall see that the acceleration of the instant is measured by the slope of the curve of the velocity. The course of the latter slope is, indeed, also capable of being traced in the curve of distances, as will be perceived from the following considerations. Let us imagine, in the
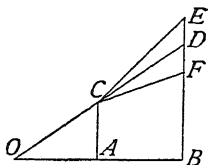
Fig. 95.   Fig. 96.
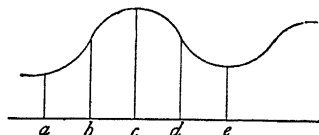
usual manner (Fig. 95), a uniform motion represented by a straight line OCD. Let us compare with this a motion OCE the velocity of which in the second half of the time is greater, and another motion OCF of which the velocity is in the same proportion smaller. In the first case, accordingly, we shall have to erect for the time $OB = 2\ OA$, an ordinate greater than $BD = 2\ AC$; in the second case, an ordinate less than BD. We see thus, without difficulty, that a curve of distance convex to the axis of the time-abscissæ corresponds to accelerated motion, and a curve concave thereto to retarded motion. If we imagine a lead-pencil to perform a vertical motion of any kind and in

front of it during its motion a piece of paper to be uni-
formly drawn along from right to left and the pencil to
thus execute the drawing in Fig. 96, we shall be able to
read off from the drawing the peculiarities of the mo-
tion.   At *a* the velocity of the pencil was directed up-
wards, at *b* it was greater, at *c* it was $= 0$, at *d* it was
directed downwards, at *e* it was again $= 0$.   At *a*, *b*,
d, *e*, the acceleration was directed upwards, at *c* down-
wards ; at *c* and *e* it was greatest.

14. The summary representation of what Galileo
discovered is best made by a table of times, acquired

t .	v .	s .
1	g	$1\dfrac{g}{2}$
2	$2g$	$4\dfrac{g}{2}$
3	$3g$	$9\dfrac{g}{2}$
$\cdot\;\cdot\;\cdot\;\cdot\;\cdot\;\cdot\;\cdot\;\cdot\;\cdot\;\cdot$		
t	tg	$t^2\dfrac{g}{2}$

velocities, and traversed distances.   But the numbers
follow so simple a law,—one immediately recognisable,
—that there is nothing to prevent our replacing the
table by a *rule for its construction*.   If we examine the
relation that connects the first and second columns, we
shall find that it is expressed by the equation $v = gt$,
which, in its last analysis, is nothing but an abbrevi-
ated direction for constructing the first two columns
of the table.   The relation connecting the first and third
columns is given by the equation $s = g\,t^2/2$.   The con-
nection of the second and third columns is represented
by $s = v^2/2g$.

Of the three relations

$$v = gt$$

$$s = \frac{gt^2}{2}$$

$$s = \frac{v^2}{2g},$$

strictly, the first two only were employed by Galileo. Huygens was the first who evinced a higher appreciation of the third, and laid, in thus doing, the foundations of important advances.

15. We may add a remark in connection with this table that is very valuable. It has been stated previously that a body, by virtue of the velocity it has acquired in its fall, is able to rise again to its original height, in doing which its velocity diminishes in the same way (with respect to time and space) as it increased in falling. Now a freely falling body acquires in double time of descent double velocity, but falls in this double time through four times the simple distance. A body, therefore, to which we impart a vertically upward double velocity will ascend twice as long a time, but *four times* as high as a body to which the simple velocity has been imparted.

It was remarked, very soon after Galileo, that there is inherent in the velocity of a body a something that corresponds to a force—a something, that is, by which a force can be overcome, a certain "efficacy," as it has been aptly termed. The only point that was debated was, whether this efficacy was to be reckoned proportional to the *velocity* or to the *square of the velocity*. The Cartesians held the former, the Leibnitzians the latter. But it will be perceived that the question involves no dispute whatever. The body with the double velocity overcomes a given force through double the

time, but through *four times* the distance. With respect to time, therefore, its efficacy is proportional to the velocity; with respect to distance, to the square of the velocity. D'Alembert drew attention to this misunderstanding, although in not very distinct terms. It is to be especially remarked, however, that Huygens's thoughts on this question were perfectly clear.

16. The experimental procedure by which, at the present day, the laws of falling bodies are verified, is somewhat different from that of Galileo. Two methods may be employed. Either the motion of falling, which from its rapidity is difficult to observe directly, is so retarded, without altering the law, as to be easily observed; or the motion of falling is not altered at all, but our means of observation are improved in delicacy. On the first principle Galileo's inclined gutter and Atwood's machine rest. Atwood's machine consists (Fig. 97) of an easily running pulley, over which is thrown a thread, to whose extremities two equal weights P are attached. If upon one of the weights P we lay a third small weight p, a uniformly accelerated motion will be set up by the added weight, having the acceleration $(p/\overline{2\,P + p})\,g$—a result that will be readily obtained when we shall have discussed the notion of "mass." Now by means of a graduated vertical standard connected with the pulley it may easily be shown that in the times 1, 2, 3, 4 .... the distances 1, 4, 9, 16 .... are traversed. The final velocity corresponding to any given time of descent is investigated by catching the small additional weight, p, which is shaped so as to project beyond the outline of P, in a ring through which the falling body passes, after which the motion continues without acceleration.

The present experimental means of verifying the laws of falling bodies.
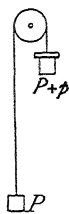
Fig. 97.

The appa-
ratus of
Morin, La-
borde, Lip-
pich, and
Von Babo.
         The apparatus of Morin is based on a different prin-
ciple.   A body to which a writing pencil is attached
describes on a vertical sheet of paper, which is drawn
uniformly across it by a clock-work, a horizontal straight
line. If the body fall while the paper is not in motion,
it will describe a vertical straight line. If the two
motions are combined, a parabola will be produced,
of which the horizontal abscissæ correspond to the
elapsed times and the vertical ordinates to the dis-
tances of descent described.   For the abscissæ 1, 2,
3, 4 . . . . we obtain the ordinates 1, 4, 9, 16 . . . .   By
an unessential modification, Morin employed instead of
a plane sheet of paper, a rapidly rotating cylindrical
drum with vertical axis, by the side of which the body
fell down a guiding wire. A different apparatus, based
on the same principle, was invented, independently, by
Laborde, Lippich, and Von Babo.   A lampblacked
sheet of glass (Fig. 98*a*) falls freely, while a horizon-
tally vibrating vertical rod, which in its first transit
through the position of equilibrium starts the motion
of descent, traces, by means of a quill, a curve on the
lampblacked surface.   Owing to the constancy of the
period of vibration of the rod combined with the in-
creasing velocity of the descent, the undulations traced
by the rod become longer and longer.   Thus (Fig. 98)
$bc = 3ab$, $cd = 5ab$, $de = 7ab$, and so forth.   The
law of falling bodies is clearly exhibited by this, since
$ab + cb = 4ab$, $ab + bc + cd = 9ab$, and so forth.
The law of the velocity is confirmed by the inclinations
of the tangents at the points *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, and so forth. If
the time of oscillation of the rod be known, the value
of *g* is determinable from an experiment of this kind
with considerable exactness.

         Wheatstone employed for the measurement of mi-

nute portions of time a rapidly operating clock-work
called a chronoscope, which is set in motion at the be-
ginning of the time to be measured and stopped at the
termination of it. Hipp has advantageously modified
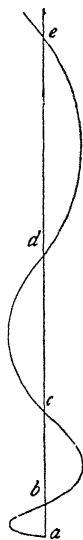
Fig. 98.
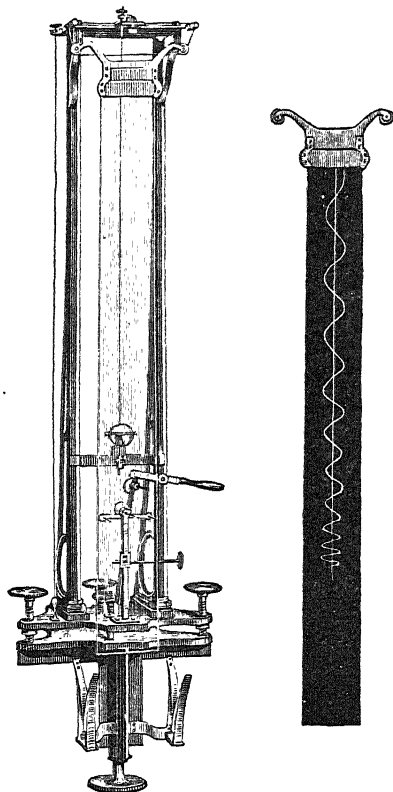
Fig. 98a.

this method by simply causing a light index-hand to
be thrown by means of a clutch in and out of gear with
a rapidly moving wheel-work regulated by a vibrating
reed of steel tuned to a high note, and acting as an es-

capement. The throwing in and out of gear is effected
by an electric current. Now if, as soon as the body be-
gins to fall, the current be interrupted, that is the hand
thrown into gear, and as soon as the body strikes the
platform below the current is closed, that is the hand
thrown out of gear, we can read by the distance the
index-hand has travelled the time of descent.

Galileo's
minor in-
vestiga-
tions.   17. Among the further achievements of Galileo we
have yet to mention his ideas concerning the motion
of the pendulum, and his refutation of the view that
bodies of greater weight fall faster than bodies of less
weight. We shall revert to both of these points on an-
other occasion.   It may be stated here, however, that
Galileo, on discovering the constancy of the period of
pendulum-oscillations, at once applied the pendulum
to pulse-measurements at the sick-bed, as well as pro-
posed its use in astronomical observations and to a cer-
tain extent employed it therein himself.

The motion
of projec-
tiles.   18. Of still greater importance are his investiga-
tions concerning the motion of projectiles. A free body,
according to Galileo's view, constantly experiences a
vertical acceleration g towards the earth.   If at the
beginning of its motion it is affected with a vertical
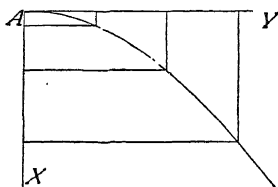
Fig 99.

velocity c, its velocity at the
end of the time t will be $v =
c + g t$. An initial velocity up-
wards would have to be reck-
oned negative here. The dis-
tance described at the end of
time t is represented by the
equation $s = a + c t + \frac{1}{2} g t^2$, where $c t$ and $\frac{1}{2} g t^2$ are the
portions of the traversed distance that correspond re-
spectively to the uniform and the uniformly accelerated
motion. The constant a is to be put $= 0$ when we reckon

the distance from the point that the body passes at time $t = 0$. When Galileo had once reached his fundamental conception of dynamics, he easily recognised the case of horizontal projection as a combination of two *independent* motions, a horizontal uniform motion, and a vertical uniformly accelerated motion. He thus introduced into use the principle of the *parallelogram of motions*. Even oblique projection no longer presented the slightest difficulty.

If a body receives a horizontal velocity c, it describes in the horizontal direction in time t the distance $y = c\,t$, while simultaneously it falls in a vertical direction the distance $x = g\,t^2/2$. Different motion-determinative circumstances exercise no mutual effect on one another, and the motions determined by them take place *independently of each other*. Galileo was led to this assumption by the attentive observation of the phenomena; and the assumption proved itself true. The curve of projection a parabola.

For the curve which a body describes when the two motions in question are compounded, we find, by employing the two equations above given, the expression $y = \sqrt{(2\,c^2/g)\,x}$. It is the parabola of Apollonius having its parameter equal to c^2/g and its axis vertical, as Galileo knew.

We readily perceive with Galileo, that *oblique* projection involves nothing new. The velocity c imparted to a body at the angle α with the horizon is resolvable into the horizontal component $c \cdot \cos \alpha$ and the vertical component $c \cdot \sin \alpha$. With the latter velocity the body ascends during the same interval of time t which it would take to acquire this velocity in falling vertically downwards. Therefore, $c \cdot \sin \alpha = g\,t$. When it has reached its greatest height the vertical component of its initial velocity has vanished, and from the point S Oblique projection

onward (Fig. 100) it continues its motion as a horizontal projection. If we examine any two epochs equally distant in time, before and after the transit through S,
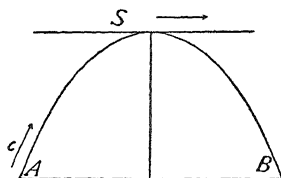
Fig. 100.

we shall see that the body at these two epochs is equally distant from the perpendicular through S and situated the same distance below the horizontal line through S. The curve is therefore symmetrical with respect to the vertical line through S. It is a parabola with vertical axis and the parameter $(c \cos \alpha)^2 / g$.

The range of projection. To find the so-called range of projection, we have simply to consider the horizontal motion during the time of the rising and falling of the body. For the ascent this time is, according to the equations above given, $t = c \sin \alpha / g$, and the same for the descent. With the horizontal velocity $c \cdot \cos \alpha$, therefore, the distance is traversed

$$w = c \cos \alpha \cdot 2 \, \frac{c \sin \alpha}{g} = \frac{c^2}{g} \, 2 \sin \alpha \cos \alpha = \frac{c^2}{g} \sin 2 \, \alpha.$$

The range of projection is greatest accordingly when $\alpha = 45°$, and equally great for any two angles $\alpha = 45° \pm \beta°$.

The mutual independence of forces. 19. The recognition of the mutual *independence* of the forces, or motion-determinative circumstances occurring in nature, which was reached and found expression in the investigations relating to projection, is important. A body may move (Fig. 101) in the direction AB, while the space in which this motion occurs is displaced in the direction AC. The body then

Fig. 101.

goes from A to D. Now, this also happens if the two circumstances that simultaneously determine the motions AB and AC, have no influence on one another. It is easy to see that we may compound by the parallelogram not only displacements that have taken place but also velocities and accelerations that simultaneously take place. (See Appendix, X., p. 525.)

<div align="center">II.</div>

THE ACHIEVEMENTS OF HUYGENS.

1. The next in succession of the great mechanical inquirers is HUYGENS, who in every respect must be ranked as Galileo's peer. If, perhaps, his philosophical endowments were less splendid than those of Galileo, this deficiency was compensated for by the superiority of his geometrical powers. Huygens not only continued the researches which Galileo had begun, but he also solved the first problems in the *dynamics of several masses*, whereas Galileo had throughout restricted himself to the dynamics of a *single* body. Huygens's high rank as an inquirer.

The plenitude of Huygens's achievements is best seen in his *Horologium Oscillatorium*, which appeared in 1673. The most important subjects there treated of for the first time, are : the theory of the centre of oscillation, the invention and construction of the pendulum-clock, the invention of the escapement, the determination of the acceleration of gravity, g, by pendulum-observations, a proposition regarding the employment of the length of the seconds pendulum as the unit of length, the theorems respecting centrifugal force, the mechanical and geometrical properties of cycloids, the doctrine of evolutes, and the theory of the circle of curvature. Enumeration of Huygens's achievements.

2. With respect to the form of presentation of his work, it is to be remarked that Huygens shares with

CHRISTIANUS HUGENIUS
natus 14 Aprilis 1629.
denatus 8 Junii 1695.

Galileo, in all its perfection, the latter's exalted and inimitable candor.   He is frank without reserve in the presentment of the methods that led him to his dis-

coveries, and thus always conducts his reader into the full comprehension of his performances. Nor had he cause to conceal these methods. If, a thousand years from now, it shall be found that he was a man, it will likewise be seen what manner of man he was. In our discussion of the achievements of Huygens, however, we shall have to proceed in a somewhat different manner from that which we pursued in the case of Galileo. Galileo's views, in their classical simplicity, could be given in an almost unmodified form. With Huygens this is not possible. The latter deals with more complicated problems; his mathematical methods and notations become inadequate and cumbrous. For reasons of brevity, therefore, we shall reproduce all the conceptions of which we treat, in modern form, retaining, however, Huygens's essential and characteristic ideas.
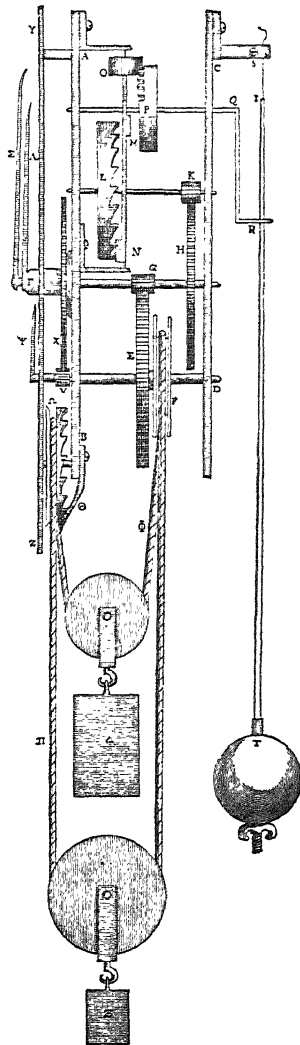
Huygens's Pendulum Clock.

3. We begin with the investigations concerning centrifugal force. When once we have recognised with Galileo that force determines acceleration, we are impelled, unavoidably, to ascribe every *change* of velocity and consequently also every change in the *direction* of a motion (since the direction is determined by three velocity-components perpendicular to one another) to a force. If, therefore, any body attached to a string, say a stone, is swung uniformly round in a circle, the curvilinear motion which it performs is intelligible only on the supposition of a constant force that deflects the body from the rectilinear path. The tension of the string is this force; by it the body is constantly deflected from the rectilinear path and made to move towards the centre of the circle. This tension, accordingly, represents a centripetal force. On the other hand, the axis also, or the fixed centre, is acted on by the tension of the string, and in this aspect the tension of the string appears as a centrifugal force.
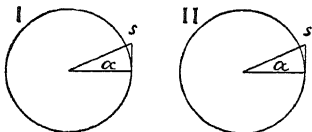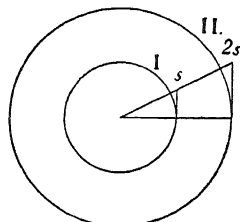
Fig. 102.   Fig. 103.

Let us suppose that we have a body to which a velocity has been imparted and which is maintained in uniform motion in a circle by an acceleration constantly directed towards the centre. The conditions on which this acceleration depends, it is our purpose to investigate. We imagine (Fig. 102) two equal circles uni-

formly travelled round by two bodies; the velocities in Uniform motion in equal circles.
the circles I and II bear to each other the proportion
$1 : 2$. If in the two circles we consider any same arc-
element corresponding to some very small angle α, then
the corresponding element s of the distance that the
bodies in consequence of the centripetal acceleration
have departed from the rectilinear path (the tangent),
will also be the same. If we call φ_1 and φ_2 the re-
spective accelerations, and τ and $\tau/2$ the time-elements
for the angle α, we find by Galileo's law

$$\varphi_1 = \frac{2s}{\tau^2}, \ \varphi_2 = 4\frac{2s}{\tau^2}, \text{ that is to say } \varphi_2 = 4\varphi_1.$$

Therefore, by generalisation, in equal circles the
centripetal acceleration is proportional to the square of
the velocity of the motion.

Let us now consider the motion in the circles I and Uniform motion in unequal circles.
II (Fig. 103), the radii of which are to each other as
$1 : 2$, and let us take for the ratio of the velocities of
the motions also $1 : 2$, so that like arc-elements are
travelled through in equal times. φ_1, φ_2, s, $2s$ denote
the accelerations and the elements of the distance trav-
ersed; τ is the element of the time, equal for both
cases. Then

$$\varphi_1 = \frac{2s}{\tau^2}, \ \varphi_2 = \frac{4s}{\tau^2}, \text{ that is to say } \varphi_2 = 2\varphi_1.$$

If now we reduce the velocity of the motion in II
one-half, so that the velocities in I and II become
equal, φ_2 will thereby be reduced one-fourth, that is
to say to $\varphi_1/2$. Generalising, we get this rule: when
the velocity of the circular motion is the *same*, the cen-
tripetal acceleration is inversely proportional to the
radius of the circle described.

4. The early investigators, owing to their following

the conceptions of the ancients, generally obtained their
propositions in the cumbersome form of proportions.
We shall pursue a different method.   On a movable
object having the velocity v let a force act during the
element of time τ which imparts to the object perpen-
dicularly to the direction of its motion the acceleration
φ.   The new velocity-component thus becomes $\varphi\tau$,
and its composition with the first velocity produces a
new direction of the motion, making the angle α with
the original direction.   From this results, by conceiving
the motion to take place in a circle of radius r, and on
account of the *smallness of the angular element* putting
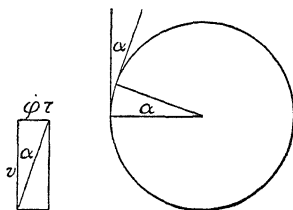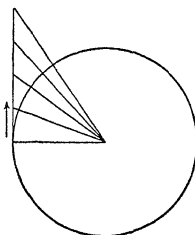
Fig. 104.   Fig. 105.

$\tan \alpha = \alpha$, the following, as the complete expression
for the centripetal acceleration of a uniform motion in
a circle,

$$\frac{\varphi\tau}{v} = \tan \alpha = \alpha = \frac{v\tau}{r} \text{ or } \varphi = \frac{v^2}{r}.$$

The idea of uniform motion in a circle conditioned
by a constant centripetal acceleration is a little para-
doxical.   The paradox lies in the assumption of a con-
stant acceleration towards the centre without actual
approach thereto and without increase of velocity.   This
is lessened when we reflect that without this centripetal
acceleration the body would be continually moving
away from the centre; that the direction of the accel-

eration is constantly changing; and that a change of velocity (as will appear in the discussion of the principle of *vis viva*) is connected with an approach of the bodies that accelerate each other, which does not take place here. The more complex case of elliptical central motion is elucidative in this direction. (See p. 527.)

5. The expression for the centripetal or centrifugal acceleration, $\varphi = v^2/r$, can easily be put in a somewhat different form. If T denote the periodic time of the circular motion, the time occupied in describing the circumference, then $v T = 2 r \pi$, and consequently $\varphi = 4 r \pi^2/T^2$, in which form we shall employ the expression later on. If several bodies moving in circles have the same periodic times, the respective centripetal accelerations by which they are held in their paths, as is apparent from the last expression, are proportional to the radii.

A different expression of the law.

6. We shall take it for granted that the reader is familiar with the phenomena that illustrate the considerations here presented : as the rupture of strings of insufficient strength on which bodies are whirled about, the flattening of soft rotating spheres, and so on. Huygens was able, by the aid of his conception, to explain at once whole series of phenomena. When a pendulum-clock, for example, which had been taken from Paris to Cayenne by Richer (1671–1673), showed a retardation of its motion, Huygens deduced the apparent diminution of the acceleration of gravity g thus established, from the greater centrifugal acceleration of the rotating earth at the equator ; an explanation that at once rendered the observation intelligible.

Some phenomena which the law explains.

An experiment instituted by Huygens may here be noticed, on account of its historical interest. When Newton brought out his theory of universal gravitation,

Huygens belonged to the great number of those who
were unable to reconcile themselves to the idea of action
at a distance.   He was of the opinion that gravitation
could be explained by a vortical medium. If we enclose
in a vessel filled with a liquid a number of lighter bod-
ies, say wooden balls in water, and set the vessel ro-
tating about its axis, the balls will at once rapidly move
towards the axis.   If for instance (Fig. 106), we place
the glass cylinders RR containing the wooden balls KK
by means of a pivot Z on a rotatory apparatus, and ro-
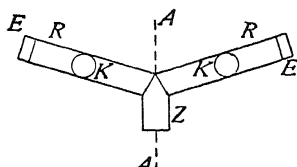
Fig. 106.

tate the latter about its ver-
tical axis, the balls will im-
mediately run up the cyl-
inders in the direction away
from the axis.   But if the
tubes be filled with water,
each rotation will force the
balls floating at the extremities EE towards the axis.
The phenomenon is easily explicable by analogy with
the principle of Archimedes. The wooden balls receive
a centripetal impulsion, comparable to buoyancy,
which is equal and opposite to the centrifugal force
acting on the displaced liquid. (See p. 528.)

7. Before we proceed to Huygens's investigations
on the centre of oscillation, we shall present to the
reader a few considerations concerning pendulous and
oscillatory motion generally, which will make up in ob-
viousness for what they lack in rigor.

Many of the properties of pendulum motion were
known to GALILEO.   That he had formed the concep-
tion which we shall now give, or that at least he was
on the verge of so doing, may be inferred from many
scattered allusions to the subject in his *Dialogues.* The
bob of a simple pendulum of length l moves in a circle

(Fig. 107) of radius *l*. If we give the pendulum a very small excursion, it will travel in its oscillations over a very small arc which coincides approximately with the

chord belonging to it. But this chord is described by a falling particle, moving on it as on an inclined plane (see Sect. 1 of this Chapter, § 7), in the same time as the vertical diameter $BD =$ $2\,l$. If the time of descent be called t, we shall have $2\,l =$ $\frac{1}{2}gt^2$, that is $t = 2\sqrt{l/g}$. But since the continued movement

Fig. 107.

from B up the line BC' occupies an equal interval of time, we have to put for the time T of an oscillation from C to C', $T = 4\sqrt{l/g}$. It will be seen that even from so crude a conception as this the correct *form* of the pendulum-laws is obtainable. The exact expression for the time of very small oscillations is, as we know, $T = \pi\sqrt{l/g}$.
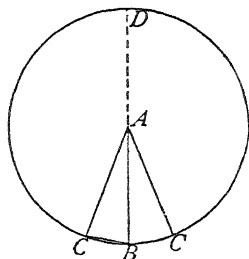
Again, the motion of a pendulum bob may be viewed as a motion of descent on a succession of inclined planes. If the string of the pendulum makes the angle α with the perpendicular, the pendulum bob receives in the direction of the position of equilibrium the acceleration $g \cdot \sin \alpha$. When α is small, $g \cdot \alpha$ is the expression of this acceleration; in other words, the acceleration is always proportional and oppositely directed to the excursion. When the excursions are small the curvature of the path may be neglected.

8. From these preliminaries, we may proceed to the study of oscillatory motion in a simpler manner. A body is free to move on a straight line OA (Fig. 108), and constantly receives in the direction towards the

point O an acceleration proportional to its distance from O. We will represent these accelerations by ordinates erected at the positions considered. Ordinates upwards denote accelerations towards the left; ordinates down- wards represent accel-

Fig. 108.

erations towards the right. The body, left to itself at A, will move towards O with varied acceleration, pass through O to A_1, where $OA_1 = OA$, come back to O, and so again continue its motion. It is in the
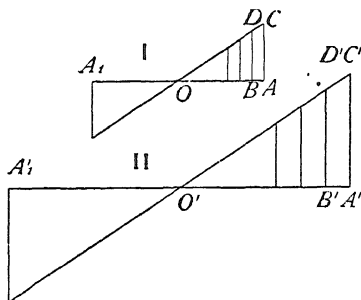
first place easily demonstrable that the period of os- cillation (the time of the motion through AOA_1) is in- dependent of the amplitude of the oscillation (the dis- tance OA). To show this, let us imagine in I and II the same oscillation performed, with single and double amplitudes of oscillation. As the acceleration varies from point to point, we must divide OA and $O'A' = 2OA$ into a very large equal number of ele- ments. Each element $A'B'$ of $O'A'$ is then twice as large as the corresponding element AB of OA. The initial accelerations φ and φ' stand in the relation $\varphi' = 2\varphi$. Accordingly, the elements AB and $A'B' = 2AB$ are described with their respective accelerations φ and 2φ in the same time τ. The final velocities v and v' in I and II, for the first element, will be $v = \varphi\tau$ and $v' = 2\varphi\tau$, that is $v' = 2v$. The accelerations and the initial velocities at B and B' are therefore again as $1:2$. Accordingly, the corresponding elements that next succeed will be described in the same time. And

of every succeeding pair of elements the same asser-
tion also holds true. Therefore, generalising, it will
be readily perceived that the period of oscillation is
independent of its amplitude or breadth.

Next, let us conceive two oscillatory motions, I and
II, that have equal excursions (Fig. 109); but in II let
a fourfold acceleration correspond to the same distance
from *O*. We divide the amplitudes of
the oscillations AO and $O'A' = OA$
into a very large equal number of
parts. These parts are then equal in
I and II. The initial accelerations at
A and *A'* are φ and 4φ; the ele-
ments of the distance described are
$AB = A'B' = s$; and the times are
respectively τ and τ'. We obtain, then,
$\tau = \sqrt{2s/\varphi},\ \tau' = \sqrt{2s/4\varphi} = \tau/2$.
The element $A'B'$ is accordingly trav-
elled through in one-half the time
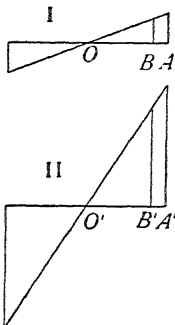
Fig. 109.

the element AB is. The final velocities v and v' at
B and *B'* are found by the equations $v = \varphi\tau$ and
$v' = 4\varphi(\tau/2) = 2v$. Since, therefore, the initial velo-
cities at *B* and *B'* are to one another as $1:2$, and the
accelerations are again as $1:4$, the element of II suc-
ceeding the first will again be traversed in half the
time of the corresponding one in I. Generalising, we
get: For equal excursions the time of oscillation is in-
versely proportional to the square root of the accelera-
tions.

9. The considerations last presented may be put in
a very much abbreviated and very obvious form by a
method of conception first employed by Newton. New-
ton calls those material systems *similar* that have geo-
metrically similar configurations and whose homolo-

gous masses bear to one another the same ratio. He
says further that systems of this kind execute similar
movements when the homologous points describe simi-
lar paths in proportional times. Conformably to the
geometrical terminology of the present day we should
not be permitted to call mechanical structures of this
kind (of five dimensions) *similar* unless their homolo-
gous linear dimensions as well as the times and the
masses bore to one another the *same* ratio. The struc-
tures might more appropriately be termed *affined* to
one another.

We shall retain, however, the name phoronomically
similar structures, and in the consideration that is to
follow leave entirely out of account the masses.

In two such similar motions, then, let

the homologous paths be s and αs,
the homologous times be t and βt; whence
the homologous velo-
cities are .... $v = \dfrac{s}{t}$ and $\gamma v = \dfrac{\alpha}{\beta} \dfrac{s}{t}$,
the homologous accel-
erations .... $\varphi = \dfrac{2s}{t^2}$ and $\varepsilon \varphi = \dfrac{\alpha}{\beta^2} \dfrac{2s}{t^2}$.

Now all oscillations which a body performs under
the conditions above set forth with any two different
amplitudes 1 and α, will be readily recognised as *sim-
ilar* motions. Noting that the ratio of the homologous
accelerations in this case is $\varepsilon = \alpha$, we have $\alpha = \alpha/\beta^2$.
Wherefore the ratio of the homologous times, that is
to say of the times of oscillation, is $\beta = \pm 1$. We ob-
tain thus the law, that the period of oscillation is inde-
pendent of the amplitude.

If in two oscillatory motions we put for the ratio
between the amplitudes $1 : \alpha$, and for the ratio between
the accelerations $1 : \alpha \mu$, we shall obtain for this case

$\varepsilon = \alpha \mu = \alpha/\beta^2$, and therefore $\beta = 1 \pm \sqrt{\mu}$; wherewith the second law of oscillating motion is obtained.

Two uniform circular motions are always phoronomically similar. Let the ratio of their radii be $1 : \alpha$ and the ratio of their velocities $1 : \gamma$. The ratio of their accelerations is then $\varepsilon = \alpha/\beta^2$, and since $\gamma = \alpha/\beta$, also $\varepsilon = \gamma^2/\alpha$; whence the theorems relative to centripetal acceleration are obtained.

It is a pity that investigations of this kind respecting mechanical and phoronomical *affinity* are not more extensively cultivated, since they promise the most beautiful and most elucidative extensions of insight imaginable.

10. Between uniform motion in a circle and oscillatory motion of the kind just discussed an important relation exists which we shall now consider. We assume a system of rectangular coordinates, having its origin at the centre, O, of the circle of Fig. 110, about the circumference of which we conceive a body to move uniformly. The centripetal acceleration φ which conditions this motion, we resolve in the directions

Fig. 110.

of X and Y; and observe that the X-components of the motion are affected only by the X-components of the acceleration. We may regard both the motions and both the accelerations as independent of each other.
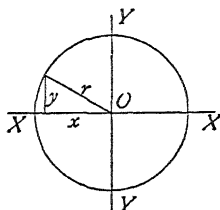
Now, the two components of the motion are oscillatory motions to and fro about O. To the excursion x the acceleration-component $\varphi(x/r)$ or $(\varphi/r)x$ in the direction O, corresponds. The acceleration is *proportional*, therefore, to the excursion. And accordingly the motion is of the kind just investigated. The

time T of a complete to and fro movement is also the periodic time of the circular motion. With respect to the latter, however, we know that $\varphi = 4\,r\,\pi^2 / T^2$, or, what is the same, that $T = 2\,\pi\,\sqrt{r/\varphi}$. Now φ/r is the acceleration for $x = 1$, the acceleration that corresponds to unit of excursion, which we shall briefly designate by f. For the oscillatory motion we may put, therefore, $T = 2\,\pi\,\sqrt{1/f}$. For a single movement to, or a single movement fro,—the common method of reckoning the time of oscillation,—we get, then, $T = \pi\,\sqrt{1/f}$.

11. Now this result is directly applicable to pendulum vibrations of *very small* excursions, where, neglecting the curvature of the path, it is possible to adhere to the conception developed. For the angle of elongation α we obtain as the distance of the pendulum bob from the position of equilibrium, $l\,\alpha$; and as the corresponding acceleration, $g\,\alpha$; whence

$$f = \frac{g\,\alpha}{l\,\alpha} = \frac{g}{l} \text{ and } T = \pi\,\sqrt{\frac{l}{g}}\,.$$

This formula tells us, that the time of vibration is directly proportional to the square root of the length of the pendulum, and inversely proportional to the square root of the acceleration of gravity. A pendulum that is four times as long as the seconds pendulum, therefore, will perform its oscillation in two seconds. A seconds pendulum removed a distance equal to the earth's radius from the surface of the earth, and subjected therefore to the acceleration $g/4$, will likewise perform its oscillation in two seconds.

12. The dependence of the time of oscillation on the length of the pendulum is very easily verifiable by experiment. If (Fig. 111) the pendulums a, b, c,

which to maintain the plane of oscillation invariable are suspended by double threads, have the lengths 1, 4, 9, then *a* will execute two oscillations to one oscillation of *b*, and three to one of *c*.

Fig. 111.
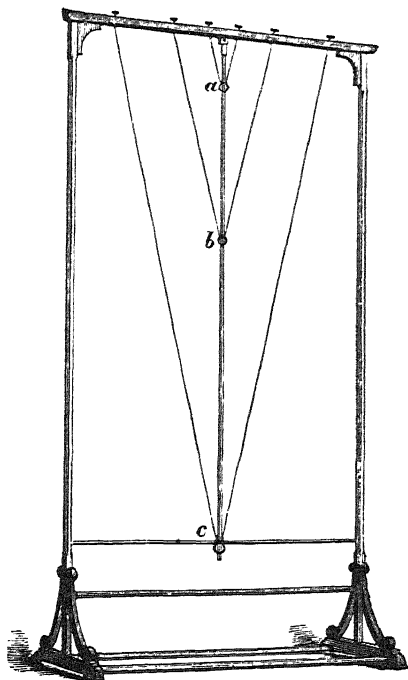
The verification of the dependence of the time of oscillation on the acceleration of gravity *g* is somewhat more difficult; since the latter cannot be arbitrarily altered. But the demonstration can be effected by allowing one component only of *g* to act on the pendulum. If we imagine the axis of oscillation of

the pendulum AA fixed in the vertically placed plane of the paper, EE will be the intersection of the plane of oscillation with the plane of the paper and likewise the position of equilibrium of the pendulum. The axis makes with the horizontal plane, and the plane of oscillation makes with the vertical plane, the angle β; wherefore the acceleration $g \cdot \cos \beta$ is the acceleration which acts in this plane.
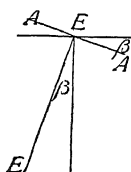
Fig. 112.

If the pendulum receive in the plane of its oscillation the small elongation α, the corresponding acceleration
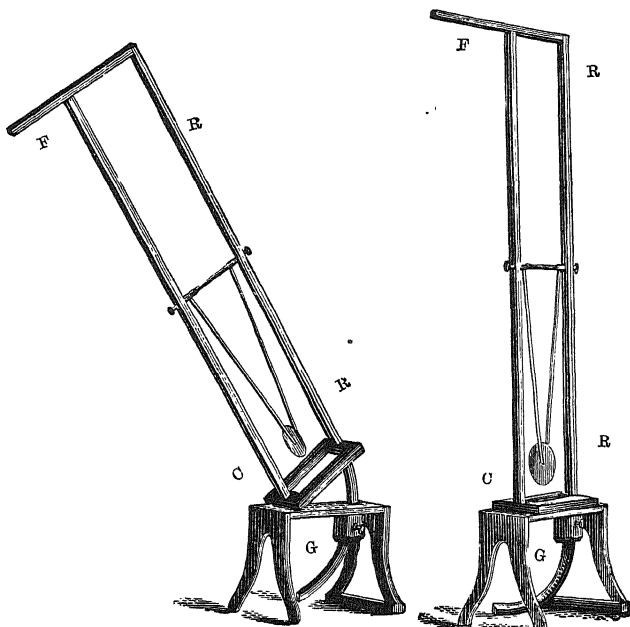
Fig. 113.

will be $(g \cos \beta) \, \alpha$; whence the time of oscillation is $T = \pi \sqrt{l/g \cos \beta}.$

We see from this result, that as β is increased the acceleration $g \cos \beta$ diminishes, and consequently the time of oscillation increases. The experiment may be easily made with the apparatus represented in Fig. 113. The frame RR is free to turn about a hinge at C; it can be inclined and placed on its side. The angle of inclination is fixed by a graduated arc G held by a set-screw. Every increase of β increases the time of oscillation. If the plane of oscillation be made horizontal, in which position R rests on the foot F, the time of oscillation becomes infinitely great. The pendulum in this case no longer returns to any definite position but describes several complete revolutions in the same direction until its entire velocity has been destroyed by friction.

13. If the movement of the pendulum do not take place in a plane, but be performed in space, the thread *The conical pendulum.*

of the pendulum will describe the surface of a cone. The motion of the conical pendulum was also investigated by Huygens. We shall examine a simple case of this motion. We imagine (Fig. 114) a pendulum of length l removed from the vertical by the angle α, a velocity v imparted to the bob of the pendulum at right
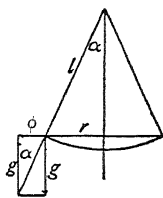
Fig. 114.

angles to the plane of elongation, and the pendulum released. The bob of the pendulum will move in a horizontal circle if the centrifugal acceleration φ developed exactly equilibrates the acceleration of gravity g; that is, if the resultant acceleration falls in the direction of the pendulum thread. But in that case $\varphi/g = \tan \alpha$. If T stands for the time taken to describe one revolution, the periodic time, then $\varphi = 4 r \pi^2 / T^2$ or $T = 2\pi \sqrt{r/\varphi}$. Introducing, now, in the place of r/φ the

value $l \sin \alpha / g \tan \alpha = l \cos \alpha / g$, we get for the periodic time of the pendulum, $T = 2 \pi \sqrt{l \cos \alpha / g}$. For the velocity v of the revolution we find $v = \sqrt{r \varphi}$, and since $\varphi = g \tan \alpha$ it follows that $v = \sqrt{g l \sin \alpha \tan \alpha}$. For very small elongations of the conical pendulum we may put $T = 2 \pi \sqrt{l / g}$, which coincides with the regular formula for the pendulum, when we reflect that a single revolution of the conical pendulum corresponds to *two* vibrations of the common pendulum.

The determination of the acceleration of gravity by the pendulum.

14. Huygens was the first to undertake the exact determination of the acceleration of gravity g by means of pendulum observations. From the formula $T = \pi \sqrt{l / g}$ for a simple pendulum with small bob we obtain directly $g = \pi^2 l / T^2$. For latitude 45° we obtain as the value of g, in metres and seconds, 9.806. For provisional mental calculations it is sufficient to remember that the acceleration of gravity amounts in round numbers to 10 metres a second.

A remark on the formula expressing the law.

15. Every thinking beginner puts to himself the question how it is that the duration of an oscillation, that is a *time*, can be found by dividing a number that is the measure of a *length* by a number that is the measure of an *acceleration* and extracting the square root of the quotient. But the fact is here to be borne in mind that $g = 2 s / t^2$, that is a length divided by the square of a time. In reality therefore the formula we have is $T = \pi \sqrt{(l / 2 s) t^2}$. And since $l / 2 s$ is the ratio of two lengths, and therefore a number, what we have under the radical sign is consequently the square of a time. It stands to reason that we shall find T in seconds only when, in determining g, we also take the second as unit of time.

In the formula $g = \pi^2 l / T^2$ we see directly that g is

a length divided by the square of a time, according to the nature of an acceleration.

16. The most important achievement of Huygens The prob-
lem of the
centre of
oscillation. is his solution of the problem to determine the centre of oscillation. So long as we have to deal with the dynamics of a *single* body, the Galilean principles amply suffice. But in the problem just mentioned we have to determine the motion of *several* bodies that mutually influence each other. This cannot be done without resorting to a *new* principle. Such a one Huygens actually discovered.

We know that long pendulums perform their oscil- Statement
of the prob-
lem. lations more slowly than short ones. Let us imagine a heavy body, free to rotate about an axis, the centre of gravity of which lies outside of the axis; such a body will represent a compound pendulum. Every material particle of a pendulum of this kind would, if it were situated alone at the same distance from the axis, have its own period of oscillation. But owing to the connec- Fig. 115. tions of the parts the whole body can vibrate with only a single, determinate period of oscillation. If we picture to ourselves several pendulums of unequal lengths, the shorter ones will swing quicker, the longer ones slower. If all be joined together so as to form a single pendulum, it is to be presumed that the longer ones will be accelerated, the shorter ones retarded, and that a sort of mean time of oscillation will result. There must exist therefore a simple pendulum, intermediate in length between the shortest and the longest, that has the same time of oscillation as the compound pendulum. If we lay off the length of this pendulum on the compound pendulum, we shall find a point that preserves the same period of oscillation in its connection

with the other points as it would have if detached and left to itself. This point is the centre of oscillation. MERSENNE was the first to propound the problem of determining the centre of oscillation. The solution of DESCARTES, who attempted it, was, however, precipitate and insufficient.

17. Huygens was the first who gave a general solution. Besides Huygens nearly all the great inquirers of that time employed themselves on the problem, and we may say that the most important principles of modern mechanics were developed in connection with it.

The *new* idea from which Huygens set out, and which is more important by far than the whole problem, is this. In whatsoever manner the material particles of a pendulum may by mutual interaction modify each other's motions, in every case the velocities acquired in the descent of the pendulum can be such only that by virtue of them the centre of gravity of the particles, whether still in connection or with their connections dissolved, is able to rise just as *high* as the point from which it *fell.* Huygens found himself compelled, by the doubts of his contemporaries as to the correctness of this principle, to remark, that the only assumption implied in the principle is, that heavy bodies of themselves do not move upwards. If it were possible for the centre of gravity of a connected system of falling material particles to rise higher after the dissolution of its connections than the point from which it had fallen, then by repeating the process heavy bodies could, by virtue of their own weights, be made to rise to any height we wished. If after the dissolution of the connections the centre of gravity should rise to a height less than that from which it had fallen, we should only have to reverse the motion to produce the

same result. What Huygens asserted, therefore, no one had ever really doubted; on the contrary, every one had *instinctively* perceived it. Huygens, however, gave this instinctive perception an *abstract, conceptual* form. He does not omit, moreover, to point out, on the ground of this view, the fruitlessness of endeavors to establish a perpetual motion. The principle just developed will be recognised as a *generalisation of one of Galileo's ideas.*

18. Let us now see what the principle accomplishes in the determination of the centre of oscillation. Let *OA* (Fig. 116), for simplicity's sake, be a linear pendulum, made up of a large number of masses indicated in the diagram by points. Set free at *OA*, it will swing through *B* to *OA'*, where *AB = BA'*. Its centre of gravity *S* will ascend just as high on the second side as it fell on the

Fig. 116.
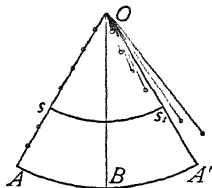
first. From this, so far, nothing would follow. But also, if we should suddenly, at the position *OB*, release the individual masses from their connections, the masses could, by virtue of the velocities impressed on them by their connections, only attain the same height with respect to centre of gravity. If we arrest the free outward-swinging masses at the *greatest heights* they severally attain, the shorter pendulums will be found below the line *OA'*, the longer ones will have passed beyond it, but the centre of gravity of the system will be found on *OA'* in its former position.

Now let us note that the enforced velocities are proportional to the distances from the axis; therefore, *one* being given, all are determined, and the height of ascent of the centre of gravity given. Conversely,

therefore, the velocity of any material particle also is
determined by the known height of the centre of grav-
ity. But if we know in a pendulum the velocity cor-
responding to a given distance of descent, we know its
whole motion.

19. Premising these remarks, we proceed to the
problem itself. On a compound linear pendulum (Fig.
117) we cut off, measuring from the axis, the
portion $= 1$. If the pendulum move from its
position of greatest excursion to the position
of equilibrium, the point at the distance $= 1$
from the axis will fall through the height k.
The masses m, m', m'' . . . at the distances
r, r', r'' . . . will fall in this case the dis-
tances rk, $r'k$, $r''k$ . . ., and the distance of
the descent of the centre of gravity will be:
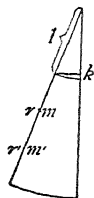
Fig. 117.

$$\frac{m\,r\,k + m'r'k + m''r''k + \cdots}{m + m' + m'' + \cdots} = k\,\frac{\Sigma\,m\,r}{\Sigma\,m}.$$

Let the point at the distance 1 from the axis ac-
quire, on passing through the position of equilibrium,
the velocity, as yet unascertained, v. The height of
its ascent, after the dissolution of its connections, will
be $v^2/2\,g$. The corresponding heights of ascent of
the other material particles will then be $(r v)^2/2\,g$,
$(r'\,v)^2/2\,g$, $(r''\,v)^2/2\,g$ . . . . The height of ascent of the
centre of gravity of the liberated masses will be

$$\frac{m\,\dfrac{(r\,v)^2}{2g} + m'\,\dfrac{(r'v)^2}{2g} + m''\,\dfrac{(r''v)^2}{2g} + \cdots}{m + m' + m'' + \cdots} = \frac{v^2\,\Sigma\,m\,r^2}{2\,g\,\Sigma\,m}.$$

By Huygens's fundamental principle, then,

$$k\,\frac{\Sigma\,m\,r}{\Sigma\,m} = \frac{v^2}{2\,g}\,\frac{\Sigma\,m\,r^2}{\Sigma\,m}\quad\cdots\cdots\cdots(a).$$

From this a relation is deducible between the distance of descent k and the velocity v. Since, however, all pendulum motions of the same excursion are phoronomically similar, the motion here under consideration is, in this result, completely determined.

To find the length of the simple pendulum that has the same period of oscillation as the compound pendulum considered, be it noted that the same relation must obtain between the distance of its descent and its velocity, as in the case of its unimpeded fall. If y is the length of this pendulum, ky is the distance of its descent, and vy its velocity; wherefore

The length of the simple isochronous pendulum.

$$\frac{(vy)^2}{2g} = ky, \text{ or}$$

$$y \cdot \frac{v^2}{2g} = k \ldots \ldots \ldots (b).$$

Multiplying equation (a) by equation (b) we obtain

$$y = \frac{\sum m r^2}{\sum m r}.$$

Employing the principle of phoronomic similitude, we may also proceed in this way. From (a) we get

Solution of the problem by the principle of similitude.

$$v = \sqrt{2gk}\sqrt{\frac{\sum m r}{\sum m r^2}}.$$

A simple pendulum of length 1, under corresponding circumstances, has the velocity

$$v_1 = \sqrt{2gk.}$$

Calling the time of oscillation of the compound pendulum T, that of the simple pendulum of length 1 $T_1 = \pi\sqrt{1/g}$, we obtain, adhering to the supposition of equal excursions,

$$\frac{T}{T_1} = \frac{v_1}{v}; \text{ wherefore } T = \pi\sqrt{\frac{\sum m r^2}{g\sum m r}}.$$

Huygens's
principle
identical
with the
principle of
vis viva.

20. We see without difficulty in the Huygenian principle the recognition of *work* as the condition *determinative of velocity*, or, more exactly, the condition determinative of the so-called *vis viva*. By the *vis viva* or living force of a system of masses $m, m,, m,, \ldots .$, affected with the velocities $v, v,, v,, \ldots .$, we understand the sum *

$$\frac{m\,v^2}{2} + \frac{m,\,v,^2}{2} + \frac{m,,\,v,,^2}{2} + \ldots .$$

The fundamental principle of Huygens is identical with the principle of *vis viva*. The additions of later inquirers were made not so much to the idea as to the form of its expression.

If we picture to ourselves generally any system of weights $p, p,, p,, \ldots .$, which fall connected or unconnected through the heights $h, h,, h,, \ldots .$, and attain thereby the velocities $v, v,, v,, \ldots .$, then, by the Huygenian conception, a relation of equality exists between the distance of *descent* and the distance of *ascent* of the centre of gravity of the system, and, consequently, the equation holds

$$\frac{p\,h + p'h' + p''h'' + \ldots}{p + p' + p'' + \ldots} = \frac{p\dfrac{v^2}{2g} + p'\dfrac{v'^2}{2g} + p''\dfrac{v''^2}{2g} + \ldots}{p + p' + p'' + \ldots}$$

$$\text{or } \Sigma p\,h = \frac{1}{g}\Sigma \frac{p\,v^2}{2}.$$

If we have reached the concept of "mass," which Huygens did not yet possess in his investigations, we may substitute for p/g the mass m and thus obtain the form $\Sigma p\,h = \frac{1}{2}\Sigma m v^2$, which is very easily generalised for non-constant forces.

---

* This is not the usual definition of English writers, who follow the older authorities in making the *vis viva* twice this quantity.—*Trans.*

21. With the aid of the principle of living forces we can determine the duration of the infinitely small oscillations of any pendulum whatsoever. We let fall from the centre of gravity s (Fig. 118) a perpendicular on the axis ; the length of the perpendicular is, say, a. We lay off on this, measuring from the axis, the length $= 1$. Let the distance of descent of the point in question to the position of

Fig. 118.

equilibrium be k, and v the velocity acquired. Since the work done in the descent is determined by the motion of the centre of gravity, we have
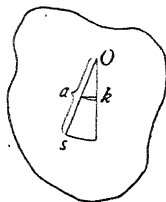
work done in descent $= vis\ viva$:

$$a k g M = \frac{v^2}{2} \Sigma m r^2.$$

M here we call the total mass of the pendulum and anticipate the expression *vis viva*. By an inference similar to that in the preceding case, we obtain $T = \pi \sqrt{\Sigma m r^2 / a g M}$.

22. We see that the duration of infinitely small oscillations of any pendulum is determined by two factors—by the value of the expression $\Sigma m r^2$, which Euler called the *moment of inertia* and which Huygens had employed without any particular designation, and by the value of $a g M$. The latter expression, which we shall briefly term the *statical moment*, is the product $a P$ of the weight of the pendulum into the distance of its centre of gravity from the axis. If these two values be given, the length of the simple pendulum of the same period of oscillation (the isochronous pendulum) and the position of the centre of oscillation are determined.

For the determination of the lengths of the pendu-
lums referred to, Huygens, in the lack of the analytical
methods later discovered, employed a very ingenious
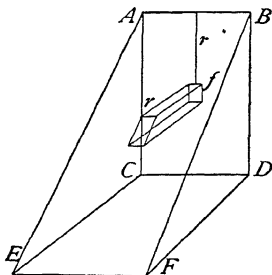
geometrical procedure, which
we shall illustrate by one or
two examples. Let the prob-
lem be to determine the time
of oscillation of a homogene-
ous, material, and heavy rec-
tangle *ABCD*, which swings
on the axis *AB* (Fig. 119).
Dividing the rectangle into
minute elements of area $f, f_{,}$,
$f_{,,} \ldots$ having the distances

Fig. 119.

$r, r_{,}, r_{,,} \ldots$ from the axis, the expression for the
length of the isochronous simple pendulum, or the dis-
tance of the centre of oscillation from the axis, is given
by the equation

$$\frac{fr^2 + f_{,} r_{,}^2 + f_{,,} r_{,,}^2 + \cdots}{fr + f_{,} r_{,} + f_{,,} r_{,,} + \cdots}.$$

Let us erect on *ABCD* at *C* and *D* the perpendiculars
$CE = DF = AC = BD$ and picture to ourselves a
homogeneous wedge *ABCDEF*. Now find the distance
of the centre of gravity of this wedge from the plane
through *AB* parallel to *CDEF*. We have to consider,
in so doing, the tiny columns $fr, f_{,} r_{,}, f_{,,} r_{,,} \ldots$ and
their distances $r, r_{,}, r_{,,} \ldots$ from the plane referred
to. Thus proceeding, we obtain for the required dis-
tance of the centre of gravity the expression

$$\frac{fr \cdot r + f_{,} r_{,} \cdot r_{,} + f_{,,} r_{,,} \cdot r_{,,} + \cdots}{fr + f_{,} r_{,} + f_{,,} r_{,,} + \cdots},$$

that is, the same expression as before. The centre of
oscillation of the rectangle and the centre of gravity of

the wedge are consequently at the same distance from
the axis, $\frac{2}{3}AC$.

Following out this idea, we readily perceive the Analogous
correctness of the following assertions. For a homo- applica-
geneous rectangle of height h swinging about one of methods.
its sides, the distance of the centre of gravity from the
axis is $h/2$, the distance of the centre of oscillation $\frac{2}{3}h$.
For a homogeneous triangle of height h, the axis of
which passes through the vertex parallel to the base,
the distance of the centre of gravity from the axis is
$\frac{2}{3}h$, the distance of the centre of oscillation $\frac{3}{4}h$. Call-
ing the moments of inertia of the rectangle and of the
triangle $\varDelta_1$, $\varDelta_2$, and their respective masses M_1, M_2,
we get

$$\tfrac{2}{3}h = \frac{\varDelta_1}{\dfrac{h}{2}M_1}, \quad \tfrac{3}{4}h = \frac{\varDelta_2}{\dfrac{2h}{3}M_2}.$$

Consequently $\varDelta_1 = \dfrac{h^2 M_1}{3}, \ \ \varDelta_2 = \dfrac{h^2 M_2}{2}.$

By this pretty geometrical conception many prob-
lems can be solved that are to-day treated—more con-
veniently it is true—by routine forms.
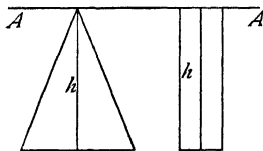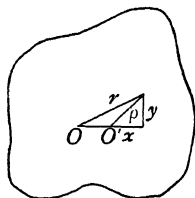
Fig. 120.   Fig. 121.

23. We shall now discuss a proposition relating to
moments of inertia, that Huygens made use of in a
somewhat different form. Let O (Fig. 121) be the
centre of gravity of any given body. Make this the

origin of a system of rectangular coördinates, and suppose the moment of inertia with reference to the Z-axis determined. If m is the element of mass and r its distance from the Z-axis, then this moment of inertia is $\varDelta = \varSigma m r^2$. We now displace the axis of rotation parallel to itself to O', the distance a in the X-direction. The distance r is transformed, by this displacement, into the new distance ρ, and the new moment of inertia is

$\varTheta = \varSigma m \rho^2 = \varSigma m \left[(x-a)^2 + y^2 \right] = \varSigma m (x^2 + y^2) - 2a \varSigma m x + a^2 \varSigma m$, or, since $\varSigma m (x^2 + y^2) = \varSigma m r^2 = \varDelta$, calling the total mass $M = \varSigma m$, and remembering the property of the centre of gravity $\varSigma m x = 0$,

$$\varTheta = \varDelta + a^2 M.$$

From the moment of inertia for one axis through the centre of gravity, therefore, that for any other axis *parallel* to the first is easily derivable.

24. An additional observation presents itself here. The distance of the centre of oscillation is given by the equation $l = \overline{\varDelta + a^2 M}/a M$, where $\varDelta$, M, and a have their previous significance. The quantities $\varDelta$ and M are invariable for any one given body. So long therefore as a retains the same value, l will also remain invariable. For all *parallel* axes situated at the *same* distance from the centre of gravity, the same body as pendulum has the same period of oscillation. If we put $\varDelta/M = \varkappa$, then

$$l = \frac{\varkappa}{a} + a.$$

Now since l denotes the distance of the centre of oscillation, and a the distance of the centre of gravity from the axis, therefore the centre of oscillation is always farther away from the axis than the centre of

gravity by the distance x/a. Therefore x/a is the distance of the centre of oscillation from the centre of gravity. If through the centre of oscillation we place a second axis parallel to the original axis, a passes thereby into x/a, and we obtain the new pendulum length

$$l' = \frac{x}{\dfrac{x}{a}} + \frac{x}{a} = a + \frac{x}{a} = l.$$

The time of oscillation remains the same therefore for the second parallel axis through the centre of oscillation, and consequently the same also for every parallel axis that is at the same distance x/a from the centre of gravity as the centre of oscillation.

The totality of all parallel axes corresponding to the same period of oscillation and having the distances a and x/a from the centre of gravity, is consequently realised in two coaxial cylinders. Each generating line is interchangeable as axis with every other generating line without affecting the period of oscillation.

25. To obtain a clear view of the relations subsisting between the two axial cylinders, as we shall briefly call them, let us institute the following considerations. We put $\Delta = k^2 M$, and then

$$l = \frac{k^2}{a} + a.$$

If we seek the a that corresponds to a given l, and therefore to a given time of oscillation, we obtain

$$a = \frac{l}{2} \pm \sqrt{\frac{l^2}{4} - k^2}.$$

Generally therefore to one value of l there correspond two values of a. Only where $\sqrt{l^2/4 - k^2} = 0$, that is in cases in which $l = 2k$, do both values coincide in $a = k$.

If we designate the two values of a that correspond to every l, by α and β, then

$$l = \frac{k^2 + \alpha^2}{\alpha} = \frac{k^2 + \beta^2}{\beta}, \text{ or}$$
$$\beta(k^2 + \alpha^2) = \alpha(k^2 + \beta^2),$$
$$k^2(\beta - \alpha) = \alpha\beta(\beta - \alpha),$$
$$k^2 = \alpha \cdot \beta.$$

The determination of the preceding factor by a geometrical method. If, therefore, in any pendulous body we know two parallel axes that have the same time of oscillation and different distances α and β from the centre of gravity, as is the case for instance where we are able to give the centre of oscillation for any point of suspension, we can construct k. We lay off (Fig. 122) α and β con-
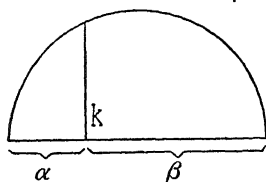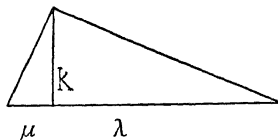
Fig. 122.   Fig. 123.

secutively on a straight line, describe a semicircle on $\alpha + \beta$ as diameter, and erect a perpendicular at the point of junction of the two divisions α and β. On this perpendicular the semicircle cuts off k. If on the other hand we know k, then for every value of α, say λ, a value μ is obtainable that will give the same period of oscillation as λ. We construct (Fig. 123) with λ and k as sides a right angle, join their extremities by a straight line on which we erect at the extremity of k a perpendicular which cuts off on λ produced the portion μ.

Now let us imagine any body whatsoever (Fig. 124) with the centre of gravity O. We place it in the plane

of the drawing, and make it swing about all possible
parallel axes at right angles to the plane of the paper.
All the axes that pass through the circle α are, we
find, with respect to period of oscillation, interchange-
able with each other and also with those that pass
through the circle β. If instead of α we take a smaller
circle λ, then in the place of β we shall get a larger
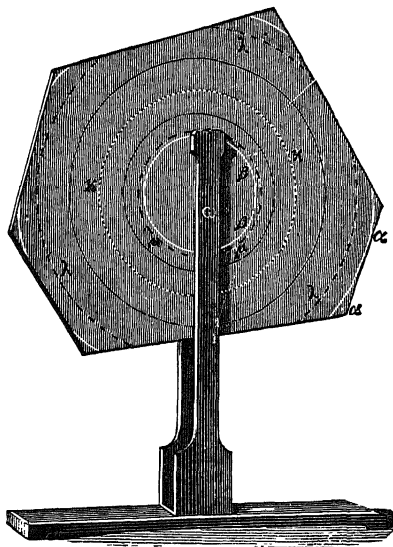
Fig. 124.

circle μ. Continuing in this manner, both circles ul-
timately meet in one with the radius k.

26. We have dwelt at such length on the foregoing
matters for good reasons. In the first place, they have
served our purpose of displaying in a clear light the
splendid results of the investigations of Huygens. For
all that we have given is virtually contained, though
in somewhat different form, in the writings of Huygens,

or is at least so approximately presented in them that
it can be supplied without the slightest difficulty. Only
a very small portion of it has found its way into our
modern elementary text-books. One of the proposi-
tions that has thus been incorporated in our elemen-
tary treatises is that referring to the convertibility of
the point of suspension and the centre of oscillation.
The usual presentation, however, is not exhaustive.
Captain KATER, as we know, employed this principle
for determining the exact length of the seconds pen-
dulum.

Function of the moment of inertia. The points raised in the preceding paragraphs have
also rendered us the service of supplying enlighten-
ment as to the nature of the conception "moment of
inertia." This notion affords us no insight, in point
of principle, that we could not have obtained without
it. But since we *save* by its aid the individual con-
sideration of the particles that make up a system, or
dispose of them once for all, we arrive by a shorter
and easier way at our goal. This idea, therefore, has
a high import in the *economy* of mechanics. Poinsot,
after Euler and Segner had attempted a similar object
with less success, further developed the ideas that be-
long to this subject, and by his ellipsoid of inertia and
central ellipsoid introduced further simplifications.

The lesser investiga-
tions of Huygens. 27. The investigations of Huygens concerning the
geometrical and mechanical properties of cycloids are
of less importance. The cycloidal pendulum, a contriv-
ance in which Huygens realised, not an approximate,
but an exact independence of the time and amplitude
of oscillation, has been dropt from the practice of mod-
ern horology as unnecessary. We shall not, therefore,
enter into these investigations here, however much of
the geometrically beautiful they may present.

Great as the merits of Huygens are with respect to Huygens's crowning achieve-ment. the most different physical theories, the art of horology, practical dioptrics, and mechanics in particular, his chief performance, the one that demanded the greatest intellectual courage, and that was also accompanied with the greatest results, remains his enunciation of the principle by which he solved the problem of the centre of oscillation. This very principle, however, was the only one he enunciated that was not adequately appreciated by his contemporaries; nor was it for a long period thereafter. We hope to have placed this principle here in its right light as identical with the principle of *vis viva.* (See Appendix, XIII., p. 530.)

III.

THE ACHIEVEMENTS OF NEWTON.

1. The merits of NEWTON with respect to our sub- Newton's merits. ject were twofold. First, he greatly extended the range of mechanical physics by his discovery of *universal gravitation.* Second, he *completed the formal enunciation of the mechanical principles now generally accepted.* Since his time no essentially new principle has been stated. All that has been accomplished in mechanics since his day, has been a deductive, formal, and mathematical development of mechanics on the basis of Newton's laws.

2. Let us first cast a glance at Newton's achieve- His great physical discovery. ment in the domain of *physics.* Kepler had deduced from the observations of Tycho Brahe and his own, three empirical laws for the motion of the planets about the sun, which Newton by his new view rendered intelligible. The laws of KEPLER are as follows :

    1) The planets move about the sun in ellipses, in one focus of which the sun is situated.

2) The radius vector joining each planet with the
sun describes equal areas in equal times.

3) The cubes of the mean distances of the planets
from the sun are proportional to the squares of
their times of revolution.

He who clearly understands the doctrine of Galileo
and Huygens, must see that a *curvilinear* motion im-
plies deflective *acceleration.* Hence, to explain the phe-
nomena of planetary motion, an acceleration must be
supposed constantly directed towards the concave side
of the planetary orbits.

Now Kepler's second law, the law of areas, is ex-
plained at once by the assumption of a constant plane-
tary acceleration towards the sun ; or rather, this ac-
celeration is another form of expression for the same
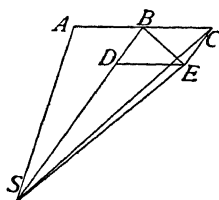
fact. If a radius vector describes
in an element of time the area
ABS (Fig. 125), then in the next
equal element of time, assuming
no acceleration, the area *BCS*
will be described, where $BC =$
AB and lies in the prolongation

Fig. 125.

of *AB.* But if the central accel-
eration during the first element of time produces a
velocity by virtue of which the distance *BD* will be
traversed in the same interval, the next-succeeding
area swept out is not *BCS,* but *BES,* where *CE* is par-
allel and equal to *BD.* But it is evident that $BES =$
$BCS = ABS.$ Consequently, the law of the areas con-
stitutes, in another aspect, a central acceleration.

Having thus ascertained the fact of a central accel-
eration, the *third* law leads us to the discovery of its
character. Since the planets move in ellipses slightly
different from circles, we may assume, for the sake of

simplicity, that their orbits actually are circles. If R_1, R_2, R_3 are the radii and T_1, T_2, T_3 the respective times of revolution of the planets, Kepler's third law may be written as follows:

$$\frac{R_1{}^3}{T_1{}^2} = \frac{R_2{}^3}{T_2{}^2} = \frac{R_3{}^3}{T_3{}^2} = \ldots = \text{a constant.}$$

But we know that the expression for the central acceleration of motion in a circle is $\varphi = 4 R \pi^2 / T^2$, or $T^2 = 4 \pi^2 R / \varphi$. Substituting this value we get

$$\varphi_1 R_1{}^2 = \varphi_2 R_2{}^2 = \varphi_3 R_3{}^2 = \text{constant; or}$$
$$\varphi = \text{constant} / R^2 ;$$

that is to say, on the assumption of a central acceleration inversely proportional to the square of the distance, we get, from the known laws of central motion, Kepler's third law; and *vice versa*.

Moreover, though the demonstration is not easily put in an elementary form, when the idea of a central acceleration inversely proportional to the square of the distance has been reached, the demonstration that this acceleration is another expression for the motion in conic sections, of which the planetary motion in ellipses is a particular case, is a mere affair of mathematical analysis.

3. But in addition to the *intellectual* performance just discussed, the way to which was fully prepared by Kepler, Galileo, and Huygens, still another achievement of Newton remains to be estimated which in no respect should be underrated. This is an achievement of the *imagination*. We have, indeed, no hesitation in saying that this last is the most important of all. Of what nature is the acceleration that conditions the curvilinear motion of the planets about the sun, and of the satellites about the planets?

Newton perceived, with great audacity of thought, and first in the instance of the moon, that this acceleration differed in no substantial respect from the acceleration of gravity so familiar to us. It was probably the principle of continuity, which accomplished so much in Galileo's case, that led him to his discovery. He was wont—and this habit appears to be common to all truly great investigators—to adhere as closely as possible, even in cases presenting altered conditions, to a conception once formed, to preserve the same uniformity in his conceptions that nature teaches us to see in her processes. That which is a property of nature at any one time and in any one place, constantly and everywhere recurs, though it may not be with the same prominence. If the attraction of gravity is observed to prevail, not only on the surface of the earth, but also on high mountains and in deep mines, the physical inquirer, accustomed to continuity in his beliefs, conceives this attraction as also operative at greater heights and depths than those accessible to us. He asks himself, Where lies the limit of this action of terrestrial gravity? Should its action not extend to the moon? With this question the great flight of fancy was taken, of which, with Newton's intellectual genius, the great scientific achievement was but a necessary consequence. (See p. 531.)

Newton discovered first in the case of the moon that the same acceleration that controls the descent of a stone also prevented this heavenly body from moving away in a rectilinear path from the earth, and that, on the other hand, its tangential velocity prevented it from falling towards the earth. The motion of the moon thus suddenly appeared to him in an entirely new light, but withal under quite familiar points of view. The

new conception was attractive in that it embraced objects that previously were very remote, and it was convincing in that it involved the most familiar elements. This explains its prompt application in other fields and the sweeping character of its results.

Newton not only solved by his new conception the thousand years' puzzle of the planetary system, but also furnished by it the key to the explanation of a number of other important phenomena. In the same way that the acceleration due to terrestrial gravity extends to the moon and to all other parts of space, so do the accelerations that are due to the other heavenly bodies, to which we must, by the principle of continuity, ascribe the same properties, extend to all parts of space, including also the earth. But if gravitation is not peculiar to the earth, its seat is not exclusively in the *centre* of the earth. Every portion of the earth, however small, shares it. Every part of the earth attracts, or determines an acceleration of, every other part. Thus an amplitude and freedom of physical view were reached of which men had no conception previously to Newton's time.

Its universal application to all matter.

A long series of propositions respecting the action of spheres on other bodies situated beyond, upon, or within the spheres ; inquiries as to the shape of the earth, especially concerning its flattening by rotation, sprang, as it were, spontaneously from this view. The riddle of the tides, the connection of which with the moon had long before been guessed, was suddenly explained as due to the acceleration of the mobile masses of terrestrial water by the moon. (See p. 533.)

The sweeping character of its results.

4. The reaction of the new ideas on mechanics was a result which speedily followed. The greatly varying accelerations which by the new view the *same* body be-

came affected with according to its position in space,
suggested at once the idea of *variable* weight, yet also
pointed to *one* characteristic property of bodies which
was constant.   The notions of *mass* and *weight* were
thus first clearly distinguished.   The recognised vari-
ability of acceleration led Newton to determine by spe-
cial experiments the fact that the acceleration of gravity
is independent of the chemical constitution of bodies;
whereby new positions of vantage were gained for the
elucidation of the relation of mass and weight, as will
presently be shown more in detail.   Finally, the *uni-
versal applicability* of Galileo's *idea of force* was more
palpably impressed on the mind by Newton's perform-
ances than it ever had been before.   People could no
longer believe that this idea was alone applicable to the
phenomenon of falling bodies and the processes most
immediately connected therewith.   The generalisation
was effected as of itself, and without attracting partic-
ular attention.

5. Let us now discuss, more in detail, the achieve-
ments of Newton as they bear upon the *principles of
mechanics.*   In so doing, we shall first devote ourselves
exclusively to Newton's ideas, seek to bring them for-
cibly home to the reader's mind, and restrict our criti-
cisms wholly to preparatory remarks, reserving the
criticism of details for a subsequent section.   On pe-
rusing Newton's work (*Philosophiæ Naturalis Principia
Mathematica.* London, 1687), the following things
strike us at once as the chief advances beyond Galileo
and Huygens :

1) The generalisation of the idea of force. .

2) The introduction of the concept of mass.

3) The distinct and general formulation of the prin-
ciple of the parallelogram of forces.

4) The statement of the law of action and reaction.

6. With respect to the first point little is to be His attitude
added to what has already been said. Newton·con- with regard
ceives all circumstances determinative of motion, of force.
whether terrestrial gravity or attractions of planets, or
the action of magnets, and so forth, as circumstances
determinative of *acceleration*. He expressly remarks
on this point that by the words attraction and the like
he does not mean to put forward any theory concern-
ing the cause or character of the mutual action referred
to, but simply wishes to express (as modern· writers
say, in a differential form) what is otherwise expressed
(that is, in an integrated form) in the description of the
motion. Newton's reiterated and emphatic protesta-
tions that he is not concerned with hypotheses as to the
causes of phenomena, but has simply to do with the
investigation and transformed statement of *actual facts*,
—a direction of thought that is distinctly and tersely
uttered in his words ''hypotheses non fingo,'' ''I do
not frame hypotheses,''—stamps him as a philosopher
of the *highest* rank. He is not desirous to astound and The Regu-
startle, or to impress the imagination by the originality lae Philoso-
of his ideas: his aim is to know *Nature*.* phandi.

* This is conspicuously shown in the rules that Newton formed for the
conduct of natural inquiry (the *Regulæ Philosophandi*):

'' Rule I. No more causes of natural things are to be admitted than such
as truly exist and are sufficient to explain the phenomena of these things.

'' Rule II. Therefore, to natural effects of the same kind we must, as far
as possible, assign the same causes; e. g., to respiration in man and animals;
to the descent of stones in Europe and in America; to the light of our kitchen
fire and of the sun; to the reflection of light on the earth and on the planets.

'' Rule III. Those qualities of bodies that can be neither increased nor
diminished, and which are found to belong to all bodies within the reach of
our experiments, are to be regarded as the universal qualities of all bodies.
[Here follows the enumeration of the properties of bodies which has been in-
corporated in all text-books.]

'' If it universally appear, by experiments and astronomical observations,
that all bodies in the vicinity of the earth are heavy with respect to the earth,
and this in proportion to the quantity of matter which they severally contain;

7. With regard to the concept of "mass," it is to be observed that the formulation of Newton, which defines mass to be the quantity of matter of a body as measured by the product of its volume and density, is unfortunate. As we can only define density as the mass of unit of volume, the circle is manifest. Newton felt distinctly that in every body there was inherent a property whereby the amount of its motion was determined and perceived that this must be different from weight. He called it, as we still do, mass; but he did not succeed in correctly stating this perception. We shall revert later on to this point, and shall stop here only to make the following preliminary remarks.

The expe-
riences
which point
to the exist-
ence of such
a physical
property.
8. Numerous experiences, of which a sufficient number stood at Newton's disposal, point clearly to the existence of a property distinct from weight, whereby the
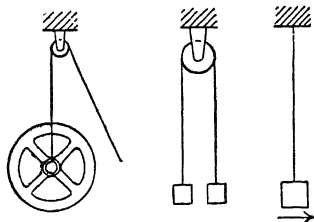
quantity of motion of the body to which it belongs is determined. If (Fig. 126) we tie a fly-wheel to a rope and attempt to lift it by means of a pulley, we feel the *weight* of the fly-wheel. If the wheel be placed

Fig. 126.

on a perfectly cylindrical axle and well balanced, it will no longer assume by virtue of its weight any determinate position. Nevertheless, we are sensible of

that the moon is heavy with respect to the earth in the proportion of its mass, and our seas with respect to the moon; and all the planets with respect to one another, and the comets also with respect to the sun; we must, in conformity with this rule, declare, that *all* bodies are heavy with respect to one another.

"Rule IV. In experimental physics propositions collected by induction from phenomena are to be regarded either as accurately true or very nearly true, notwithstanding any contrary hypotheses, till other phenomena occur, by which they are made more accurate, or are rendered subject to exceptions.

"This rule must be adhered to, that the results of induction may not be annulled by hypotheses."

a powerful resistance the moment we endeavor to set Mass dis-
tinct from
weight.
the wheel in motion or attempt to stop it when in mo-
tion. This is the phenomenon that led to the enuncia-
tion of a distinct property of matter termed inertia, or
"force" of inertia—a step which, as we have already
seen, and shall further explain below is unnecessary.
Two equal loads simultaneously raised, offer resistance
by their weight. Tied to the extremities of a cord that
passes over a pulley, they offer resistance to any mo-
tion, or rather to any change of velocity of the pulley,
by their mass. A large weight hung as a pendulum
on a very long string can be held at an angle of slight
deviation from the line of equilibrium with very little
effort. The weight-component that forces the pendu-
lum into the position of equilibrium, is very small.
Yet notwithstanding this we shall experience a con-
siderable resistance if we suddenly attempt to move or
stop the weight. A weight that is just supported by a
balloon, although we have no longer to overcome its
gravity, opposes a perceptible resistance to motion.
Add to this the fact that the same body experiences in
different geographical latitudes and in different parts
of space very unequal gravitational accelerations and
we shall clearly recognise that mass exists as a property
wholly distinct from weight determining the amount of
acceleration which a given force communicates to the
body to which it belongs. (See p. 536.)

9. Important is Newton's demonstration that the Mass meas
urable by
weight.
mass of a body may, nevertheless, under certain con-
ditions, be measured by its weight. Let us suppose a
body to rest on a support, on which it exerts by its weight
a pressure. The obvious inference is that 2 or 3 such
bodies, or one-half or one-third of such a body, will pro-
duce a corresponding pressure 2, 3, $\frac{1}{2}$, or $\frac{1}{3}$ times as

The prere-
quisites of
the meas-
urement of
mass by
weight.
great. If we imagine the acceleration of descent in-
creased, diminished, or wholly removed, we shall ex-
pect that the pressure also will be increased, dimin-
ished, or wholly removed. We thus *see,* that the pres-
sure attributable to weight increases, decreases, and
vanishes along with the "quan-
tity of matter" and the magni-
tude of the acceleration of de-
scent. In the simplest manner
imaginable we conceive the pres-
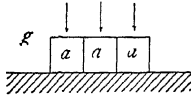
Fig. 127.

sure p as quantitatively representable by the product of
the quantity of matter m into the acceleration of descent
g—by $p = mg$. Suppose now we have two bodies that
exert respectively the weight-pressures p, p', to which
we ascribe the "quantities of matter" m, m', and which
are subjected to the accelerations of descent g, g'; then
$p = mg$ and $p' = m'g'$. If, now, we were able to prove,
that, independently of the material (chemical) compo-
sition of bodies, $g = g'$ at every same point on the
earth's surface, we should obtain $m/m' = p/p'$; that is
to say, on the same spot of the earth's surface, it would
be possible to *measure mass* by *weight.*

Now Newton established this fact, that g is inde-
pendent of the chemical composition of bodies, by
experiments with pendulums of equal lengths but dif-
ferent material, which exhibited equal times of oscilla-
tion. He carefully allowed, in these experiments, for
the disturbances due to the resistance of the air; this
last factor being eliminated by constructing from differ-
ent materials spherical pendulum-bobs of exactly the
same size, the weights of which were equalised by ap-
propriately hollowing the spheres. Accordingly, all
bodies may be regarded as affected with the same g, and

their quantity of matter or mass can, as Newton pointed out, be measured by their weight.

If we imagine a rigid partition placed between an assemblage of bodies and a magnet, the bodies, if the magnet be powerful enough, or at least the majority of the bodies, will exert a pressure on the partition. But it would occur to no one to employ this magnetic pressure, in the manner we employed pressure due to weight, as a measure of mass. The strikingly noticeable inequality of the accelerations produced in the different bodies by the magnet excludes any such idea. The reader will furthermore remark that this whole argument possesses an additional dubious feature, in that the concept of mass which up to this point has simply been *named* and *felt as a necessity*, but not *defined*, is assumed by it.

10. To Newton we owe the distinct formulation of the principle of the composition of forces.* If a body is simultaneously acted on by two forces (Fig. 128), of which one would produce the motion *AB* and the other the motion *AC* in the same interval of time, the body, since the two forces and the motions produced
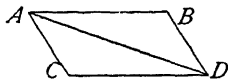
Fig. 128.

by them are *independent of each other*, will move in that interval of time to *AD*. This conception is in every respect natural, and distinctly characterises the essential point involved. It contains none of the artificial and forced characters that were afterwards imported into the doctrine of the composition of forces.

We may express the proposition in a somewhat

Supplementary considerations.

The doctrine of the composition of forces.

---

* Roberval's (1668) achievements with respect to the doctrine of the composition of forces are also to be mentioned here. Varignon and Lami have already been referred to. (See the text, page 36.)

Discussion
of the doc-
rine of the
composi-
ion of
orces. different manner, and thus bring it nearer its modern form. The accelerations that different forces impart to the same body are at the same time the measure of these forces. But the paths described in equal times are proportional to the accelerations. Therefore the latter also may serve as the measure of the forces. We may say accordingly : If two forces, which are proportional to the lines AB and AC, act on a body A in the directions AB and AC, a motion will result that could also be produced by a third force acting alone in the direction of the diagonal of the parallelogram constructed on AB and AC and proportional to that diagonal. The latter force, therefore, may be substituted for the other two. Thus, if φ and ψ are the two accelerations set up in the directions AB and AC, then for any definite interval of time t, $AB = \varphi t^2/2$, $AC = \psi t^2/2$. If, now, we imagine AD produced in the same interval of time by a single force determining the acceleration χ, we get

$$AD = \chi t^2/2, \text{ and } AB : AC : AD = \varphi : \psi : \chi.$$

As soon as we have perceived the fact that the forces are independent of each other, the principle of the parallelogram of forces is easily reached from Galileo's notion of force. Without the assumption of this independence any effort to arrive abstractly and philosophically at the principle, is in vain.

11. Perhaps the most important achievement of Newton with respect to the principles is the distinct and general formulation of the law of the *equality of action and reaction*, of pressure and counter-pressure. Questions respecting the motions of bodies that exert a reciprocal influence on each other, cannot be solved by Galileo's principles alone. A new principle is necessary that will define this mutual action. Such a

principle was that resorted to by Huygens in his inves-
tigation of the centre of oscillation. Such a principle
also is Newton's law of action and reaction.

A body that presses or pulls another body is, ac- Newton's deduction
cording to Newton, pressed or pulled in exactly the of the law
same degree by that other body. Pressure and counter- and reaction.
pressure, force and counter-force, are always equal to
each other. As the measure of force is defined by
Newton to be the quantity of motion or momentum
(mass $\times$ velocity) generated in a unit of time, it conse-
quently follows that bodies that act on each other com-
municate to each other in equal intervals of time equal
and opposite quantities of motion (momenta), or re-
ceive contrary velocities reciprocally proportional to
their masses.

Now, although Newton's law, in the form here ex- The relative immediacy of
pressed, appears much more simple, more immediate, Newton's
and at first glance more admissible than that of Huy- and Huygens's prin-
gens, it will be found that it by no means contains less ciples.
unanalysed experience or fewer instinctive elements.
Unquestionably the original incitation that prompted
the enunciation of the principle was of a purely instinc-
tive nature. We know that we do not experience any
resistance from a body until we seek to set it in motion.
The more swiftly we endeavor to hurl a heavy stone
from us, the more our body is forced back by it. Pres-
sure and counter-pressure go hand in hand. The as-
sumption of the equality of pressure and counter-pres-
sure is quite immediate if, using Newton's own illus-
tration, we imagine a rope stretched between two bod-
ies, or a distended or compressed spiral spring between
them.

There exist in the domain of statics very many in-
stinctive perceptions that involve the equality of pres-

Statical ex-
periences
which point
to the exist-
ence of the
law.

sure and counter-pressure. The trivial experience that one cannot lift one's self by pulling on one's chair is of this character. In a scholium in which he cites the physicists Wren, Huygens, and Wallis as his predecessors in the employment of the principle, Newton puts forward similar reflections. He imagines the earth, the single parts of which gravitate towards one another, divided by a plane. If the pressure of the one portion on the other were not equal to the counter-pressure, the earth would be compelled to move in the direction of the greater pressure. But the motion of a body can, so far as our experience goes, only be determined by other bodies external to it. Moreover, we might place the plane of division referred to at any point we chose, and the direction of the resulting motion, therefore, could not be exactly determined.

The con-
cept of mass
in its con-
nection
with this
law.

12. The indistinctness of the concept of mass takes a very palpable form when we attempt to employ the principle of the equality of action and reaction dynamically. Pressure and counter-pressure may be equal. But whence do we know that equal pressures generate velocities in the inverse ratio of the masses? Newton, indeed, actually felt the necessity of an experimental corroboration of this principle. He cites in a scholium, in support of his proposition, Wren's experiments on impact, and made independent experiments himself. He enclosed in one sealed vessel a magnet and in another a piece of iron, placed both in a tub of water, and left them to their mutual action. The vessels approached each other, collided, clung together, and afterwards remained at rest. This result is proof of the equality of pressure and counter-pressure and of equal and opposite momenta (as we shall learn later on, when we come to discuss the laws of impact).

The reader has already felt that the various enunci- ations of Newton with respect to mass and the prin- ciple of reaction, hang consistently together, and that they support one another. The experiences that lie at their foundation are : the instinctive perception of the connection of pressure and counter-pressure ; the discernment that bodies offer resistance to change of velocity independently of their weight, but proportionately thereto ; and the observation that bodies of greater weight receive under equal pressure smaller velocities. Newton's sense of *what* fundamental concepts and principles were required in mechanics was admirable. The *form* of his enunciations, however, as we shall later indicate in detail, leaves much to be desired. But we have no right to underrate on this account the magnitude of his achievements ; for the difficulties he had to conquer were of a formidable kind, and he shunned them less than any other investigator.

IV.

DISCUSSION AND ILLUSTRATION OF THE PRINCIPLE OF REACTION.

1. We shall now devote ourselves a moment ex- clusively to the Newtonian ideas, and seek to bring the principle of reaction more clearly home to our mind
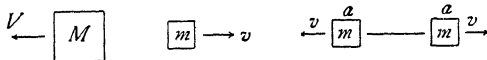

Fig. 129.   Fig. 130.

and feeling. If two masses (Fig. 129) M and m act on one another, they impart to each other, according to Newton, *contrary* velocities V and v, which are inversely proportional to their masses, so that

$$MV + mv = 0.$$

The appearance of greater evidence may be im-
parted to this principle by the following consideration.
We imagine first (Fig. 130) two absolutely *equal* bodies
a, also absolutely alike in chemical constitution.   We
set these bodies opposite each other and put them in
mutual action ; then, on the supposition that the in-
fluences of any third body and of the spectator are ex-
cluded, the communication of *equal* and contrary velo-
cities in the direction of the line joining the bodies is
the sole *uniquely* determined interaction.

Now let us group together in *A* (Fig. 131) *m* such
bodies *a,* and put at *B* over against them *m'* such
bodies *a.* We have then before us bodies whose quan-
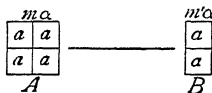

Fig. 131.   Fig. 132.

tities of matter or masses bear to each other the pro-
portion *m : m'.*   The distance between the groups we
assume to be so great that we may neglect the exten-
sion of the bodies.   Let us regard now the accelera-
tions *α,* that every two bodies *a* impart to each other,
as independent of each other.   Every part of *A,* then,
will receive in consequence of the action of *B* the ac-
celeration *m'α,* and every part of *B* in consequence of
the action of *A* the acceleration *m α*—accelerations
which will therefore be inversely proportional to the
masses.

2. Let us picture to ourselves now a mass *M* (Fig.
132) joined by some elastic connection with a mass *m,*
both masses made up of bodies *a* equal in all respects.
Let the mass *m* receive from some *external* source an
acceleration *φ.* At once a distortion of the connection
is produced, by which on the one hand *m* is retarded

and on the other M accelerated. When both masses have begun to move with the same acceleration, all *further* distortion of the connection ceases. If we call α the acceleration of M and β the diminution of the acceleration of m, then $\alpha = \varphi - \beta$, where agreeably to what precedes $\alpha M = \beta m$. From this follows

$$\alpha + \beta = \alpha + \frac{\alpha M}{m} = \varphi, \text{ or } \alpha = \frac{m\varphi}{M+m}.$$

If we were to enter more exhaustively into the details of this last occurrence, we should discover that the two masses, in addition to their motion of progression, also generally perform with respect to each other motions of oscillation. If the connection on slight distortion develop a powerful tension, it will be impossible for any great amplitude of vibration to be reached, and we may entirely neglect the oscillatory motions, as we actually have done.

If the expression $\alpha = m\varphi/\overline{M+m}$, which determines the acceleration of the entire system, be examined, it will be seen that the product $m\varphi$ plays a decisive part in its determination. Newton therefore invested this product of the mass into the acceleration imparted to it, with the name of "moving force." $M+m$, on the other hand, represents the entire mass of the rigid system. We obtain, accordingly, the acceleration of any mass m' on which the moving force p acts, from the expression p/m'.
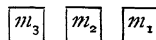

Fig. 133.

3. To reach this result, it is not at all necessary that the two connected masses should act directly on each other in all their parts. We have, connected together, let us say, the three masses m_1, m_2, m_3, where m_1 is supposed to act

only on m_2, and m_3 only on m_2. Let the mass m_1 receive from some external source the acceleration φ. In the distortion that follows, the

masses $\qquad m_3 \qquad m_2 \qquad m_1$
receive the accelerations $\ +\delta \ +\beta \ +\varphi$
$\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad -\gamma \ \ -\alpha.$

Here all accelerations to the right are reckoned as positive, those to the left as negative, and it is obvious that the distortion ceases to increase

when $\delta = \beta - \gamma,\ \delta = \varphi - \alpha,$
where $\delta m_3 = \gamma m_2,\ \alpha m_1 = \beta m_2.$

The resolution of these equations yields the common acceleration that all the masses receive; namely,

$$\delta = \frac{m_1 \varphi}{m_1 + m_2 + m_3},$$

—a result of exactly the same form as before. When therefore a magnet acts on a piece of iron which is joined to a piece of wood, we need not trouble ourselves about ascertaining what particles of the wood are distorted directly or indirectly (through other particles of the wood) by the motion of the piece of iron.

The considerations advanced will, in some measure, perhaps, have contributed towards clearly impressing on us the great importance for mechanics of the Newtonian enunciations. They will also serve, in a subsequent place, to render more readily obvious the defects of these enunciations.
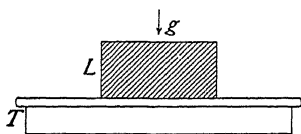

Fig. 134.

4. Let us now turn to a few illustrative physical examples of the principle of reaction. We consider, say, a load L on a table T. The table is pressed by

the load *just so much,* and so much only, as it in return
presses the load, that is *prevents* the same from falling.
If p is the weight, m the mass, and g the acceleration
of gravity, then by Newton's conception $p = mg$. If
the table be let fall vertically downwards with the ac-
celeration of free descent g, all pressure on it ceases.
We discover thus, that the pressure on the table is de-
termined by the relative acceleration of the load with
respect to the table. If the table fall or rise with the
acceleration γ, the pressure on it is respectively $m(g - \gamma)$ and $m(g + \gamma)$. Be it noted, however, that no
change of the relation is produced by a *constant velocity*
of ascent or descent. The relative *acceleration* is de-
terminative.

Galileo knew this relation of things very well. The
doctrine of the Aristotelians, that bodies of greater
weight fall faster than bodies of less weight, he not only
refuted by experiments, but cornered his adversaries
by logical arguments. Heavy bodies fall faster than
light bodies, the Aristotelians said, because the upper
parts weigh down on the under parts and accelerate
their descent. In that case, returned Galileo, a small
body tied to a larger body must, if it possesses *in se* the
property of less rapid descent, retard the larger. There-
fore, a larger body falls more slowly than a smaller
body. The entire fundamental assumption is wrong,
Galileo says, because *one* portion of a *falling* body can-
not by its weight under any circumstances press *an-
other* portion.

A pendulum with the time of oscillation $T = \pi \sqrt{l/g}$,
would acquire, if its axis received the downward accel-
eration γ, the time of oscillation $T = \pi \sqrt{l/g - \gamma}$,
and if let fall freely would acquire an infinite time of
oscillation, that is, would cease to oscillate.

We ourselves, when we jump or fall from an eleva-
tion, experience a peculiar sensation, which must be
due to the discontinuance of the gravitational pressure
of the parts of our body on one another—the blood, and
so forth.   A similar sensation, as if the ground were
sinking beneath us, we should have on a smaller planet,
to which we were suddenly transported.   The sensation
of constant ascent, like that felt in an earthquake,
would be produced on a larger planet.

5. The conditions referred to are very beautifully
illustrated by an apparatus (Fig. 135*c*) constructed
by Poggendorff.   A string loaded at both extremities
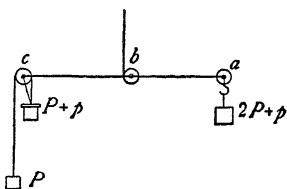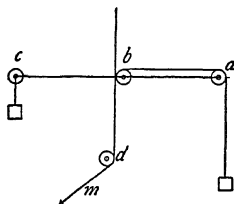
Fig. 135a.   Fig. 135b.

by a weight P (Fig. 135*a*) is passed over a pulley c,
attached to the end of a scale-beam.   A weight p is
laid on one of the weights first mentioned and tied by
a fine thread to the axis of the pulley.   The pulley
now supports the weight $2P + p$.   Burning away the
thread that holds the over-weight, a uniformly accel-
erated motion begins with the acceleration γ, with
which $P + p$ descends and P rises.   The load on the
pulley is thus lessened, as the turning of the scales in-
dicates.   The descending weight P is counterbalanced
by the rising weight P, while the added over-weight,
instead of weighing p, now weighs $(p/g)(g - \gamma)$.   And
since $\gamma = (p/2P + p) g$, we have now to regard the
load on the pulley, not as p, but as $p(2P/2P+p)$.   The

descending weight, only partially impeded in its motion
of descent, exerts only a partial pressure on the pulley.

We may vary the experiment. We pass a thread
loaded at one extremity with the weight P over the
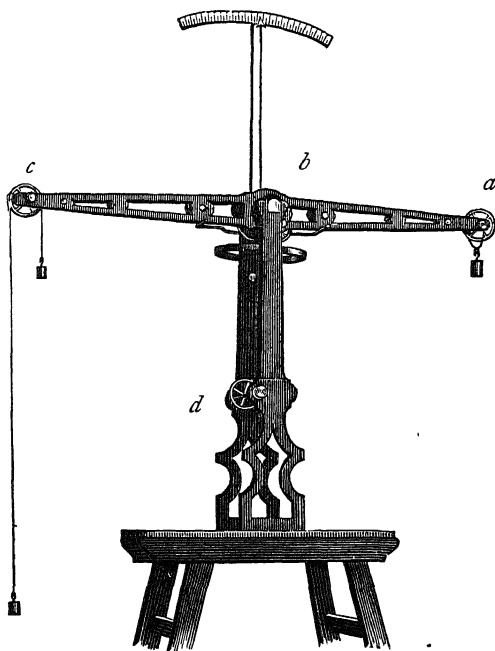pulleys a, b, d, of the apparatus as indicated in Fig.

Fig. 135c.

135b., tie the unloaded extremity at m, and equilibrate
the balance. If we pull on the string at m, this can-
not *directly* affect the balance since the direction of the
string passes exactly through its axis. But the side a
immediately falls. The slackening of the string causes
a to rise. An *unaccelerated* motion of the weights would

not disturb the equilibrium. But we cannot pass from rest to motion *without* acceleration.

6. A phenomenon that strikes us at first glance is, that minute bodies of greater or less specific gravity than the liquid in which they are immersed, if sufficiently 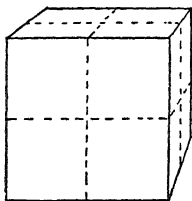small, remain suspended a very long time in the liquid. We perceive at once that particles of this kind have to overcome the friction of the liquid. If the cube of Fig. 136 be divided into 8 parts by the 3 sections indicated, and the parts be placed in a row, their mass and over-weight will remain the same, but their cross-section and superficial area, with which the friction goes hand in hand, will be doubled.

Fig. 136.

Now, the opinion has at times been advanced with respect to this phenomenon that suspended particles of the kind described have no influence on the specific gravity indicated by an areometer immersed in the liquid, because these particles are themselves areometers. But it will readily be seen that if the suspended particles rise or fall with constant velocity, as in the case of very small particles immediately occurs, the effect on the balance and the areometer must be the same. If we imagine the areometer to oscillate about its position of equilibrium, it will be evident that the liquid with all its contents will be moved with it. Applying the principle of virtual displacements, therefore, we can be no longer in doubt that the areometer must indicate the mean specific gravity. We may convince ourselves of the untenability of the rule by which the areometer is supposed to indicate only the specific gravity of the liquid and not that of the sus-

pended particles, by the following consideration. In a
liquid A a smaller quantity of a heavier liquid B is in-
troduced and distributed in fine drops. The areometer,
let us assume, indicates only the specific gravity of
A.   Now, take more and more of the liquid B, finally
just as much of it as we have of A: we can, then, no
longer say which liquid is suspended in the other, and
which specific gravity, therefore, the areometer must
indicate.

7. A phenomenon of an imposing kind, in which The phe-
the relative acceleration of the bodies concerned is the tides.
seen to be determinative of their mutual pressure, is
that of the tides.   We will enter into this subject here
only in so far as it may serve to illustrate the point we
are considering.   The connection of the phenomenon
of the tides with the motion of the moon asserts itself
in the coincidence of the tidal and lunar periods, in
the augmentation of the tides at the full and new
moons, in the daily retardation of the tides (by about
50 minutes), corresponding to the retardation of the
culmination of the moon, and so forth.   As a matter
of fact, the connection of the two occurrences was very
early thought of.   In Newton's time people imagined
to themselves a kind of wave of atmospheric pressure,
by means of which the moon in its motion was sup-
posed to create the tidal wave.

The phenomenon of the tides makes, on every one Its impos-
that sees it for the first time in its full proportions, an ter.
overpowering impression.   We must not be surprised,
therefore, that it is a subject that has actively engaged
the investigators of all times.   The warriors of Alex-
ander the Great had, from their Mediterranean homes,
scarcely the faintest idea of the phenomenon of the
tides, and they were, therefore, not a little taken aback

by the sight of the powerful ebb and flow at the mouth
of the Indus ; as we learn from the account of Curtius
Rufus (*De Rebus Gestis Alexandri Magni*), whose
words we here literally quote :

"34. Proceeding, now, somewhat more slowly in
" their course, owing to the current of the river being
" slackened by its meeting the waters of the sea, they
" at last reached a second island in the middle of the
" river. Here they brought the vessels to the shore,
" and, landing, dispersed to seek provisions, wholly
" unconscious of the great misfortune that awaited
" them.

"35. It was about the third hour, when the ocean,
" in its constant tidal flux and reflux, began to turn
" and press back upon the river. The latter, at first
" merely checked, but then more vehemently repelled,
" at last set back in the opposite direction with a force
" greater than that of a rushing mountain torrent.
" The nature of the ocean was unknown to the multi-
" tude, and grave portents and evidences of the wrath
" of the Gods were seen in what happened. With
" ever-increasing vehemence the sea poured in, com-
" pletely covering the fields which shortly before were
" dry. The vessels were lifted and the entire fleet dis-
" persed before those who had been set on shore, ter-
" rified and dismayed at this unexpected calamity,
" could return. But the more haste, in times of great
" disturbance, the less speed. Some pushed the ships
" to the shore with poles ; others, not waiting to adjust
" their oars, ran aground. Many, in their great haste
" to get away, had not waited for their companions,
" and were barely able to set in motion the huge, un-
" manageable barks ; while some of the ships were too
" crowded to receive the multitudes that struggled to

"get aboard. The unequal division impeded all. The
"cries of some clamoring to be taken aboard, of others
"crying to put off, and the conflicting commands of
"men, all desirous of different ends, deprived every one
"of the possibility of seeing or hearing. Even the
"steersmen were powerless; for neither could their
"cries be heard by the struggling masses nor were their
"orders noticed by the terrified and distracted crews.
"The vessels collided, they broke off each other's oars,
"they plunged against one another. One would think
"it was not the fleet of one and the same army that
"was here in motion, but two hostile fleets in combat.
"Prow struck stern; those that had thrown the fore-
"most in confusion were themselves thrown into con-
"fusion by those that followed; and the desperation
"of the struggling mass sometimes culminated in
"hand-to-hand combats.

"36. Already the tide had overflown the fields sur-
"rounding the banks of the river, till only the hillocks
"jutted forth from above the water, like islands.
"These were the point towards which all that had given
"up hope of being taken on the ships, swam. The
"scattered vessels rested in part in deep water, where
"there were depressions in the land, and in part lay
"aground in shallows, according as the waves had
"covered the unequal surface of the country. Then,
"suddenly, a new and greater terror took possession
"of them. The sea began to retreat, and its waters
"flowed back in great long swells, leaving the land
"which shortly before had been immersed by the salt
"waves, uncovered and clear. The ships, thus for-
"saken by the water, fell, some on their prows, some
"on their sides. The fields were strewn with luggage,
"arms, and pieces of broken planks and oars. The

The dismay of the army. "soldiers dared neither to venture on the land nor to "remain in the ships, for every moment they expected "something new and worse than had yet befallen "them.   They could scarcely believe that that which "they saw had really happened—a shipwreck on dry "land, an ocean in a river.   And of their misfortune "there seemed no end.   For wholly ignorant that the "tide would shortly bring back the sea and again set "their vessels afloat, they prophesied hunger and dir- "est distress.   On the fields horrible animals crept "about, which the subsiding floods had left behind.

The efforts of the king and the return of the tide. "37. The night fell, and even the king was sore "distressed at the slight hope of rescue.   But his so- "licitude could not move his unconquerable spirit. He "remained during the whole night on the watch, and "despatched horsemen to the mouth of the river, that, "as soon as they saw the sea turn and flow back, they "might return and announce its coming.   He also "commanded that the damaged vessels should be re- "paired and that those that had been overturned by "the tide should be set upright, and ordered all to be "near at hand when the sea should again inundate the "land.   After he had thus passed the entire night in "watching and in exhortation, the horsemen came "back at full speed and the tide as quickly followed. "At first, the approaching waters, creeping in light "swells beneath the ships, gently raised them, and, "inundating the fields, soon set the entire fleet in mo- "tion.   The shores resounded with the cheers and "clappings of the soldiers and sailors, who celebrated "with immoderate joy their unexpected rescue. 'But "whence,' they asked, in wonderment, 'had the sea "so suddenly given back these great masses of water? "Whither had they, on the day previous, retreated?

"And what was the nature of this element, which now
"opposed and now obeyed the dominion of the hours?'
"As the king concluded from what had happened that
"the fixed time for the return of the tide was after
"sunrise, he set out, in order to anticipate it, at mid-
"night, and proceeding down the river with a few
"ships he passed the mouth and, finding himself at
"last at the goal of his wishes, sailed out 400 stadia
"into the ocean. He then offered a sacrifice to the
"divinities of the sea, and returned to his fleet."

8. The essential point to be noted in the explana- The explana-
tion of the tides is, that the earth as a rigid body can the phe-
receive but *one* determinate acceleration towards the the tides.
moon, while the mobile particles of water on the sides
nearest to and remotest from the moon can acquire
various accelerations.
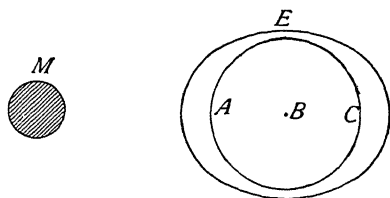
Fig. 137.

Let us consider (Fig. 137) on the earth E, opposite
which stands the moon M, three points A, B, C. The
accelerations of the three points in the direction of the
moon, if we regard them as free points, are respect-
ively $\varphi + \varDelta \varphi$, φ, $\varphi - \varDelta \varphi$. The earth as a whole,
however, has, as a rigid body, the acceleration φ. The
acceleration towards the centre of the earth we will
call g. Designating now all accelerations to the left
as negative, and all to the right as positive, we get the
following table :

A	B	C
$-(\varphi + \varDelta\varphi),$	$-\varphi,$	$-(\varphi - \varDelta\varphi)$
$+g$		$-g.$
$-\varphi,$	$-\varphi,$	$-\varphi$
$g - \varDelta\varphi,$	$0,$	$-(g - \varDelta\varphi),$

where the symbols of the first and second lines represent the accelerations which the *free* points that head the columns receive, those of the third line the acceleration of corresponding rigid points of the earth, and those of the fourth line, the difference, or the resultant accelerations of the free points towards the earth. It will be seen from this result that the weight of the water at A and C is diminished by exactly the same amount. The water will rise at A and C (Fig. 137). A tidal wave will be produced at these points twice every day.

A variation of the phenomenon. It is a fact not always sufficiently emphasised, that the phenomenon would be an essentially different one if the moon and the earth were not affected with accelerated motion towards each other but were relatively fixed and at rest. If we modify the considerations presented to comprehend this case, we must put for the rigid earth in the foregoing computation, $\varphi = 0$ simply. We then obtain for

the free points....	A	C
the accelerations..	$-(\varphi + \varDelta\varphi),$	$-(\varphi - \varDelta\varphi),$
	$+g$	$-g$
or..............	$(g - \varDelta\varphi) - \varphi,$	$-(g - \varDelta\varphi) - \varphi$
or..............	$g' - \varphi,$	$-(g' + \varphi),$

where $g' = g - \varDelta\varphi$. In such case, therefore, the weight of the water at A would be diminished, and the weight at C increased; the height of the water at A

would be increased, and the height at C diminished. The water would be elevated only on the side facing the moon. (Fig. 138.)
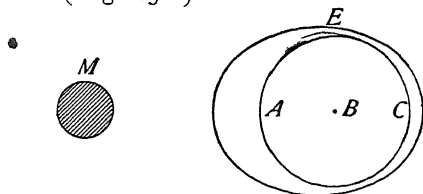

Fig. 138.

9. It would hardly be worth while to illustrate An illustrative experiment.
propositions best reached deductively, by experiments
that can only be performed with difficulty. But such
experiments are not beyond the limits of possibility.
If we imagine a small iron sphere K to swing as a
conical pendulum about the pole of a
magnet N (Fig. 139), and cover the
sphere with a solution of magnetic sul-
phate of iron, the fluid drop should, if
the magnet is sufficiently powerful, rep-
resent the phenomenon of the tides. But
if we imagine the sphere to be fixed and
at rest with respect to the pole of the
magnet, the fluid drop will certainly not
be found tapering to a point *both* on
the side facing and the side opposite to

Fig. 139.

the pole of the magnet, but will remain suspended only
on the side of the sphere towards the pole of the
magnet.

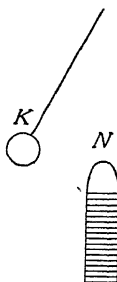10. We must not, of course, imagine, that the Some further considerations
entire tidal wave is produced at once by the action
of the moon. We have rather to conceive the tide
as an oscillatory movement *maintained* by the moon.
If, for example, we should sweep a fan uniformly and

continuously along over the surface of the water of a circular canal, a wave of considerable magnitude following in the wake of the fan would by this gentle and constantly continued impulsion soon be produced. In like manner the tide is produced. But in the latter case the occurrence is greatly complicated by the irregular formation of the continents, by the periodical variation of the disturbance, and so forth. (See Appendix, XVII., p. 537.)

v.

CRITICISM OF THE PRINCIPLE OF REACTION AND OF THE
CONCEPT OF MASS.

The concept of mass.

1. Now that the preceding discussions have made us familiar with Newton's ideas, we are sufficiently prepared to enter on a critical examination of them. We shall restrict ourselves primarily in this, to the consideration of the concept of mass and the principle of reaction. The two cannot, in such an examination, be separated ; in them is contained the gist of Newton's achievement.

The expression "quantity of matter."

2. In the first place we do not find the expression "quantity of matter" adapted to explain and elucidate the concept of mass, since that expression itself is not possessed of the requisite clearness. And this is so, though we go back, as many authors have done, to an enumeration of the hypothetical atoms. We only complicate, in so doing, indefensible conceptions. If we place together a number of equal, chemically homogeneous bodies, we can, it may be granted, connect some clear idea with "quantity of matter," and we perceive, also, that the resistance the bodies offer to motion increases with this quantity. But the moment we suppose chemical heterogeneity, the assumption that

there is still something that is measurable by the same standard, which something we call quantity of matter, may be suggested by mechanical experiences, but is an assumption nevertheless that needs to be justified. When therefore, with Newton, we make the assump-tions, respecting pressure due to weight, that $p = mg$, $p' = m'g$, and put in conformity with such assumptions $p/p' = m/m'$, we have made actual use in the operation thus performed of the *supposition*, yet to be justified, that different bodies are measurable by the *same* stand-ard.

We might, indeed, *arbitrarily posit*, that $m/m' = p/p'$; that is, might define the ratio of mass to be the ratio of pressure due to weight when g was the same. But we should then have to *substantiate* the use that is made of this notion of mass in the principle of reaction and in other relations.

Fig. 140 a.   Fig. 140 b.

3. When two bodies (Fig. 140 a), perfectly equal in all respects, are placed opposite each other, we ex-pect, agreeably to the principle of symmetry, that they will produce in each other in the direction of their line of junction equal and opposite accelerations. But if these bodies exhibit any difference, however slight, of form, of chemical constitution, or are in any other re-spects different, the principle of symmetry forsakes us, *unless we assume or know beforehand* that sameness of form or sameness of chemical constitution, or whatever else the thing in question may be, is not determina-tive. If, however, mechanical experiences clearly and indubitably point to the existence in bodies of a special and distinct property determinative of *accelerations,*

nothing stands in the way of our arbitrarily establishing the following definition:

All those bodies are bodies of equal mass, which, mutually acting on each other, produce in each other equal and opposite accelerations.

We have, in this, simply designated, or *named,* an actual relation of things. In the general case we proceed similarly. The bodies A and B receive respectively as the result of their mutual action (Fig. 140 b) the accelerations $- \varphi$ and $+ \varphi'$, where the senses of the accelerations are indicated by the signs. We say then, B has φ/φ' times the mass of A. *If we take A as our unit, we assign to that body the mass m which imparts to A m times the acceleration that A in the reaction imparts to it.* The ratio of the masses is the negative inverse ratio of the counter-accelerations. That these accelerations always have opposite signs, that there are therefore, by our definition, only positive masses, is a point that experience teaches, and experience alone can teach. In our concept of mass no theory is involved; "quantity of matter" is wholly unnecessary in it; all it contains is the exact establishment, designation, and denomination of a fact. (Compare Appendix, XVIII., p. 539.)

4. One difficulty should not remain unmentioned in this connection, inasmuch as its removal is absolutely necessary to the formation of a perfectly clear concept of mass. We consider a set of bodies, $A, B, C, D \ldots$, and compare them all with A as unit.

$$A, \quad B, \quad C, \quad D, \quad E, \quad F.$$
$$1, \quad m, \quad m', \quad m'', \quad m''', \quad m''''$$

We find thus the respective mass-values, 1, m, m', m''. . . ., and so forth. The question now arises, If we

select *B* as our standard of comparison (as our unit), shall we obtain for *C* the mass-value *m'/m*, and for *D* the value *m"/m*, or will perhaps wholly different values result? More simply, the question may be put thus: Will two bodies *B, C*, which in mutual action with *A* have acted as equal masses, also act as equal masses in mutual action with each other? No *logical* necessity exists whatsoever, that two masses that are equal to a third mass should also be equal to each other. For we are concerned here, not with a mathematical, but with a physical question. This will be rendered quite clear by recourse to an analogous relation. We place by the side of each other the bodies *A, B, C* in the proportions of weight *a, b, c* in which they enter into the chemical combinations *AB* and *AC.* There exists, now, no *logical* necessity at all for assuming that the same proportions of weight *b, c* of the bodies *B, C* will also enter into the chemical combination *BC.* Experience, however, informs us that they do. If we place by the side of each other any set of bodies in the proportions of weight in which they combine with the body *A*, they will also unite with each other in the same proportions of weight. But no one can know this who has not tried it. And this is precisely the case with the mass-values of bodies.

If we were to assume that the order of combination of the bodies, by which their mass-values are determined, exerted any influence on the mass-values, the consequences of such an assumption would, we should find, lead to conflict with experience. Let us suppose, for instance (Fig. 141), that we have three elastic bodies, *A, B, C,* movable on an absolutely smooth and rigid ring. We presuppose that *A* and *B* in their mutual relations comport themselves like equal masses

and that B and C do the same. We are then also obliged to assume, if we wish to avoid conflicts with experience, that C and A in their mutual relations act like equal masses. If we impart to A a velocity, A will transmit this velocity by impact to B, and B to C. But if C were to act towards A, say, as a greater mass,
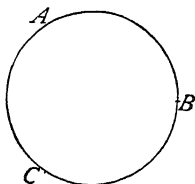

Fig. 141.

A on impact would acquire a greater velocity than it originally had while C would still retain a residue of what it had. With every revolution in the direction of the hands of a watch the *vis viva* of the system would be increased. If C were the smaller mass as compared with A, reversing the motion would produce the same result. But a constant increase of *vis viva* of this kind is at decided variance with our *experience.*

The new concept of mass involves implicitly the principle of reaction.

5. The concept of mass when reached in the manner just developed renders unnecessary the special enunciation of the principle of reaction. In the concept of mass and the principle of reaction, as we have stated in a preceding page, the same fact is *twice* formulated; which is redundant. If two masses 1 and 2 act on each other, our very definition of mass asserts that they impart to each other contrary accelerations which are to each other respectively as 2 : 1.

6. The fact that *mass* can be *measured* by *weight,* where the acceleration of gravity is invariable, can also be deduced from our definition of mass. We are sensible at once of any increase or diminution of a pressure, but this feeling affords us only a very inexact and indefinite measure of magnitudes of pressure. An exact, serviceable measure of pressure springs from the observation that every pressure is replaceable by

the pressure of a number of like and commensurable weights. Every pressure can be counterbalanced by the pressure of weights of this kind. Let two bodies m and m' be respectively affected in opposite directions with the accelerations φ and φ', determined by external circumstances. And let the bodies be joined by a string. If equilibrium prevails, the acceleration φ in m and the acceleration φ' in m' are exactly balanced by *interaction.* For this case, accordingly, $m\varphi = m'\varphi'$. When, therefore, $\varphi = \varphi'$, as is the case when the bodies are abandoned

Fig. 142.

to the acceleration of gravity, we have, in the case of equilibrium, also $m = m'$. It is obviously immaterial whether we make the bodies act on each other directly by means of a string, or by means of a string passed over a pulley, or by placing them on the two pans of a balance. The fact that mass can be measured by weight is evident from our definition without recourse or reference to "quantity of matter."

7. As soon therefore as we, our attention being drawn to the fact by experience, have *perceived* in bodies the existence of a special property determinative of accelerations, our task with regard to it ends with the recognition and unequivocal designation of this *fact.* Beyond the recognition of this fact we shall not get, and every venture beyond it will only be productive of obscurity. All uneasiness will vanish when once we have made clear to ourselves that in the concept of mass no theory of any kind whatever is contained, but simply a fact of experience. The concept has hitherto held good. It is very improbable, but not impossible, that it will be shaken in the future, just as the concep-

tion of a constant quantity of heat, which also rested on experience, was modified by new experiences.

<center>VI.</center>

<center>NEWTON'S VIEWS OF TIME, SPACE, AND MOTION.</center>

1. In a scholium which he appends immediately to his definitions, Newton presents his views regarding time and space—views which we shall now proceed to examine more in detail. We shall literally cite, to this end, only the passages that are absolutely necessary to the characterisation of Newton's views.

Newton's views of time, space, and motion. "So far, my object has been to explain the senses "in which certain words little known are to be used in "the sequel. Time, space, place, and motion, being "words well known to everybody, I do not define. Yet "it is to be remarked, that the vulgar conceive these "quantities only in their relation to sensible objects. "And hence certain prejudices with respect to them "have arisen, to remove which it will be convenient to "distinguish them into absolute and relative, true and "apparent, mathematical and common, respectively.

Absolute and relative time. "I. Absolute, true, and mathematical time, of it-"self, and by its own nature, flows uniformly on, with-"out regard to anything external. It is also called "*duration.*

"Relative, apparent, and common time, is some "sensible and external measure of absolute time (dura-"tion), estimated by the motions of bodies, whether "accurate or inequable, and is commonly employed "in place of true time; as an hour, a day, a month, "a year. . .

"The natural days, which, commonly, for the pur-"pose of the measurement of time, are held as equal, "are in reality unequal. Astronomers correct this in-

"equality, in order that they may measure by a truer
"time the celestial motions. It may be that there is
"no equable motion, by which time can accurately be
"measured. All motions can be accelerated and re-
"tarded. But the flow of *absolute* time cannot be
"changed. Duration, or the persistent existence of
"things, is always the same, whether motions be swift
"or slow or null."

2. It would appear as though Newton in the re- Discussion of Newton's view of time.
marks here cited still stood under the influence of the
mediæval philosophy, as though he had grown unfaith-
ful to his resolve to investigate only actual facts. When
we say a thing *A* changes with the time, we mean sim-
ply that the conditions that determine a thing *A* depend
on the conditions that determine another thing *B*. The
vibrations of a pendulum take place *in time* when its
excursion *depends* on the position of the earth. Since,
however, in the observation of the pendulum, we are
not under the necessity of taking into account its de-
pendence on the position of the earth, but may com-
pare it with any other thing (the conditions of which
of course also depend on the position of the earth), the
illusory notion easily arises that *all* the things with
which we compare it are unessential. Nay, we may,
in attending to the motion of a pendulum, neglect en-
tirely other external things, and find that for every po-
sition of it our thoughts and sensations are different.
Time, accordingly, appears to be some particular and
independent thing, on the progress of which the posi-
tion of the pendulum depends, while the things that
we resort to for comparison and choose at random ap-
pear to play a wholly collateral part. But we must
not forget that all things in the world are connected
with one another and depend on one another, and that

General discussion of the concept of time.

we ourselves and all our thoughts are also a part of nature. It is utterly beyond our power to *measure* the changes of things by *time*. Quite the contrary, time is an abstraction, at which we arrive by means of the changes of things; made because we are not restricted to any one *definite* measure, all being interconnected. A motion is termed uniform in which equal increments of space described correspond to equal increments of space described by some motion with which we form a comparison, as the rotation of the earth. A motion may, with respect to another motion, be uniform. But the question whether a motion is *in itself* uniform, is senseless. With just as little justice, also, may we speak of an "absolute time"—*of a time independent of change*. This absolute time can be measured by comparison with no motion; it has therefore neither a practical nor a scientific value; and no one is justified in saying that he knows aught about it. It is an idle metaphysical conception.

Further elucidation of the idea.

It would not be difficult to show from the points of view of psychology, history, and the science of language (by the names of the chronological divisions), that we reach our ideas of time in and through the interdependence of things on one another. In these ideas the profoundest and most universal connection of things is expressed. When a motion takes place in time, it depends on the motion of the earth. This is not refuted by the fact that mechanical motions can be reversed. A number of variable quantities may be so related that one set can suffer a change without the others being affected by it. Nature behaves like a machine. The individual parts reciprocally determine one another. But while in a machine the position of one part determines the position of *all* the other parts, in nature

more complicated relations obtain. These relations are best represented under the conception of a number, n, of quantities that satisfy a lesser number, n', of equations. Were $n = n'$, nature would be invariable. Were $n' = n - 1$, then with one quantity all the rest would be controlled. If this latter relation obtained in nature, time could be reversed the moment this had been accomplished with any one single motion. But the true state of things is represented by a different relation between n and n'. The quantities in question are partially determined by one another; but they retain a greater indeterminateness, or freedom, than in the case last cited. We ourselves feel that we are such a partially determined, partially undetermined element of nature. In so far as a portion only of the changes of nature depends on us and can be reversed by us, does time appear to us irreversible, and the time that is past as irrevocably gone.

We arrive at the idea of time,—to express it briefly and popularly,—by the connection of that which is contained in the province of our memory with that which is contained in the province of our sense-perception. When we say that time flows on in a definite direction or sense, we mean that physical events generally (and therefore also physiological events) take place only in a definite sense.* Differences of temperature, electrical differences, differences of level generally, if left to themselves, all grow less and not greater. If we contemplate two bodies of different temperatures, put in contact and left wholly to themselves, we shall find that it is possible only for greater differences of temperature in the field of memory to

Some psychological considerations.

---

* Investigations concerning the physiological nature of the sensations of time and space are here excluded from consideration.

exist with lesser ones in the field of sense-perception, and not the reverse. In all this there is simply expressed a peculiar and profound connection of things. To demand at the present time a full elucidation of this matter, is to anticipate, in the manner of speculative philosophy, the results of all future special investigation, that is a perfect physical science. (Compare Appendix, XIX., p. 541.)

Newton's views of space and motion. 3. Views similar to those concerning time, are developed by Newton with respect to space and motion. We extract here a few passages which characterise his position.

"II. Absolute space, in its own nature and without regard to anything external, always remains similar and immovable.

"Relative space is some movable dimension or measure of absolute space, which our senses determine by its position with respect to other bodies, and which is commonly taken for immovable [absolute] space. . . .

"IV. Absolute motion is the translation of a body from one absolute place* to another absolute place ; and relative motion, the translation from one relative place to another relative place. . . .

Passages from his works. ". . . . And thus we use, in common affairs, instead of *absolute* places and motions, *relative* ones ; and that without any inconvenience. But in physical disquisitions, we should abstract from the senses. For it may be that there is no body really at rest, to which the places and motions of others can be referred. . . .

"The effects by which absolute and relative motions

---

* The place, or *locus* of a body, according to Newton, is not its position, but the *part of space* which it occupies. It is either absolute or relative.—*Trans*

"are distinguished from one another, are centrifugal
"forces, or those forces in circular motion which pro-
"duce a tendency of recession from the axis. For in
"a circular motion which is purely relative no such
"forces exist; but in a true and absolute circular mo-
"tion they do exist, and are greater or less according
"to the quantity of the [absolute] motion.

"For instance. If a bucket, suspended by a long
"cord, is so often turned about that finally the cord is
"strongly twisted, then is filled with water, and held
"at rest together with the water; and afterwards by
"the action of a second force, it is suddenly set whirl-
"ing about the contrary way, and continues, while the
"cord is untwisting itself, for some time in this mo-
"tion; the surface of the water will at first be level,
"just as it was before the vessel began to move; but,
"subsequently, the vessel, by gradually communicat-
"ing its motion to the water, will make it begin sens-
"ibly to rotate, and the water will recede little by little
"from the middle and rise up at the sides of the ves-
"sel, its surface assuming a concave form. (This ex-
"periment I have made myself.)

"... . At first, when the *relative* motion of the wa-
"ter in the vessel was *greatest*, that motion produced
"no tendency whatever of recession from the axis; the
"water made no endeavor to move towards the cir-
"cumference, by rising at the sides of the vessel, but
"remained level, and for that reason its *true* circular
"motion had not yet begun. But afterwards, when
"the relative motion of the water had decreased, the
"rising of the water at the sides of the vessel indicated
"an endeavor to recede from the axis; and this en-
"deavor revealed the real circular motion of the water,
"continually increasing, till it had reached its greatest

The rotating bucket.

Relative and real motion.

"point, when *relatively* the water was at rest in the
"vessel . . . .

"It is indeed a matter of great difficulty to discover
"and effectually to distinguish the *true* from the ap-
"parent motions of particular bodies ; for the parts of
"that immovable space in which bodies actually move,
"do not come under the observation of our senses.

"Yet the case is not altogether desperate ; for there
"exist to guide us certain marks, abstracted partly
"from the apparent motions, which are the differences
"of the true motions, and partly from the forces that
"are the causes and effects of the true motions.   If,
"for instance, two globes, kept at a fixed distance
"from one another by means of a cord that connects
"them, be revolved about their common centre of
"gravity, one might, from the simple tension of the
"cord, discover the tendency of the globes to recede
"from the axis of their motion, and on this basis the
"quantity of their circular motion might be computed.
"And if any equal forces should be simultaneously
"impressed on alternate faces of the globes to augment
"or diminish their circular motion, we might, from
"the increase or decrease of the tension of the cord,
"deduce the increment or decrement of their motion ;
"and it might also be found thence on what faces
"forces would have to be impressed, in order that the
"motion of the globes should be most augmented ;
"that is, their rear faces, or those which, in the cir-
"cular motion, follow. But as soon as we knew which
"faces followed, and consequently which preceded, we
"should likewise know the direction of the motion.
"In this way we might find both the quantity and the
"direction of the circular motion, considered even in
"an immense vacuum, where there was nothing ex-

"ternal or sensible with which the globes could be
"compared . . . ."

4. It is scarcely necessary to remark that in the re-
flections here presented Newton has again acted con-
trary to his expressed intention only to investigate *actual*
facts.   No one is competent to predicate things about
absolute space and absolute motion; they are pure
things of thought, pure mental constructs, that cannot
be produced in experience.   All our principles of me-
chanics are, as we have shown in detail, experimental
knowledge concerning the relative positions and mo-
tions of bodies.   Even in the provinces in which they
are now recognised as valid, they could not, and were
not, admitted without previously being subjected to
experimental tests.   No one is warranted in extending
these principles beyond the boundaries of experience.
In fact, such an extension is meaningless, as no one
possesses the requisite knowledge to make use of it.

Let us look at the matter in detail.   When we say that
a body K alters its direction and velocity solely through
the influence of another body K', we have asserted
a conception that it is impossible to come at unless
other bodies A, B, C . . . . are present with reference
to which the motion of the body K has been estimated.
In reality, therefore, we are simply cognisant of a re-
lation of the body K to A, B, C . . . .   If now we sud-
denly neglect A, B, C . . . . and attempt to speak of
the deportment of the body K in absolute space, we
implicate ourselves in a twofold error.   In the first
place, we cannot know how K would act in the ab-
sence of A, B, C . . . .; and in the second place, every
means would be wanting of forming a judgment of the
behaviour of K and of putting to the test what we had

predicated,—which latter therefore would be bereft of all scientific significance.

Two bodies K and K', which gravitate toward each other, impart to each other in the direction of their line of junction accelerations inversely proportional to their masses m, m'. In this proposition is contained, not only a relation of the bodies K and K' to one another, but also a relation of them to other bodies. For the proposition asserts, not only that K and K' suffer with respect to one another the acceleration designated by $\varkappa(\overline{m + m'}/r^2)$, but also that K experiences the acceleration $- \varkappa m'/r^2$ and K' the acceleration $+ \varkappa m/r^2$ in the direction of the line of junction ; facts which can be ascertained only by the presence of other bodies.

The motion of a body K can only be estimated by reference to other bodies A, B, C . . . . But since we always have at our disposal a sufficient number of bodies, that are as respects each other relatively fixed, or only slowly change their positions, we are, in such reference, restricted to no one *definite* body and can alternately leave out of account now this one and now that one. In this way the conviction arose that these bodies are indifferent generally.

It might be, indeed, that the isolated bodies A, B, C . . . . play merely a collateral rôle in the determination of the motion of the body K, and that this motion is determined by a *medium* in which K exists. In such a case we should have to substitute this medium for Newton's absolute space. Newton certainly did not entertain this idea. Moreover, it is easily demonstrable that the atmosphere is not this motion-determinative medium. We should, therefore, have to picture to ourselves some other medium, filling, say, all space, with respect to the constitution of which and its kinetic

relations to the bodies placed in it we have at present
no adequate knowledge. In itself such a state of things
would not belong to the impossibilities. It is known,
from recent hydrodynamical investigations, that a rigid
body experiences resistance in a frictionless fluid only
when its velocity *changes*. True, this result is derived
theoretically from the notion of inertia; but it might,
conversely, also be regarded as the primitive fact from
which we have to start. Although, practically, and at
present, nothing is to be accomplished with this con-
ception, we might still hope to learn more in the future
concerning this hypothetical medium; and from the
point of view of science it would be in every respect
a more valuable acquisition than the forlorn idea of
absolute space. When we reflect that we cannot abol-
ish the isolated bodies *A*, *B*, *C* . . . ., that is, cannot
determine by experiment whether the part they play is
fundamental or collateral, that hitherto they have been
the sole and only competent means of the orientation
of motions and of the description of mechanical facts,
it will be found expedient provisionally to regard all
motions as determined by these bodies.

5. Let us now examine the point on which New-
ton, apparently with sound reasons, rests his distinc-
tion of absolute and relative motion. If the earth is
affected with an *absolute* rotation about its axis, cen-
trifugal forces are set up in the earth : it assumes an
oblate form, the acceleration of gravity is diminished
at the equator, the plane of Foucault's pendulum ro-
tates, and so on. All these phenomena disappear if
the earth is at rest and the other heavenly bodies are
affected with absolute motion round it, such that the
same *relative* rotation is produced. This is, indeed, the
case, if we start *ab initio* from the idea of absolute space.

But if we take our stand on the basis of facts, we shall find we have knowledge only of *relative* spaces and motions. *Relatively*, not considering the unknown and neglected medium of space, the motions of the universe are the same whether we adopt the Ptolemaic or the Copernican mode of view. Both views are, indeed, equally *correct*; only the latter is more simple and more *practical*. The universe is not *twice* given, with an earth at rest and an earth in motion; but only *once*, with its *relative* motions, alone determinable. It is, accordingly, not permitted us to say how things would be if the earth did not rotate. We may interpret the one case that is given us, in different ways. If, however, we so interpret it that we come into conflict with experience, our interpretation is simply wrong. The principles of mechanics can, indeed, be so conceived, that even for relative rotations centrifugal forces arise.

Interpreta- Newton's experiment with the rotating vessel of
tion of the
experiment water simply informs us, that the relative rotation of
with the
rotating the water with respect to the sides of the vessel pro-
bucket of
water. duces *no* noticeable centrifugal forces, but that such forces *are* produced by its relative rotation with respect to the mass of the earth and the other celestial bodies. No one is competent to say how the experiment would turn out if the sides of the vessel increased in thickness and mass till they were ultimately several leagues thick. The one experiment only lies before us, and our business is, to bring it into accord with the other facts known to us, and not with the arbitrary fictions of our imagination.

6. We can have no doubts concerning the significance of the law of inertia if we bear in mind the manner in which it was reached. To begin with, Galileo discovered the constancy of the velocity and direction

of a body referred to terrestrial objects. Most terres- The law of inertia in the light of this view.
trial motions are of such brief duration and extent, that
it is wholly unnecessary to take into account the earth's
rotation and the changes of its progressive velocity with
respect to the celestial bodies. This consideration is
found necessary only in the case of projectiles cast
great distances, in the case of the vibrations of Fou-
cault's pendulum, and in similar instances. When now
Newton sought to apply the mechanical principles dis-
covered since Galileo's time to the planetary system,
he found that, so far as it is possible to form any es-
timate at all thereof, the planets, irrespectively of dy-
namic effects, appear to preserve their direction and
velocity with respect to bodies of the universe that are
very remote and as regards each other apparently fixed,
the same as bodies moving on the earth do with re-
spect to the fixed objects of the earth. The comport-
ment of terrestrial bodies with respect to the earth is
reducible to the comportment of the earth with respect
to the remote heavenly bodies. If we were to assert
that we knew more of moving objects than this their
last-mentioned, experimentally-given comportment
with respect to the celestial bodies, we should render
ourselves culpable of a *falsity*. When, accordingly, we
say, that a body preserves unchanged its direction and
velocity *in space*, our assertion is nothing more or less
than an abbreviated reference to *the entire universe*.
The use of such an abbreviated expression is permit-
ted the original author of the principle, because he
knows, that as things are no difficulties stand in the
way of carrying out its implied directions. But no
remedy lies in his power, if difficulties of the kind men-
tioned present themselves; if, for example, the re-
quisite, relatively fixed bodies are wanting.

The rela-
tion of the
bodies of
the uni-
verse to
each other.

7. Instead, now, of referring a moving body K to space, that is to say to a system of coördinates, let us view directly its relation to the bodies of the universe, by which alone such a system of coördinates can be determined. Bodies very remote from each other, moving with constant direction and velocity with respect to other distant fixed bodies, change their mutual distances proportionately to the time. We may also say, All very remote bodies—all mutual or other forces neglected—alter their mutual distances proportionately to those distances. Two bodies, which, situated at a short distance from one another, move with constant direction and velocity with respect to other fixed bodies, exhibit more complicated relations. If we should regard the two bodies as dependent on one another, and call r the distance, t the time, and a a constant dependent on the directions and velocities, the formula would be obtained: $d^2r/dt^2 = (1/r)\,[a^2 - (dr/dt)^2]$. It is manifestly much *simpler* and *clearer* to regard the two bodies as independent of each other and to consider the constancy of their direction and velocity with respect to other bodies.

Instead of saying, the direction and velocity of a mass μ in space remain constant, we may also employ the expression, the mean acceleration of the mass μ with respect to the masses m, m', m''. . . . at the distances r, r', r''. . . . is $= 0$, or $d^2(\Sigma mr/\Sigma m)/dt^2 = 0$. The latter expression is equivalent to the former, as soon as we take into consideration a sufficient number of sufficiently distant and sufficiently large masses. The mutual influence of more proximate small masses, which are apparently not concerned about each other, is eliminated of itself. That the constancy of direction and velocity is given by the condition adduced, will be

seen at once if we construct through μ as vertex cones that cut out different portions of space, and set up the condition with respect to the masses of these separate portions. We may put, indeed, for the *entire* space encompassing μ, $d^2 (\Sigma m r / \Sigma m) / d t^2 = 0$. But the equation in this case asserts nothing with respect to the motion of μ, since it holds good for all species of motion where μ is uniformly surrounded by an infinite number of masses. If two masses μ_1, μ_2 exert on each other a force which is dependent on their distance r, then $d^2 r / d t^2 = (\mu_1 + \mu_2) f(r)$. But, at the same time, the acceleration of the centre of gravity of the two masses or the mean acceleration of the mass-system with respect to the masses of the universe (by the principle of reaction) remains $= 0$; that is to say,

$$\frac{d^2}{d t^2} \left[\mu_1 \frac{\Sigma m r_1}{\Sigma m} + \mu_2 \frac{\Sigma m r_2}{\Sigma m} \right] = 0.$$

When we reflect that the time-factor that enters into the acceleration is nothing more than a quantity that is the measure of the distances (or angles of rotation) of the bodies of the universe, we see that even in the simplest case, in which apparently we deal with the mutual action of only *two* masses, the neglecting of the rest of the world is *impossible*. Nature does not begin with elements, as we are obliged to begin with them. It is certainly fortunate for us, that we can, from time to time, turn aside our eyes from the overpowering unity of the All, and allow them to rest on individual details. But we should not omit, ultimately to complete and correct our views by a thorough consideration of the things which for the time being we left out of account.

8. The considerations just presented show, that it

is not necessary to refer the law of inertia to a special absolute space. On the contrary, it is perceived that the masses that in the common phraseology exert forces on each other as well as those that exert none, stand with respect to acceleration in quite similar relations. We may, indeed, regard *all* masses as related to each other. That *accelerations* play a prominent part in the relations of the masses, must be accepted as a fact of experience ; which does not, however, exclude attempts to *elucidate* this fact by a comparison of it with other facts, involving the discovery of new points of view. In all the processes of nature the *differences* of certain quantities *u* play a determinative rôle. Differences of temperature, of potential function, and so forth, induce the natural processes, which consist in the equalisation of
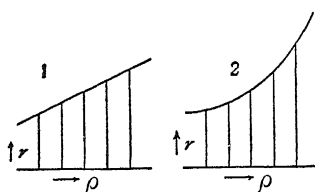
Fig. 143.

Natural processes consist in the equalisation of the differences of quantities. these differences. The familiar expressions d^2u/dx^2, d^2u/dy^2, d^2u/dz^2, which are determinative of the character of the equalisation, may be regarded as the measure of the departure of the condition of any point from the mean of the conditions of its environment— to which mean the point tends. The accelerations of masses may be analogously conceived. The great distances between masses that stand in no especial force-relation to one another, change *proportionately to each other.* If we lay off, therefore, a certain distance ρ as abscissa, and another r as ordinate, we obtain a straight line. (Fig. 143.) Every r-ordinate corresponding to a definite ρ-value represents, accordingly, the mean of the adjacent ordinates. If a force-relation exists between the bodies, some value d^2r/dt^2 is determined

by it which conformably to the remarks above we may replace by an expression of the form $d^2r/d\rho^2$. By the force-relation, therefore, a *departure* of the *r*-ordinate from the *mean of the adjacent ordinates* is produced, which would not exist if the supposed force-relation did not obtain. This intimation will suffice here.

9. We have attempted in the foregoing to give the law of inertia a different expression from that in ordinary use. This expression will, so long as a sufficient number of bodies are apparently fixed in space, accomplish the same as the ordinary one. It is as easily applied, and it encounters the same difficulties. In the one case we are unable to come at an absolute space, in the other a limited number of masses only is within the reach of our knowledge, and the summation indicated can consequently not be fully carried out. It is impossible to say whether the new expression would still represent the true condition of things if the stars were to perform rapid movements among one another. The general experience cannot be constructed from the particular case given us. We must, on the contrary, *wait* until such an experience presents itself. Perhaps when our physico-astronomical knowledge has been extended, it will be offered somewhere in celestial space, where more violent and complicated motions take place than in our environment. The most important result of our reflexions is, however, *that precisely the apparently simplest mechanical principles are of a very complicated character, that these principles are founded on uncompleted experiences, nay on experiences that never can be fully completed, that practically, indeed, they are sufficiently secured, in view of the tolerable stability of our environment, to serve as the foundation of mathematical deduction, but that they can by no means themselves be re-*

garded as mathematically established truths but only as principles that not only admit of constant control by experience but actually require it. This perception is valuable in that it is propitious to the advancement of science. (Compare Appendix, XX., p. 542.)

VII.

SYNOPTICAL CRITIQUE OF THE NEWTONIAN ENUNCIATIONS.

Newton's Definitions.

1. Now that we have discussed the details with sufficient particularity, we may pass again under review the form and the disposition of the Newtonian enunciations. Newton premises to his work several definitions, following which he gives the laws of motion. We shall take up the former first.

Mass.

"*Definition I.* The quantity of any matter is the "measure of it by its density and volume conjointly. "... This quantity is what I shall understand by the "term *mass* or *body* in the discussions to follow. It is "ascertainable from the weight of the body in ques-"tion. For I have found, by pendulum-experiments "of high precision, that the mass of a body is propor-"tional to its weight; as will hereafter be shown.

Quantity of motion, inertia, force, and acceleration.

"*Definition II.* Quantity of motion is the measure "of it by the velocity and quantity of matter con-"jointly.

"*Definition III.* The resident force [*vis insita*, i. e. "the inertia] of matter is a power of resisting, by "which every body, so far as in it lies, perseveres in "its state of rest or of uniform motion in a straight "line.

"*Definition IV.* An impressed force is any action "upon a body which changes, or tends to change, its "state of rest, or of uniform motion in a straight line.

"*Definition V.* A centripetal force is any force by
'which bodies are drawn or impelled towards, or tend
'in any way to reach, some point as centre.

"*Definition VI.* The absolute quantity of a centri-
'petal force is a measure of it increasing and dimin-
'ishing with the efficacy of the cause that propagates
'it from the centre through the space round about.

"*Definition VII.* The accelerative quantity of a
'centripetal force is the measure of it proportional to
'the velocity which it generates in a given time.

"*Definition VIII.* The moving quantity of a cen-
'tripetal force is the measure of it proportional to the
'motion [See Def. II.] which it generates in a given
'time.

"The three quantities or measures of force thus dis-
'tinguished, may, for brevity's sake, be called abso-
'lute, accelerative, and moving forces, being, for dis-
'tinction's sake, respectively referred to the centre of
'force, to the places of the bodies, and to the bodies
'that tend to the centre : that is to say, I refer moving
'force to the body, as being an endeavor of the whole
'towards the centre, arising from the collective en-
'deavors of the several parts ; accelerative force to the
'place of the body, as being a sort of efficacy originat-
'ing in the centre and diffused throughout all the sev-
'eral places round about, in moving the bodies that
'are at these places ; and absolute force to the centre,
'as invested with some cause, without which moving
'forces would not be propagated through the space
'round about ; whether this latter cause be some cen-
'tral body, (such as is a loadstone in a centre of mag-
'netic force, or the earth in the centre of the force of
'gravity,) or anything else not visible. This, at least,
'is the mathematical conception of forces ; for their

"physical causes and seats I do not in this place con-
"sider.

"Accelerating force, therefore, is to moving force,
"as velocity is to quantity of motion. For quantity
"of motion arises from the velocity and the quantity
"of matter; and moving force arises from the accel-
"erating force and the same quantity of matter; the
"sum of the effects of the accelerative force on the sev-
"eral particles of the body being the motive force of
"the whole. Hence, near the surface of the earth,
"where the accelerative gravity or gravitating force is
"in all bodies the same, the motive force of gravity or
"the weight is as the body [mass]. But if we ascend
"to higher regions, where the accelerative force of
"gravity is less, the weight will be equally diminished,
"always remaining proportional conjointly to the mass
"and the accelerative force of gravity. Thus, in those
"regions where the accelerative force of gravity is half
"as great, the weight of a body will be diminished by
"one-half. Further, I apply the terms accelerative and
"motive in one and the same sense to attractions and
"to impulses. I employ the expressions attraction, im-
"pulse, or propensity of any kind towards a centre,
"promiscuously and indifferently, the one for the other;
"considering those forces not in a physical sense, but
"mathematically. The reader, therefore, must not
"infer from any expressions of this kind that I may
"use, that I take upon me to explain the kind or the
"mode of an action, or the causes or the physical rea-
"son thereof, or that I attribute forces in a true or
"physical sense, to centres (which are only mathemat-
"ical points), when at any time I happen to say that
"centres attract or that central forces are in action."

2. Definition I is, as has already been set forth, a Criticism of Newton's Definitions pseudo-definition. The concept of mass is not made clearer by describing mass as the product of the volume into the density, as density itself denotes simply the mass of unit of volume. The true definition of mass can be deduced only from the dynamical relations of bodies.

To Definition II, which simply enunciates a mode of computation, no objection is to be made. Definition III (inertia), however, is rendered superfluous by Definitions IV–VIII of force, inertia being included and given in the fact that forces are accelerative.

Definition IV defines force as the cause of the acceleration, or tendency to acceleration, of a body. The latter part of this is justified by the fact that in the cases also in which accelerations cannot take place, other attractions that answer thereto, as the compression and distension etc. of bodies occur. The cause of an acceleration towards a definite centre is defined in Definition V as centripetal force, and is distinguished in VI, VII, and VIII as absolute, accelerative, and motive. It is, we may say, a matter of taste and of form whether we shall embody the explication of the idea of force in one or in several definitions. In point of principle the Newtonian definitions are open to no objections.

3. The Axioms or Laws of Motion then follow, of Newton's Laws of Motion. which Newton enunciates three :

"*Law I.* Every body perseveres in its state of rest "or of uniform motion in a straight line, except in so "far as it is compelled to change that state by im- "pressed forces."

"*Law II.* Change of motion [i. e. of momentum] is "proportional to the moving force impressed, and takes

"place in the direction of the straight line in which
"such force is impressed."

"*Law III.* Reaction is always equal and opposite
"to action; that is to say, the actions of two bodies
"upon each other are always equal and directly op-
"posite."

Newton appends to these three laws a number of
Corollaries. The first and second relate to the prin-
ciple of the parallelogram of forces; the third to the
quantity of motion generated in the mutual action of
bodies; the fourth to the fact that the motion of the
centre of gravity is not changed by the mutual action
of bodies; the fifth and sixth to relative motion.

Criticism of
Newton's
laws of
motion.
4. We readily perceive that Laws I and II are con-
tained in the definitions of force that precede. Ac-
cording to the latter, without force there is no accel-
eration, consequently only rest or uniform motion in a
straight line. Furthermore, it is wholly unnecessary
tautology, after having established acceleration as the
measure of force, to say again that change of motion is
proportional to the force. It would have been enough
to say that the definitions premised were not arbitrary
mathematical ones, but correspond to properties of
bodies experimentally given. The third law apparently
contains something new. But we have seen that it is
unintelligible without the correct idea of mass, which
idea, being itself obtained only from dynamical expe-
rience, renders the law unnecessary.

The corol-
laries to
these laws.
The first corollary really does contain something
new. But it regards the accelerations determined in
a body *K* by different bodies *M, N, P* as *self-evidently*
independent of each other, whereas this is precisely
what should have been explicitly recognised as a *fact
of experience.* Corollary Second is a simple applica-

tion of the law enunciated in corollary First. The remaining corollaries, likewise, are simple deductions, that is, mathematical consequences, from the conceptions and laws that precede.

5. Even if we adhere absolutely to the Newtonian points of view, and disregard the complications and indefinite features mentioned, which are not removed but merely concealed by the abbreviated designations "Time" and "Space," it is possible to replace Newton's enunciations by much more simple, methodically better arranged, and more satisfactory propositions. Such, in our estimation, would be the following :

a. Experimental Proposition. Bodies set opposite each other induce in each other, under certain circumstances to be specified by experimental physics, contrary *accelerations* in the direction of their line of junction. (The principle of inertia is included in this.)

b. Definition. The mass-ratio of any two bodies is the negative inverse ratio of the mutually induced accelerations of those bodies.

c. Experimental Proposition. The mass-ratios of bodies are independent of the character of the physical states (of the bodies) that condition the mutual accelerations produced, be those states electrical, magnetic, or what not; and they remain, moreover, the same, whether they are mediately or immediately arrived at.

d. Experimental Proposition. The accelerations which any number of bodies *A, B, C* . . . . induce in a body *K*, are independent of each other. (The principle of the parallelogram of forces follows immediately from this.)

e. Definition. Moving force is the product of the mass-value of a body into the acceleration induced in that body.

Then the remaining arbitrary definitions of the algebraical expressions "momentum," "vis viva," and the like, might follow. But these are by no means indispensable. The propositions above set forth satisfy the requirements of simplicity and parsimony which, on economico-scientific grounds, must be exacted of them. They are, moreover, obvious and clear ; for no doubt can exist with respect to any one of them either concerning its meaning or its source ; and we always know whether it asserts an experience or an arbitrary convention.

6. Upon the whole, we may say, that Newton discerned in an admirable manner the concepts and principles that were *sufficiently assured* to allow of being further built upon. It is possible that to some extent he was forced by the difficulty and novelty of his subject, in the minds of the contemporary world, to great amplitude, and, therefore, to a certain disconnectedness of presentation, in consequence of which one and the same property of mechanical processes appears several times formulated. To some extent, however, he was, as it is possible to prove, not perfectly clear himself concerning the import and especially concerning the source of his principles. This cannot, however, obscure in the slightest his intellectual greatness. He that has to acquire a new point of view naturally cannot possess it so securely from the beginning as they that receive it unlaboriously from him. He has done enough if he has discovered truths on which future generations can further build. For every new inference therefrom affords at once a new insight, a new control, an extension of our prospect, and a clarification of our field of view. Like the commander of an army, a great discoverer cannot stop to institute petty

inquiries regarding the right by which he holds each post of vantage he has won. The magnitude of the problem to be solved leaves no time for this. But at a later period, the case is different. Newton might well have expected of the two centuries to follow that they should further examine and confirm the foundations of his work, and that, when times of greater scientific tranquillity should come, the principles of the subject might acquire an even higher philosophical interest than all that is deducible from them. Then problems arise like those just treated of, to the solution of which, perhaps, a small contribution has here been made. We join with the eminent physicists Thomson and Tait, in our reverence and admiration of Newton. But we can only comprehend with difficulty their opinion that the Newtonian doctrines still remain the best and most philosophical foundation of the science that can be given.

The achievements of Newton in the light of subsequent research.

VIII.

RETROSPECT OF THE DEVELOPMENT OF DYNAMICS.

1. If we pass in review the period in which the development of dynamics fell,—a period inaugurated by Galileo, continued by Huygens, and brought to a close by Newton,—its main result will be found to be the perception, that bodies mutually determine in each other *accelerations* dependent on definite spatial and material circumstances, and that there are *masses.* The reason the perception of these facts was embodied in so great a number of principles is wholly an historical one ; the perception was not reached at once, but slowly and by degrees. In reality only *one* great fact was established. Different pairs of bodies determine, independently of each other, and mutually, in themselves,

The chief result, the discovery of one great fact.

pairs of accelerations, whose terms exhibit a constant
ratio, the criterion and characteristic of each pair.

Not even men of the calibre of Galileo, Huygens,
and Newton were able to perceive this fact at once.
Even they could only discover it piece by piece, as it
is expressed in the law of falling bodies, in the special
law of inertia, in the principle of the parallelogram of
forces, in the concept of mass, and so forth. To-day,
no difficulty any longer exists in apprehending the unity
of the whole fact. The practical demands of communi-
cation alone can justify its piecemeal presentation in
several distinct principles, the number of which is really
only determined by scientific taste. What is more, a
reference to the reflections above set forth respecting
the ideas of time, inertia, and the like, will surely con-
vince us that, accurately viewed, the entire fact has,
in all its aspects, not yet been perfectly apprehended.

The point of view reached has, as Newton expressly
states, nothing to do with the "unknown causes" of
natural phenomena. That which in the mechanics of
the present day is called *force* is not a something that
lies latent in the natural processes, but a measurable,
actual circumstance of motion, the product of the mass
into the acceleration. Also when we speak of the at-
tractions or repulsions of bodies, it is not necessary to
think of any hidden causes of the motions produced.
We signalise by the term attraction merely an actually
existing *resemblance* between events determined by con-
ditions of motion and the results of our volitional im-
pulses. In both cases either actual motion occurs or,
when the motion is counteracted by some other circum-
stance of motion, distortion, compression of bodies,
and so forth, are produced.

2. The work which devolved on genius here, was

the noting of the connection of certain determinative elements of the mechanical processes. The precise establishment of the form of this connection was rather a task for plodding research, which created the different concepts and principles of mechanics. We can determine the true value and significance of these principles and concepts only by the investigation of their historical origin. In this it appears unmistakable at times, that accidental circumstances have given to the course of their development a peculiar direction, which under other conditions might have been very different. Of this an example shall be given.

Before Galileo assumed the familiar fact of the de- pendence of the final velocity on the time, and put it to the test of experiment, he essayed, as we have already seen, a different hypothesis, and made the final velocity proportional to the *space* described. He imagined, by a course of fallacious reasoning, likewise already referred to, that this assumption involved a self-contradiction. His reasoning was, that twice any given distance of descent must, by virtue of the double final velocity acquired, necessarily be traversed in the same time as the simple distance of descent. But since the first half is necessarily traversed first, the remaining half will have to be traversed instantaneously, that is in an interval of time not measurable. Whence, it readily follows, that the descent of bodies generally is instantaneous.

The fallacies involved in this reasoning are manifest. Galileo was, of course, not versed in mental integrations, and having at his command no adequate methods for the solution of problems whose facts were in any degree complicated, he could not but fall into mistakes whenever such cases were presented. If we call s the distance and t the time, the Galilean assumption reads

in the language of to-day $ds/dt = as$, from which follows $s = A \varepsilon^{at}$, where a is a constant of experience and A a constant of integration. This is an entirely different conclusion from that drawn by Galileo. It does not conform, it is true, to experience, and Galileo would probably have taken exception to a result that, as a condition of motion generally, made s different from 0 when t equalled 0. But in itself the assumption is by no means *self*-contradictory.

Let us suppose that Kepler had put to himself the same question. Whereas Galileo always sought after the very simplest solutions of things, and at once rejected hypotheses that did not fit, Kepler's mode of procedure was entirely different. He did not quail before the most complicated assumptions, but worked his way, by the constant gradual modification of his original hypothesis, successfully to his goal, as the history of his discovery of the laws of planetary motion fully shows. Most likely, Kepler, on finding the assumption $ds/dt = as$ would not work, would have tried a number of others, and among them probably the correct one $ds/dt = a\sqrt{s}$. But from this would have resulted an essentially different course of development for the science of dynamics.

It was only gradually and with great difficulty that the concept of "work" attained its present position of importance; and in our judgment it is to the above-mentioned trifling historical circumstance that the difficulties and obstacles it had to encounter are to be ascribed. As the interdependence of the velocity and the time was, as it chanced, first ascertained, it could not be otherwise than that the relation $v = gt$ should appear as the original one, the equation $s = gt^2/2$ as the next immediate, and $gs = v^2/2$ as a remoter inference. In-

troducing the concepts mass (m) and force (p), where $p = mg$, we obtain, by multiplying the three equations by m, the expressions $mv = pt$, $ms = pt^2/2$, $ps = mv^2/2$—the fundamental equations of mechanics. Of necessity, therefore, the concepts force and momentum (mv) appear more primitive than the concepts work (ps) and *vis viva* (mv^2). It is not to be wondered at, accordingly, that, wherever the idea of work made its appearance, it was always sought to replace it by the historically older concepts. The entire dispute of the Leibnitzians and Cartesians, which was first composed in a manner by D'Alembert, finds its complete explanation in this fact.

From an unbiassed point of view, we have exactly the same right to inquire after the interdependence of the final velocity and the time as after the interdependence of the final velocity and the distance, and to answer the question by experiment. The first inquiry leads us to the experiential truth, that given bodies in contraposition impart to each other in given *times* definite increments of velocity. The second informs us, that given bodies in contraposition impart to each other for given mutual *displacements* definite increments of velocities. Both propositions are equally justified, and both may be regarded as equally original.

The correctness of this view has been substantiated in our own day by the example of J. R. Mayer. Mayer, a modern mind of the Galilean stamp, a mind wholly free from the influences of the schools, of his own independent accord actually pursued the last-named method, and produced by it an extension of science which the schools did not accomplish until later in a much less complete and less simple form. For Mayer, *work* was the original concept. That which is called

work in the mechanics of the schools, he calls force. Mayer's error was, that he regarded his method as the only correct one.

The results which flow from it. 3. We may, therefore, as it suits us, regard the *time* of descent or the *distance* of descent as the factor determinative of velocity. If we fix our attention on the first circumstance, the concept of force appears as the original notion, the concept of work as the derived one. If we investigate the influence of the second fact first, the concept of work is the original notion. In the transference of the ideas reached in the observation of the motion of descent to more complicated relations, force is recognised as dependent on the *distance* between the bodies—that is, as a function of the distance, $f(r)$. The work done through the element of distance dr is then $f(r)\,dr$. By the second method of investigation work is also obtained as a function of the distance, $F(r)$; but in this case we know force only in the form $d.F(r)/dr$—that is to say, as the limiting value of the ratio : (increment of work)/(increment of distance.)

The preferences of the different inquirers. Galileo cultivated by preference the first of these two methods. Newton likewise preferred it. Huygens pursued the second method, without at all restricting himself to it. Descartes elaborated Galileo's ideas after a fashion of his own. But his performances are insignificant compared with those of Newton and Huygens, and their influence was soon totally effaced. After Huygens and Newton, the mingling of the two spheres of thought, the independence and equivalence of which are not always noticed, led to various blunders and confusions, especially in the dispute between the Cartesians and Leibnitzians, already referred to, concerning the measure of force. In recent times, however, inquirers turn by preference now to the one and now to

the other. Thus the Galileo-Newtonian ideas are culti-
vated with preference by the school of Poinsot, the
Galileo-Huygenian by the school of Poncelet.

4. Newton operates almost exclusively with the no- The impor-
tions of force, mass, and momentum. His sense of the tance and
history of
value of the concept of mass places him above his prede- the New-
tonian con-
cessors and contemporaries. It did not occur to Galileo cept of
mass.
that mass and weight were different things. Huygens,
too, in all his considerations, puts weights for masses ;
as for example in his investigations concerning the
centre of oscillation. Even in the treatise *De Percus-*
sione (On Impact), Huygens always says "corpus ma-
jus," the larger body, and "corpus minus," the smaller
body, when he means the larger or the smaller mass.
Physicists were not led to form the concept mass till
they made the discovery that the *same* body can by the
action of gravity receive different accelerations. The
first occasion of this discovery was the pendulum-ob-
servations of Richer (1671–1673),—from which Huy-
gens at once drew the proper inferences,—and the
second was the extension of the dynamical laws to the
heavenly bodies. The importance of the first point may
be inferred from the fact that Newton, to prove the pro-
portionality of mass and weight on the same spot of the
earth, personally instituted accurate observations on
pendulums of different materials (*Principia.* Lib. II,
Sect. VI, *De Motu et Resistentia Corporum Funependu-*
lorum). In the case of John Bernoulli, also, the first
distinction between mass and weight (in the *Meditatio*
de Natura Centri Oscillationis. Opera Omnia, Lausanne
and Geneva, Vol. II, p. 168) was made on the ground
of the fact that the same body can receive different
gravitational accelerations. Newton, accordingly, dis-
poses of all dynamical questions involving the relations

of several bodies to each other, by the help of the ideas of force, mass, and momentum.

5. Huygens pursued a different method for the solution of these problems. Galileo had previously discovered that a body rises by virtue of the velocity acquired in its descent to exactly the same height as that from which it fell. Huygens, generalising the principle (in his *Horologium Oscillatorium*) to the effect that the centre of gravity of any system of bodies will rise by virtue of the velocities acquired in its descent to exactly the same height as that from which it fell, reached the principle of the equivalence of work and *vis viva*. The names of the formulæ which he obtained, were, of course, not supplied until long afterwards.

The Huygenian principle of work was received by the contemporary world with almost universal distrust. People contented themselves with making use of its brilliant consequences. It was always their endeavor to replace its deductions by others. Even after John and Daniel Bernoulli had extended the principle, it was its fruitfulness rather than its evidence that was valued.

We observe, that the Galileo-Newtonian principles were, on account of their greater simplicity and apparently greater evidency, invariably preferred to the Galileo-Huygenian. The employment of the latter is exacted only by necessity in cases in which the employment of the former, owing to the laborious attention to details demanded, is impossible ; as in the case of John and Daniel Bernoulli's investigations of the motion of fluids.

If we look at the matter closely, however, the same simplicity and evidence will be found to belong to the Huygenian principles as to the Newtonian proposi-

tions. That the velocity of a body is determined by the *time* of descent or determined by the *distance* of descent, are assumptions equally natural and equally simple. The *form* of the law must in both cases be supplied by experience. As a starting-point, therefore, $p\,t = m\,v$ and $p\,s = m\,v^2/2$ are equally well fitted.

6. When we pass to the investigation of the motion of several bodies, we are again compelled, in both cases, to take a second step of an equal degree of certainty. The Newtonian idea of mass is justified by the fact, that, if relinquished, all rules of action for events would have an end ; that we should forthwith have to expect contradictions of our commonest and crudest experiences ; and that the physiognomy of our mechanical environment would become unintelligible. The same thing must be said of the Huygenian principle of work. If we surrender the theorem $\Sigma\,p\,s = \Sigma\,m\,v^2/2$, heavy bodies will, by virtue of their own weights, be able to ascend higher ; all known rules of mechanical occurrences will have an end. The *instinctive* factors which entered alike into the discovery of the one view and of the other have been already discussed.

The two spheres of ideas could, of course, have grown up much more independently of each other. But in view of the fact that the two were constantly in contact, it is no wonder that they have become partially merged in each other, and that the Huygenian appears the less complete. Newton is all-sufficient with his forces, masses, and momenta. Huygens would likewise suffice with work, mass, and *vis viva*. But since he did not in his time completely possess the idea of mass, that idea had in subsequent applications to be borrowed from the other sphere. Yet this also could have been avoided. If with Newton the mass-ratio of

two bodies can be defined as the inverse ratio of the velocities generated by the same force, with Huygens it would be logically and consistently definable as the inverse ratio of the squares of the velocities generated by the same work.

The respective merits of each.

The two spheres of ideas consider the mutual dependence on each other of entirely different factors of the same phenomenon. The Newtonian view is in so far more complete as it gives us information regarding the motion of each mass. But to do this it is obliged to descend greatly into details. The Huygenian view furnishes a rule for the whole system. It is only a convenience, but it is then a mighty convenience, when the *relative velocities* of the masses are previously and independently known.

The general development of dynamics in the light of the preceding remarks.

7. Thus we are led to see, that in the development of dynamics, just as in the development of statics, the connection of widely different features of mechanical phenomena engrossed at different times the attention of inquirers. We may regard the momentum of a system as determined by the forces ; or, on the other hand, we may regard its *vis viva* as determined by the work. In the selection of the criteria in question the individuality of the inquirers has great scope. It will be conceived possible, from the arguments above presented, that our system of mechanical ideas might, perhaps, have been different, had Kepler instituted the first investigations concerning the motions of falling bodies, or had Galileo not committed an error in his first speculations. We shall recognise also that not only a knowledge of the ideas that have been accepted and cultivated by subsequent teachers is necessary for the historical understanding of a science, but also that the rejected and transient thoughts of the inquirers,

nay even apparently erroneous notions, may be very important and very instructive. The historical investigation of the development of a science is most needful, lest the principles treasured up in it become a system of half-understood prescripts, or worse, a system of *prejudices.* Historical investigation not only promotes the understanding of that which now is, but also brings new possibilities before us, by showing that which exists to be in great measure *conventional* and *accidental.* From the higher point of view at which different paths of thought converge we may look about us with freer powers of vision and discover routes before unknown.

In all the dynamical propositions that we have discussed, *velocity* plays a prominent rôle. The reason of this, in our view, is, that, accurately considered, every single body of the universe stands in some definite relation with every other body in the universe ; that any one body, and consequently also any several bodies, cannot be regarded as wholly isolated. Our inability to take in all things at a glance alone compels us to consider a few bodies and for the time being to *neglect* in certain aspects the others ; a step accomplished by the introduction of velocity, and therefore of time. We cannot regard it as impossible that *integral* laws, to use an expression of C. Neumann, will some day take the place of the laws of mathematical elements, or differential laws, that now make up the science of mechanics, and that we shall have direct knowledge of the dependence on one another of the *positions* of bodies. In such an event, the concept of force will have become superfluous. (See Appendix, XXI., p. 548, on *Hertz's Mechanics;* also Appendix XXII., p. 555, in answer to criticisms of the views expressed by the author in Chapters I. and II.)

CHAPTER III.

THE EXTENDED APPLICATION OF THE PRINCIPLES OF MECHANICS AND THE DEDUCTIVE DEVELOPMENT OF THE SCIENCE.

I.

SCOPE OF THE NEWTONIAN PRINCIPLES.

Newton's principles are universal in scope and power.

1. The principles of Newton suffice by themselves, without the introduction of any new laws, to explore thoroughly every mechanical phenomenon practically occurring, whether it belongs to statics or to dynamics. If difficulties arise in any such consideration, they are invariably of a mathematical, or formal, character, and in no respect concerned with questions of principle. We have given, let us suppose, a number of masses m_1, m_2, m_3. . . . in space, with definite initial velocities v_1, v_2, v_3. . . . We imagine, further, lines of junction drawn between every two masses. In the directions of these lines of junction are set up the accelerations and counter-accelerations, the dependence of which on the distance it is the business of physics to determine. In a small element of time τ the mass m_5, for example, will traverse in the direction of its initial velocity the distance $v_5\tau$, and in the directions of the lines joining
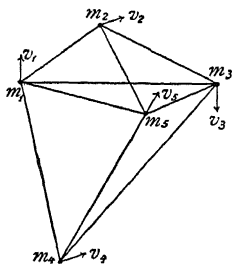
Fig. 144.

it with the masses m_1, m_2, m_3. . . ., being affected in such directions with the accelerations φ_1^5, φ_2^5, φ_3^5. . . ., the distances $(\varphi_1^5/2)\tau^2$, $(\varphi_2^5/2)\tau^2$, $(\varphi_3^5/2)\tau^2$. . . . If we imagine all these motions to be performed independently of each other, we shall obtain the new position of the mass m_5 after lapse of time τ. The composition of the velocities v_5 and $\varphi_1^5\tau$, $\varphi_2^5\tau$, $\varphi_3^5\tau$. . . . gives the new initial velocity at the end of time τ. We then allow a second small interval of time τ to elapse, and, making allowance for the new spatial relations of the masses, continue in the same way the investigation of the motion. In like manner we may proceed with every other mass. It will be seen, therefore, that, in point of principle, no embarrassment can arise; the difficulties which occur are solely of a mathematical character, where an exact solution in concise symbols, and not a clear insight into the momentary workings of the phenomenon, is demanded. If the accelerations of the mass m_5, or of several masses, collectively neutralise each other, the mass m_5 or the other masses mentioned are in equilibrium and will move uniformly onwards with their initial velocities. If, in addition, the initial velocities in question are $= 0$, both *equilibrium* and *rest* subsist for these masses.

Nor, where a number of the masses m_1, m_2 . . . . have considerable extension, so that it is impossible to speak of a *single* line joining every two masses, is the difficulty, in point of principle, any greater. We divide the masses into portions sufficiently small for our purpose, and draw the lines of junction mentioned between every two such portions. We, furthermore, take into account the reciprocal relation of the parts of the same large mass; which relation, in the case of rigid masses for instance, consists in the parts resisting

every alteration of their distances from one another. On the alteration of the distance between any two parts of such a mass an acceleration is observed proportional to that alteration. Increased distances diminish, and diminished distances increase in consequence of this acceleration. By the displacement of the parts with respect to one another, the familiar forces of elasticity are aroused. When masses meet in impact, their forces of elasticity do not come into play until contact and an incipient alteration of form take place.

A practical illustration of the scope of Newton's principles.   2. If we imagine a heavy perpendicular column resting on the earth, any particle m in the interior of the column which we may choose to isolate in thought, is in equilibrium and at rest. A vertical downward acceleration g is produced by the earth in the particle, which acceleration the particle obeys. But in so doing it approaches nearer to the particles lying beneath it, and the elastic forces thus awakened generate in m a vertical acceleration upwards, which ultimately, when the particle has approached near enough, becomes equal to g. The particles lying above m likewise approach m with the acceleration g. Here, again, acceleration and counter-acceleration are produced, whereby the particles situated above are brought to rest, but whereby m continues to be forced nearer and nearer to the particles beneath it until the acceleration downwards, which it receives from the particles above it, increased by g, is equal to the acceleration it receives in the upward direction from the particles beneath it. We may apply the same reasoning to every portion of the column and the earth beneath it, readily perceiving that the lower portions lie nearer each other and are more violently pressed together than the parts above. Every portion lies between a less closely pressed

upper portion and a more closely pressed lower por-
tion ; its downward acceleration *g* is neutralised by a
surplus of acceleration upwards, which it experiences
from the parts beneath. We comprehend the equilib-
rium and rest of the parts of the column by imagining
all the accelerated motions which the reciprocal rela-
tion of the earth and the parts of the column determine,
as in fact simultaneously performed. The apparent
mathematical sterility of this conception vanishes, and
it assumes at once an animate form, when we reflect
that in reality no body is completely at rest, but that
in all, slight tremors and disturbances are constantly
taking place which now give to the accelerations of de-
scent and now to the accelerations of elasticity a slight
preponderance. Rest, therefore, is a case of motion,
very infrequent, and, indeed, never completely realised.
The tremors mentioned are by no means an unfamiliar
phenomenon. When, however, we occupy ourselves
with cases of equilibrium, we are concerned simply with
a *schematic* reproduction in thought of the mechanical
facts. We then *purposely* neglect these disturbances,
displacements, bendings, and tremors, as here they
have no interest for us. All cases of this class, which
have a scientific or practical importance, fall within the
province of the so-called *theory of elasticity*. The whole
outcome of Newton's achievements is that we every-
where reach our goal with one and the same idea, and
by means of it are able to reproduce and construct be-
forehand all cases of equilibrium and motion. All
phenomena of a mechanical kind now appear to us
as uniform throughout and as made up of the same
elements.

3. Let us consider another example. Two mas-
ses *m*, *m* are situated at a distance *a* from each
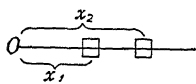
other. (Fig. 145.) When displaced with respect to
each other, elastic forces proportional to the change
of distance are supposed to be
awakened. Let the masses be
movable in the *X*-direction par-
allel to *a*, and their coördinates

Fig. 145.

be x_1, x_2. If a force f is applied at the point x_2, the
following equations obtain:

$$m \frac{d^2 x_1}{dt^2} = p[(x_2 - x_1) - a] \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad (1)$$

$$m \frac{d^2 x_2}{dt^2} = - p[(x_2 - x_1) - a] + f \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad (2)$$

where p stands for the force that one mass exerts on
the other when their mutual distance is altered by the
value 1. All the quantitative properties of the me-
chanical process are determined by these equations.
But we obtain these properties in a more comprehensi-
ble form by the integration of the equations. The ordi-
nary procedure is, to find by the repeated differentia-
tion of the equations before us new equations in suffi-
cient number to obtain by elimination equations in x_1
alone or x_2 alone, which are afterwards integrated. We
shall here pursue a different method. By subtracting
the first equation from the second, we get

$m \dfrac{d^2(x_2 - x_1)}{dt^2} = - 2p[(x_2 - x_1) - a] + f$, or

putting $x_2 - x_1 = u$,

$$m \frac{d^2 u}{dt^2} = - 2p[u - a] + f \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad (3)$$

and by the addition of the first and the second equa-
tions

$$m \frac{d^2(x_2 + x_1)}{dt^2} = f, \text{ or, putting } x_2 + x_1 = v,$$

$$m \frac{d^2 v}{dt^2} = f \quad \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \quad (4)$$

The integrals of (3) and (4) are respectively

$$u = A \sin\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t + B \cos\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t + a + \frac{f}{2p} \text{ and}$$

$$v = \frac{f}{m} \cdot \frac{t^2}{2} + Ct + D; \text{ whence}$$

$$x_1 = -\frac{A}{2} \sin\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t - \frac{B}{2} \cos\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t + \frac{f}{2m} \cdot \frac{t^2}{2}$$

$$+ Ct - \frac{a}{2} - \frac{f}{4p} + \frac{D}{2},$$

$$x_2 = \frac{A}{2} \sin\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t + \frac{B}{2} \cos\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t + \frac{f}{2m} \cdot \frac{t^2}{2}$$

$$+ Ct + \frac{a}{2} + \frac{f}{4p} + \frac{D}{2}.$$

To take a particular case, we will assume that the action of the force f begins at $t = 0$, and that at this time

$$x_1 = 0, \ \frac{dx_1}{dt} = 0$$

$$x_2 = a, \ \frac{dx_2}{dt} = 0,$$

that is, the initial positions are given and the initial velocities are $= 0$. The constants A, B, C, D being eliminated by these conditions, we get

$$(5) \quad x_1 = \frac{f}{4p} \cos\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t + \frac{f}{2m} \cdot \frac{t^2}{2} - \frac{f}{4p},$$

$$(6) \quad x_2 = -\frac{f}{4p} \cos\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t + \frac{f}{2m} \frac{t^2}{2} + a + \frac{f}{4p}, \text{ and}$$

$$(7) \quad x_2 - x_1 = -\frac{f}{2p} \cos\sqrt{\frac{2p}{m}} \cdot t + a + \frac{f}{2p}.$$

We see from (5) and (6) that the two masses, in addition to a uniformly accelerated motion with half the acceleration that the force f would impart to one of these masses alone, execute an oscillatory motion symmetrical with respect to their centre of gravity. The duration of this oscillatory motion, $T = 2\pi\sqrt{m/2p}$, is smaller in proportion as the force that is awakened in the same mass-displacement is greater (if our attention is directed to two particles of the same body, in proportion as the body is harder). The amplitude of oscillation of the oscillatory motion $f/2p$ likewise decreases with the magnitude p of the force of displacement generated. Equation (7) exhibits the periodic change of distance of the two masses during their progressive motion. The motion of an elastic body might in such case be characterised as vermicular. With hard bodies, however, the number of the oscillations is so great and their excursions so small that they remain unnoticed, and may be left out of account. The oscillatory motion, furthermore, vanishes, either gradually through the effect of some resistance, or when the two masses, at the moment the force f begins to act, are a distance $a + f/2p$ apart and have *equal* initial velocities. The distance $a + f/2p$ that the masses are apart after the vanishing of their vibratory motion, is $f/2p$ greater than the distance of equilibrium a. A tension y, namely, is set up by the action of f, by which the acceleration of the foremost mass is reduced to one-half whilst that of the mass following is increased by the same amount. In this, then, agreeably to our assumption, $py/m = f/2m$ or $y = f/2p$. As we see, it is in our power to determine the minutest details of a phenomenon of this character by the Newtonian principles. The investigation becomes (mathematically,

yet not in point of principle) more complicated when we conceive a body divided up into a great number of small parts that cohere by elasticity. Here also in the case of sufficient hardness the vibrations may be neglected. Bodies in which we purposely regard the mutual displacement of the parts as evanescent, are called *rigid* bodies.

4. We will now consider a case that exhibits the *schema of a lever.* We imagine the masses M, m_1, m_2 arranged in a triangle and joined by elastic connections. Every alteration of the sides, and consequently also every alteration of the angles, gives rise to accelerations, as the result of which the triangle endeavors to assume its previous form and size. By the aid of the Newtonian principles we can deduce from such a schema the laws of the lever, and at the same time feel that the *form* of the deduction, although it may be more complicated, still remains admissible when we pass from a *schematic* lever composed of three masses to the case of a *real* lever. The mass M we assume either to be in itself very large or conceive it joined by powerful elastic forces to other very large masses (the earth for instance). M then represents an immovable fulcrum.

<div style="float:right">The deduction of the laws of the lever by Newton's principles.</div>

Fig. 146.

Let m_1, now, receive from the action of some external force an acceleration f perpendicular to the line of junction $M m_2 = c + d$. Immediately a stretching of the lines $m_1 m_2 = b$ and $m_1 M = a$ is produced, and in the directions in question there are respectively set up the accelerations, as yet undetermined, s and σ, of which the components $s\,(e/b)$ and $\sigma\,(e/a)$ are directed

<div style="float:right">The method of the deduction</div>

oppositely to the acceleration f. Here e is the altitude of the triangle $m_1 m_2 M$. The mass m_2 receives the acceleration s', which resolves itself into the two components $s'(d/b)$ in the direction of M and $s'(e/b)$ parallel to f. The former of these determines a slight approach of m_2 to M. The accelerations produced in M by the reactions of m_1 and m_2, owing to its great mass, are imperceptible. We purposely neglect, therefore, the motion of M.

The mass m_1, accordingly, receives the acceleration $f - s(e/b) - \sigma(e/a)$, whilst the mass m_2 suffers the parallel acceleration $s'(e/b)$. Between s and σ a simple relation obtains. If, by supposition, we have a *very rigid* connection, the triangle is only imperceptibly distorted. The components of s and σ *perpendicular* to f destroy each other. For if this were at any one moment not the case, the greater component would produce a further distortion, which would immediately counteract its excess. The resultant of s and σ is therefore directly contrary to f, and consequently, as is readily obvious, $\sigma(c/a) = s(d/b)$. Between s and s', further, subsists the familiar relation $m_1 s = m_2 s'$ or $s = s'(m_2/m_1)$. Altogether m_2 and m_1 receive respectively the accelerations $s'(e/b)$ and $f - s'(e/b)(m_2/m_1)(\overline{c + d}/c)$, or, introducing in the place of the variable value $s'(e/b)$ the designation φ, the accelerations φ and $f - \varphi(m_2/m_1)(\overline{c + d}/c)$.

At the commencement of the distortion, the acceleration of m_1, owing to the increase of φ, diminishes, whilst that of m_2 increases. If we make the altitude e of the triangle very small, our reasoning still remains applicable. In this case, however, a becomes $= c = r_1$, and $a + b = c + d = r_2$. We see, moreover, that the distortion must continue, $\dot\varphi$ increase, and the accelera-

tion of m_1 diminish until the stage is reached at which
the accelerations of m_1 and m_2 bear to each other the
proportion of r_1 to r_2. This is equivalent to a *rotation*
of the whole triangle (without further distortion) about
M, which mass by reason of the vanishing accelera-
tions is at rest. As soon as rotation sets in, the rea-
son for further alterations of φ ceases. In such a case,
consequently,

$$\varphi = \frac{r_2}{r_1}\left\{ f - \varphi \frac{m_2}{m_1}\frac{r_2}{r_1} \right\} \text{ or } \varphi = r_2 \frac{r_1 m_1 f}{m_1 r_1{}^2 + m_2 r_2{}^2}.$$

For the angular acceleration ψ of the lever we get

$$\psi = \frac{\varphi}{r_2} = \frac{r_1 m_1 f}{m_1 r_1{}^2 + m_2 r_2{}^2}.$$

Nothing prevents us from entering still more into Discussion
of the char-
the details of this case and determining the distortions acter of the
preceding
and vibrations of the parts with respect to each other. result.
With sufficiently rigid connections, however, these de-
tails may be neglected. It will be perceived that we
have arrived, by the employment of the Newtonian prin-
ciples, at the same result to which the Huygenian view
also would have led us. This will not appear strange to
us if we bear in mind that the two views are in every re-
spect *equivalent*, and merely start from different aspects
of the same subject-matter. If we had pursued the
Huygenian method, we should have arrived more
speedily at our goal but with less insight into the de-
tails of the phenomenon. We should have employed
the work done in some displacement of m_1 to deter-
mine the *vires vivæ* of m_1 and m_2, wherein we should
have assumed that the velocities in question v_1, v'_2
maintained the ratio $v_1/v_2 = r_1/r_2$. The example
here treated is very well adapted to illustrate what
such an equation of condition means. The equation

simply asserts, that on the slightest deviations of v_1/v_2 from r_1/r_2 powerful forces are set in action which *in point of fact* prevent all further deviation. The bodies obey of course, not the *equations*, but the *forces*.

5. We obtain a very obvious case if we put in the example just treated $m_1 = m_2 = m$ and $a = b$ (Fig. 147). The dynamical state of the system ceases to change when $\varphi = 2(f - 2\varphi)$, that is, when the accel-
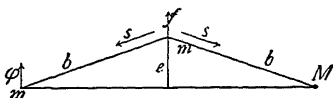
Fig. 147.

erations of the masses at the base and the vertex are given by $2f/5$ and $f/5$. At the commencement of the distortion φ increases, and simultaneously the acceleration of the mass at the vertex is decreased by double that amount, until the proportion subsists between the two of $2:1$.

We have yet to consider the case of *equilibrium* of a schematic lever, consisting (Fig. 148) of three masses m_1, m_2, and M, of which the last is again supposed
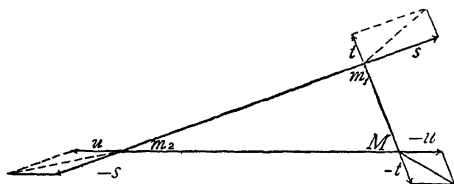
Fig. 148.

to be very large or to be elastically connected with very large masses. We imagine two equal and opposite forces s, $-s$ applied to m_1 and m_2 in the direction $m_1 m_2$, or, what is the same thing, accelerations impressed inversely proportional to the masses m_1, m_2. The stretching of the connection $m_1 m_2$ also generates

accelerations inversely proportional to the masses m_1, m_2, which neutralise the first ones and produce equilibrium. Similarly, along $m_1 M$ imagine the equal and contrary forces t, $— t$ operative ; and along $m_2 M$ the forces u, $— u$. In this case also equilibrium obtains. If M be elastically connected with masses sufficiently large, $— u$ and $— t$ need not be applied, inasmuch as the last-named forces are spontaneously evoked the moment the distortion begins, and always balance the forces opposed to them. Equilibrium subsists, accordingly, for the two equal and opposite forces s, $— s$ as well as for the wholly arbitrary forces t, u. As a matter of fact s, $— s$ destroy each other and t, u pass through the fixed mass M, that is, are destroyed on distortion setting in.

The condition of equilibrium readily reduces itself to the common form when we reflect that the moments of t and u, forces passing through M, are with respect to M zero, while the moments of s and $— s$ are equal and opposite. If we compound t and s to p, and u and $— s$ to q, then, by Varignon's *geometrical* principle of the parallelogram, the moment of p is equal to the sum of the moments of s and t, and the moment of q is equal to the sum of the moments of u and $— s$. The moments of p and q are therefore equal and opposite. Consequently, *any* two forces p and q will be in *equilibrium* if they produce in the direction $m_1 m_2$ equal and opposite components, by which condition the equality of the moments with respect to M is posited. That then the resultant of p and q also passes through M, is likewise obvious, for s and $— s$ destroy each other and t and u pass through M.

6. The Newtonian point of view, as the example just developed shows us, includes that of Varignon.

Newton's point of view includes Varignon's. We were right, therefore, when we characterised the statics of Varignon as a *dynamical* statics, which, starting from the fundamental ideas of modern dynamics, voluntarily restricts itself to the investigation of cases of equilibrium. Only in the statics of Varignon, owing to its abstract form, the significance of many operations, as for example that of the translation of the forces in their own directions, is not so distinctly exhibited as in the instance just treated.

The economy and wealth of the Newtonian ideas. The considerations here developed will convince us that we can dispose by the Newtonian principles of every phenomenon of a mechanical kind which may arise, provided we only take the pains to enter far enough into details. We literally *see through* the cases of equilibrium and motion which here occur, and behold the masses actually impressed with the accelerations they determine in one another. It is the same grand fact, which we recognise in the most various phenomena, or at least can recognise there if we make a point of so doing. Thus a unity, homogeneity, and economy of thought were produced, and a new and wide domain of physical conception opened which before Newton's time was unattainable.

The Newtonian and the modern, routine methods. Mechanics, however, is not altogether an end in itself; it has also *problems to solve* that touch the needs of practical life and affect the furtherance of other sciences. Those problems are now for the most part advantageously solved by other methods than the Newtonian,—methods whose equivalence to that has already been demonstrated. It would, therefore, be mere impractical pedantry to contemn all other advantages and insist upon always going back to the elementary Newtonian ideas. It is sufficient to have once convinced ourselves that this is always possible. Yet the New-

tonian conceptions are certainly the most *satisfactory* and the most lucid ; and Poinsot shows a noble sense of scientific clearness and simplicity in making these conceptions the sole foundation of the science.

<div align="center">II.</div>

THE FORMULÆ AND UNITS OF MECHANICS.

1. All the important formulæ of modern mechanics were discovered and employed in the period of Galileo and Newton. The particular designations, which, owing to the frequency of their use, it was found convenient to give them, were for the most part not fixed upon until long afterwards. The systematical mechanical units were not introduced until later still. Indeed, the last named improvement, cannot be regarded as having yet reached its completion. History of the formulæ and units of mechanics.

2. Let s denote the distance, t the time, v the instantaneous velocity, and φ the acceleration of a uniformly accelerated motion. From the researches of Galileo and Huygens, we derive the following equations : The original equations of Galileo and Huygens.

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} v = \varphi t \\[2mm] s = \dfrac{\varphi}{2} t^2 \\[2mm] \varphi s = \dfrac{v^2}{2} \end{array} \right\} \quad \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \quad (1)$$

Multiplying throughout by the mass m, these equations give the following : The introduction of "mass" and "moving force."

$$m v = m \varphi t$$

$$m s = \frac{m \varphi}{2} t^2$$

$$m \varphi s = \frac{m v^2}{2},$$

and, denoting the moving force $m\varphi$ by the letter p, we obtain

$$\left.\begin{array}{l} m\,v = p\,t \\[2mm] m\,s = \dfrac{p\,t^2}{2} \\[2mm] p\,s = \dfrac{m\,v^2}{2} \end{array}\right\} \quad \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \; (2)$$

Equations (1) all contain the quantity φ; and each contains in addition two of the quantities s, t, v, as exhibited in the following table:

$$\varphi \left\{\begin{array}{l} v,\,t \\ s,\,t \\ s,\,v \end{array}\right.$$

Equations (2) contain the quantities m, p, s, t, v; each containing m, p and in addition to m, p two of the three quantities s, t, v, according to the following table:

$$m,\,p \left\{\begin{array}{l} v,\,t \\ s,\,t \\ s,\,v \end{array}\right.$$

Questions concerning motions due to constant forces are answered by equations (2) in great variety. If, for example, we want to know the velocity v that a mass m acquires in the time t through the action of a force p, the first equation gives $v = p\,t/m$. If, on the other hand, the *time* be sought during which a mass m with the velocity v can move in opposition to a force p, the same equation gives us $t = m\,v/p$. Again, if we inquire after the *distance* through which m will move with velocity v in opposition to the force p, the third equation gives $s = m\,v^2/2\,p$. The two last questions illustrate, also, the futility of the Descartes-Leibnitzian dispute concerning the measure of force of a body in motion. The use of these equations greatly contributes

to confidence in dealing with mechanical ideas. Suppose, for instance, we put to ourselves, the question, what force p will impart to a given mass m the velocity v; we readily see that between m, p, and v *alone*, no equation exists, so that either s or t must be supplied, and consequently the question is an *indeterminate* one. We soon learn to recognise and avoid indeterminate cases of this kind. The distance that a mass m acted on by the force p describes in the time t, if moving with the initial velocity 0, is found by the second equation $s = p\,t^2/2\,m$.

3. Several of the formulæ in the above-discussed equations have received particular names. The force of a moving body was spoken of by Galileo, who alternately calls it "momentum," "impulse," and "energy." He regards this momentum as proportional to the product of the mass (or rather the weight, for Galileo had no clear idea of *mass*, and for that matter no more had Descartes, nor even Leibnitz) into the velocity of the body. Descartes accepted this view. He put the force of a moving body $= m\,v$, called it *quantity of motion*, and maintained that the sum-total of the quantity of motion in the universe remained constant, so that when one body lost momentum the loss was compensated for by an increase of momentum in other bodies. Newton also employed the designation "quantity of motion" for $m\,v$, and this name has been retained to the present day. [But *momentum* is the more usual term.] For the second member of the first equation, viz. $p\,t$, Belanger, proposed, as late as 1847, the name *impulse*.*
The expressions of the second equation have received

The names which the formulæ of the equations have received.

Momentum and impulse.

---

* See, also, Maxwell, *Matter and Motion*, American edition, page 72. But this word is commonly used in a different sense, namely, as "the limit of a force which is infinitely great but acts only during an infinitely short time." See Routh, *Rigid Dynamics*, Part I, pages 65–66.—*Trans.*

Vis viva and work.   no particular designations. Leibnitz (1695) called the expression $m v^2$ of the third equation *vis viva* or *living force*, and he regarded it, in opposition to Descartes, as the true measure of the force of a body in motion, calling the pressure of a body at rest *vis mortua*, or dead force. Coriolis found it more appropriate to give the term $\frac{1}{2} m v^2$ the name *vis viva*. To avoid confusion, Belanger proposed to call $m v^2$ *living force* and $\frac{1}{2} m v^2$ *living power* [now commonly called in English *kinetic energy*]. For ps Coriolis employed the name *work.* Poncelet confirmed this usage, and adopted the *kilogramme-metre* (that is, a force equal to the weight of a kilogramme acting through the distance of a metre) as the *unit of work.*

The history of the ideas quantity of motion and vis viva.   4. Concerning the historical details of the origin of these notions "quantity of motion" and "vis viva," a glance may now be cast at the ideas which led Descartes and Leibnitz to their opinions. In his *Principia Philosophiæ*, published in 1644, II, 36, DESCARTES expressed himself as follows :

     " Now that the nature of motion has been examined, " we must consider its cause, which may be conceived " in two senses : first, as a universal, original cause— " the general cause of all the motion in the world ; and " second, as a special cause, from which the individual " parts of matter receive motion which before they did " not have. As to the universal cause, it can mani- " festly be none other than God, who in the beginning " created matter with its motion and rest, and who now " preserves, by his simple ordinary concurrence, on the " whole, the same amount of motion and rest as he " originally created. For though motion is only a con- " dition of moving matter, there yet exists in matter " a definite quantity of it, which in the world at large

" never increases or diminishes, although in single por-
" tions it changes ; namely, in this way, that we must
" assume, in the case of the motion of a piece of matter
" which is moving twice as fast as another piece, but in
" quantity is only one half of it, that there is the same
" amount of motion in both, and that in the proportion
" as the motion of one part grows less, in the same pro-
" portion must the motion of another, equally large
" part grow greater. We recognise it, moreover, as
" a perfection of God, that He is not only in Himself
" unchangeable, but that also his modes of operation
" are most rigorous and constant ; so that, with the ex-
" ception of the changes which indubitable experience
" or divine revelation offer, and which happen, as our
" faith or judgment show, without any change in the
" Creator, we are not permitted to assume any others
" in his works—lest inconstancy be in any way pre-
" dicated of Him. Therefore, it is wholly rational to
" assume that God, since in the creation of matter he·
" imparted different motions to its parts, and preserves
" all matter in the same way and conditions in which
" he created it, so he similarly *preserves* in it *the same*
" *quantity of motion.*" (See Appendix, XXIII., p. 574.)

The merit of having first *sought after* a more uni-
versal and more fruitful point of view in mechanics,
cannot be denied Descartes. This is the peculiar task
of the philosopher, and it is an activity which con-
stantly exerts a fruitful and stimulating influence on
physical science.

Descartes, however, was infected with all the usual
errors of the philosopher. He places absolute confi-
dence in his own ideas. He never troubles himself to
put them to experiential test. On the contrary, a min-
imum of experience always suffices him for a maximum

of inference. Added to this, is the indistinctness of his conceptions. Descartes did not possess a clear idea of mass. It is hardly allowable to say that Descartes defined mv as momentum, although Descartes's scientific successors, feeling the need of more definite notions, adopted this conception. Descartes's greatest error, however,—and the one that vitiates all his physical inquiries,—is this, that many propositions appear to him self-evident *à priori* concerning the truth of which experience alone can decide. Thus, in the two paragraphs following that cited above (§§37–39) it is asserted as a self-evident proposition that a body preserves unchanged its velocity and direction. The experiences cited in §38 should have been employed, not as a confirmation of an *à priori* law of inertia, but as a foundation on which this law in an empirical sense should be based.

Leibnitz on quantity of motion.

Descartes's view was attacked by LEIBNITZ (1686) in the *Acta Eruditorum,* in a little treatise bearing the title : "A short Demonstration of a Remarkable Error of Descartes and Others, Concerning the Natural Law by which they think that the Creator always preserves the same Quantity of Motion ; by which, however, the Science of Mechanics is totally perverted."

In machines in equilibrium, Leibnitz remarks, the *loads* are inversely proportional to the velocities of displacement ; and in this way the idea arose that the product of a *body* ("corpus," "moles") into its *velocity* is the measure of force. This product Descartes regarded as a constant quantity. Leibnitz's opinion, however, is, that this measure of force is only accidentally the correct measure, in the case of the machines. The true measure of force is different, and must be determined by the method which Galileo and

Huygens pursued.   Every body rises by virtue of the velocity acquired in its descent to a height exactly equal to that from which it fell.   If, therefore, we as-sume, that the same "force" is requisite to raise a body m a height $4h$ as to raise a body $4m$ a height h, we must, since we know that in the first case the ve-locity acquired in descent is but twice as great as in the second, regard the product of a "body" into the *square* of its velocity as *the measure of force*.

In a subsequent treatise (1695), Leibnitz reverts to this subject.   He here makes a distinction between simple pressure (*vis mortua*) and the force of a moving body (*vis viva*), which latter is made up of the sum of the pressure-impulses.   These impulses produce, in-deed, an "impetus" (mv), but the impetus produced is not the true measure of force ; this, since the cause must be equivalent to the effect, is (in conformity with the preceding considerations) determined by mv^2. Leibnitz remarks further that the possibility of per-petual motion is excluded only by the acceptance of his measure of force.

Leibnitz, no more than Descartes, possessed a gen- uine concept of mass.   Where the necessity of such an idea occurs, he speaks of a body (*corpus*), of a load (*moles*), of different-sized bodies of the same specific gravity, and so forth.   Only in the second treatise, and there only once, does the expression "massa" occur, in all probability borrowed from Newton.   Still, to de-rive any definite results from Leibnitz's theory, we must associate with his expressions the notion of mass, as his successors actually did.   As to the rest, Leibnitz's procedure is much more in accordance with the meth-ods of science than Descartes's.   Two things, however, are confounded : the question of the *measure of force*

and the question of the *constancy* of the sums $\Sigma\, m\, v$ and $\Sigma\, m\, v^2$. The two have in reality nothing to do with each other. With regard to the first question, we now know that both the Cartesian and the Leibnitzian measure of force, or, rather, the measure of the effectiveness of a body in motion, have, each in a different sense, their justification. Neither measure, however, as Leibnitz himself correctly remarked, is to be confounded with the common, Newtonian, measure of force.

With regard to the second question, the later investigations of Newton really proved that for *free* material systems not acted on by external forces the Cartesian sum $\Sigma\, m\, v$ is a constant; and the investigations of Huygens showed that also the sum $\Sigma\, m\, v^2$ is a constant, provided *work* performed by forces does not alter it. The dispute raised by Leibnitz rested, therefore, on various *misunderstandings*. It lasted fifty-seven years, till the appearance of D'Alembert's *Traité de dynamique*, in 1743. To the theological ideas of Descartes and Leibnitz, we shall revert in another place.

5. The three equations above discussed, though they are only applicable to *rectilinear* motions produced by *constant* forces, may yet be considered the *fundamental equations* of mechanics. If the motion be rectilinear but the force variable, these equations pass by a slight, almost self-evident, modification into others, which we shall here only briefly indicate, since mathematical developments in the present treatise are wholly subsidiary.

From the first equation we get for variable forces $m\, v = \int p\, dt + C$, where p is the variable force, dt the time-element of the action, $\int p\, dt$ the sum of all the

products $p \cdot dt$ from the beginning to the end of the action, and C a constant quantity denoting the value of $m\,v$ before the force begins to act. The second equation passes in like manner into the forms $s = \int dt \int \dfrac{p}{m} dt + Ct + D$, with two so-called constants of integration. The third equation must be replaced by

$$\frac{m\,v^2}{2} = \int p \, ds + C.$$

Curvilinear motion may always be conceived as the product of the simultaneous combination of three rectilinear motions, best taken in three mutually perpendicular directions. Also for the components of the motion of this very general case, the above-given equations retain their significance.

6. The mathematical processes of addition, subtraction, and equating possess intelligible meaning only when applied to quantities of the same kind. We cannot add or equate masses and times, or masses and velocities, but only masses and masses, and so on. When, therefore, we have a mechanical equation, the question immediately presents itself whether the members of the equation are quantities of *the same kind*, that is, whether they can be measured by *the same* unit, or whether, as we usually say, the equation is *homogeneous*. The units of the quantities of mechanics will form, therefore, the next subject of our investigations. {.marginnote The units of mechanics.}

The choice of units, which are, as we know, quantities of the same kind as those they serve to measure, is in many cases arbitrary. Thus, an arbitrary mass is employed as the unit of mass, an arbitrary length is employed as the unit of length, an arbitrary time as the unit of time. The mass and the length employed as units can be preserved ; the time can be reproduced

Arbitrary units, and derived or absolute units. by pendulum-experiments and astronomical observations. But units like a unit of velocity, or a unit of acceleration, cannot be preserved, and are much more difficult to reproduce. These quantities are consequently so connected with the arbitrary fundamental units, mass, length, and time, that they can be easily and at once derived from them. Units of this class are called *derived* or *absolute* units. This latter designation is due to GAUSS, who first derived the magnetic units from the mechanical, and thus created the possibility of a universal comparison of magnetic measurements. The name, therefore, is of historical origin.

The derived units of velocity, acceleration, and force. As unit of velocity we might choose the velocity with which, say, q units of length are travelled over in unit of time. But if we did this, we could not express the relation between the time t, the distance s, and the velocity v by the usual simple formula $s = v t$, but should have to substitute for it $s = q \cdot v t$. If, however, we define the unit of velocity as the velocity with which the unit of length is travelled over in unit of time, we may retain the form $s = v t$. Among the derived units the simplest possible relations are made to obtain. Thus, as the unit of area and the unit of volume, the square and cube of the unit of length are always employed.

According to this, we assume then, that by unit velocity unit length is described in unit time, that by unit acceleration unit velocity is gained in unit time, that by unit force unit acceleration is imparted to unit mass, and so on.

The derived units depend on the arbitrary fundamental units ; they are functions of them. The function which corresponds to a given derived unit is called its *dimensions*. The theory of dimensions was laid down

by FOURIER, in 1822, in his *Theory of Heat.* Thus, if l The theory of dimensions.
denote a length, t a time, and m a mass, the dimen-
sions of a velocity, for instance, are l/t or lt^{-1}. After
this explanation, the following table will be readily un-
derstood :

NAMES	SYMBOLS	DIMENSIONS
Velocity	v	lt^{-1}
Acceleration	φ	lt^{-2}
Force	p	mlt^{-2}
Momentum	mv	mlt^{-1}
Impulse	pt	mlt^{-1}
Work	ps	ml^2t^{-2}
Vis viva	$\dfrac{mv^2}{2}$	ml^2t^{-2}
Moment of inertia	Θ	ml^2
Statical moment	D	ml^2t^{-2}

This table shows at once that the above-discussed equa-
tions are *homogeneous,* that is, contain only members of
the same kind. Every new expression in mechanics
might be investigated in the same manner.

7. The knowledge of the dimensions of a quantity The useful-ness of the theory of dimensions.
is also important for another reason. Namely, if the
value of a quantity is known for one set of fundamental
units and we wish to pass to another set, the value of
the quantity in the new units can be easily found from
the dimensions. The dimensions of an acceleration,
which has, say, the numerical value φ, are lt^{-2}. If
we pass to a unit of length λ times greater and to a
unit of time τ times greater, then a number λ times
smaller must take the place of l in the expression lt^{-2},
and a number τ times smaller the place of t. The
numerical value of the same acceleration referred to
the new units will consequently be $(\tau^2/\lambda)\,\varphi$. If we

take the metre as our unit of length, and the second as our unit of time, the acceleration of a falling body for example is 9·81, or as it is customary to write it, indicating at once the dimensions and the fundamental measures : 9·81 (metre/second^2). If we pass now to the kilometre as our unit of length ($\lambda = 1000$), and to the minute as our unit of time ($\tau = 60$), the value of the same acceleration of descent is (60 × 60/1000) 9·81, or 35·316 (kilometre/minute^2).

The International Bureau of Weights and Measures.

[8. The following statement of the mechanical units at present in use in the United States and Great Britain is substituted for the statement by Professor Mach of the units formerly in use on the continent of Europe. All the civilised governments have united in establishing an International Bureau of Weights and Measures in the Pavillon de Breteuil, in the Parc of St. Cloud, at Sèvres, near Paris. In some countries, the standards emanating from this office are exclusively legal ; in others, as the United States and Great Britain, they are optional in contracts, and are usual with physicists. These standards are a standard of length and a standard of *mass* (not *weight.*)

The international unit of length.

The unit of length is the International Metre, which is defined as the distance at the melting point of ice between the centres of two lines engraved upon the polished surface of a platiniridium bar, of a nearly X-shaped section, called the International Prototype Metre. Copies of this, called National Prototype Metres, are distributed to the different governments. The international metre is authoritatively declared to be identical with the former French metre, used until the adoption of the international standard ; and it is impossible to ascertain any error in this statement, be-

cause of doubt as to the length of the old metre, owing partly to the imperfections of the standard, and partly to obstacles now intentionally put in the way of such ascertainment. The French metre was defined as the distance, at the melting-point of ice, between the ends of a platinum bar, called the *mètre des archives.* It was against the law to touch the ends, which made it difficult to ascertain the distance between them. Nevertheless, there was a strong suspicion they had been dented. The *mètre des archives* was intended to be one ten-millionth of a quadrant of a terrestrial meridian. In point of fact such a quadrant is, according to Clarke, 32814820 feet, which is 10002015 metres.

The international unit of mass is the kilogramme, The inter-national which is the mass of a certain cylinder of platiniridium unit of mass. called the International Prototype Kilogramme. Each government has copies of it called National Prototype Kilogrammes. This mass was intended to be identical with the former French kilogramme, which was defined as the mass of a certain platinum cylinder called the *kilogramme des archives.* The platinum being somewhat spongy contained a variable amount of occluded gases, and had perhaps suffered some abrasion. The kilogramme is 1000 grammes ; and a gramme was intended to be the mass of a cubic centimetre of water at its temperature of maximum density, about 3·93° C. It is not known with a high degree of precision how nearly this is so, owing to the difficulty of the determination.

The regular British unit of length is the Imperial The British unit of Yard which is the distance at 62° F. between the cen- length. tres of two lines engraved on gold plugs inserted in a bronze bar usually kept walled up in the Houses of Parliament in Westminster. These lines are cut rela-

tively deep, and the burr is rubbed off and the surface
rendered mat, by rubbing with charcoal. The centre
of such a line can easily be displaced by rubbing ; which
is probably not true of the lines on the Prototype me-
tres. The temperature is, by law, ascertained by a
mercurial thermometer ; but it was not known, at the
time of the construction of the standard, that such
thermometers may give quite different readings, ac-
cording to the mode of their manufacture. The quality
of glass makes considerable difference, and the mode
of determining the fixed points makes still more. The
best way of marking these points is first to expose the
thermometer for several hours to wet aqueous vapor at
a known pressure, and mark on its stem the height of
the column of mercury. The thermometer is then
brought down to the temperature of melting ice, as
rapidly as possible, and is immersed in pounded ice
which is melting and from which the water is not
allowed to drain off. The mercury being watched
with a magnifying glass is seen to fall, to come to
rest, and to commence to rise, owing to the lagging
contraction of the glass. Its lowest point is marked
on the stem. The interval between the two marks is
then divided into equal degrees. When such a ther-
mometer is used, it is kept at the temperature to be
determined for as long a time as possible, and imme-
diately after is cooled as rapidly as it is safe to cool it,
and its zero is redetermined. Thermometers, so made
and treated, will give very constant indications. But
the thermometers made at the Kew observatory, which
are used for determining the temperature of the yard,
are otherwise constructed. Namely the melting-point
is determined first and the boiling-point afterwards ;
and the thermometers are exposed to both tempera-

tures for many hours. The point which upon such a Relative
thermometer will appear as 62° will really be consider-
ably hotter (perhaps a third of a centigrade degree)
than if its melting-point were marked in the other way.
If this circumstance is not attended to in making com-
parisons, there is danger of getting the yard too short
by perhaps one two-hundred-thousandth part. General
Comstock finds the metre equal to 39·36985 inches.
Several less trustworthy determinations give nearly the
same value. This makes the inch 2·540014 centimetres.

Relative lengths of the metre and yard.

At the time the United States separated from Eng-
land, no precise standard of length was legal*; and
none has ever been established. We are, therefore,
without any precise legal yard; but the United States
office of weights and measures, in the absence of any
legal authorisation, refers standards to the British Im-
perial Yard.

The American unit of length.

The regular British unit of mass is the Pound, de-
fined as the mass of a certain platinum weight, called
the Imperial Pound. This was intended to be so con-
structed as to be equal to 7000 grains, each the 5760th
part of a former Imperial Troy pound. This would be
within 3 grains, perhaps closer, of the old avoirdupois
pound. The British pound has been determined by
Miller to be 0·4535926525 kilogramme; that is the kilo-
gramme is 2·204621249 pounds.

The British unit of mass.

At the time the United States separated from Great
Britain, there were two incommensurable units of
weight, the *avoirdupois pound* and the *Troy pound*. Con-
gress has since established a standard Troy pound,
which is kept in the Mint in Philadelphia. It was a
copy of the old Imperial Troy pound which had been
adopted in England after American independence. It

* The so-called standard of 1758 had not been legalised.

is a hollow brass weight of unknown volume ; and no
accurate comparisons of it with modern standards have
ever been published. Its mass is, therefore, unknown.
The mint ought by law to use this as the standard of
gold and silver. In fact, they use weights furnished
by the office of weights and measures, and no doubt
derived from the British unit; though the mint officers
profess to compare these with the Troy pound of the
United States, as well as they are able to do. The old
avoirdupois pound, which is legal for most purposes,
differed without much doubt quite appreciably from
the British Imperial pound ; but as the Office of Weights
and Measures has long been, without warrant of law,
standardising pounds according to this latter, the legal
avoirdupois pound has nearly disappeared from use of
late years. The makers of weights could easily detect
the change of practice of the Washington Office.

Measures of capacity are not spoken of here, be-
cause they are not used in mechanics. It may, how-
ever, be well to mention that they are defined by the
weight of water at a given temperature which they
measure.

The universal unit of time is the mean solar day or
its one 86400th part, which is called a second. Side-
real time is only employed by astronomers for special
purposes.

Whether the International or the British units are
employed, there are two methods of measurement of
mechanical quantities, the *absolute* and the *gravitational.*
The *absolute* is so called because it is not relative to
the acceleration of gravity at any station. This method
was introduced by Gauss.

The special absolute system, widely used by physi-
cists in the United States and Great Britain, is called

the Centimetre-Gramme-Second system. In this sys-
tem, writing C for centimetre, G for gramme mass,
and S for second,

the unit of length is . . . . C ;

the unit of mass is . . . . G ;

the unit of time is. . . . . S ;

the unit of velocity is . . . . C/S ·

the unit of acceleration (which might
be called a " galileo," because Gali-
leo Galilei first measured an accele-
ration) is . . . . C/S^2 ;

the unit of density is . . . . G/C^3 ;

the unit of momentum is . . . . G C/S ;

the unit of force (called a *dyne*) is . . . G C/S^2 ;

the unit of pressure (called one mil-
lionth of an absolute atmosphere) is. . G/C S^2;

the unit of energy (*vis viva*, or work,
called an *erg*) is . . . . $\frac{1}{2}$G C^2/S^2;

etc.

The gravitational system of measurement of me-
chanical quantities, takes the kilogramme or pound, or
rather the attraction of these towards the earth, com-
pounded with the centrifugal force,—which is the ac-
celeration called gravity, and denoted by *g,* and is dif-
ferent at different places,—as the unit of force, and
the foot-pound or kilogramme-metre, being the amount
of gravitational energy transformed in the descent of a
pound through a foot or of a kilogramme through a
metre, as the unit of energy. Two ways of reconciling
these convenient units with the adherence to the usual
standard of length naturally suggest themselves, namely,
first, to use the pound weight or the kilogramme weight
divided by *g* as the unit of mass, and, second, to adopt

such a unit of time as will make the acceleration of g, at an initial station, unity. Thus, at Washington, the acceleration of gravity is 980·05 galileos. If, then, we take the centimetre as the unit of length, and the 0·031943 second as the unit of time, the acceleration of gravity will be 1 centimetre for such unit of time squared. The latter system would be for most purposes the more convenient; but the former is the more familiar.

In either system, the formula $p = mg$ is retained; but in the former g retains its absolute value, while in the latter it becomes unity for the initial station. In Paris, g is 980·96 galileos; in Washington it is 980·05 galileos. Adopting the more familiar system, and taking Paris for the initial station, if the unit of force is a kilogramme's weight, the unit of length a centimetre, and the unit of time a second, then the unit of mass will be 1/981·0 kilogramme, and the unit of energy will be a kilogramme-centimetre, or $(1/2)$-$(1000/981·0) G C^2/S^2$. Then, at Washington the gravity of a kilogramme will be, not 1, as at Paris, but $980·1/981·0 = 0·99907$ units or Paris kilogramme-weights. Consequently, to produce a force of one Paris kilogramme-weight we must allow Washington gravity to act upon $981·0/980·1 = 1·00092$ kilogrammes.]*

In mechanics, as in some other branches of physics closely allied to it, our calculations involve but three fundamental quantities, quantities of space, quantities of time, and quantities of mass. This circumstance is a source of simplification and power in the science which should not be underestimated.

*For some critical remarks on the preceding method of exposition, see *Nature*, in the issue for November 15, 1894.

III.

THE LAWS OF THE CONSERVATION OF MOMENTUM, OF THE
CONSERVATION OF THE CENTRE OF GRAVITY, AND
OF THE CONSERVATION OF AREAS.

1. Although Newton's principles are fully adequate Specialisa-
to deal with any mechanical problem that may arise, mechanical
it is yet convenient to contrive for cases more frequently laws.
occurring, particular rules, which will enable us to treat
problems of this kind by routine forms and to dis-
pense with the minute discussion of them. Newton
and his successors developed several such principles.
Our first subject will be NEWTON's doctrines concern-
ing *freely movable* material systems.

2. If two free masses m and m' are subjected in Mutual ac-
the direction of their line of junction to the action of masses.
forces that proceed from *other* masses, then, in the in-
terval of time t, the velocities v, v' will be generated,
and the equation $(p + p') t = m v + m' v'$ will subsist.
This follows from the equations $p t = m v$ and $p' t' =
m' v'$. The sum $m v + m' v'$ is called the *momentum* of
the system, and in its computation oppositely directed
forces and velocities are regarded as having opposite
signs. If, now, the masses m, m' in addition to being
subjected to the action of the external forces p, p' are
also acted upon by *internal* forces, that is by such as
are mutually exerted by the masses on *one another*, these
forces will, by Newton's third law, be equal and op-
posite, q, $— q$. The sum of the impressed impulses
is, then, $(p + p' + q — q) t = (p + p') t$, the same as
before; and, consequently, also, the total momentum
of the system will be the same. The momentum of a

system is thus determined exclusively by *external* forces, that is, by forces which masses *outside* of the system exert on its parts.

Law of the
Conserva-
tion of Mo-
mentum.

Imagine a number of free masses m, m', m''. . . . distributed in any manner in space and acted on by external forces p, p', p''. . . . whose lines have any directions. These forces produce in the masses in the interval of time t the velocities v, v', v''. . . . Resolve all the forces in three directions x, y, z at right angles to each other, and do the same with the velocities. The sum of the impulses in the x-direction will be equal to the momentum generated in the x-direction ; and so with the rest. If we imagine additionally in action between the masses m, m', m''. . . ., pairs of equal and opposite internal forces q, $-q$, r, $-r$, s, $-s$, etc., these forces, resolved, will also give in every direction pairs of equal and opposite components, and will consequently have on the sum-total of the impulses no influence. Once more the momentum is exclusively determined by external forces. The law which states this fact is called the *law of the conservation of momentum.*

Law of the
Conserva-
tion of the
Centre of
Gravity.

3. Another form of the same principle, which Newton likewise discovered, is called the law of the *conservation of the centre of gravity.* Imagine in A and B (Fig. 149) two masses, $2m$
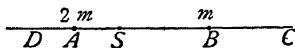
Fig. 149.

and m, in mutual action, say that of electrical repulsion ; their centre of gravity is situated at S, where $BS = 2AS$. The accelerations they impart to each other are oppositely directed and in the inverse proportion of the masses. If, then, in consequence of the mutual action, $2m$ describes a distance AD, m will necessarily describe a distance $BC =$

2*A D*. The point *S* will still remain the position of the centre of gravity, as *CS* = 2*DS*. Therefore, two masses cannot, by *mutual action*, displace their common centre of gravity.

If our considerations involve *several* masses, dis- This law tributed in any way in space, the same result will also applied to systems of be found to hold good for this case. For as *no two* of masses. the masses can displace their centre of gravity by mutual action, the centre of gravity of the system as a whole cannot be displaced by the mutual action of its parts.

Imagine freely placed in space a system of masses *m*, *m'*, *m''*. . . . acted on by *external* forces of any kind. We refer the forces to a system of rectangular coördinates and call the coördinates respectively *x*, *y*, *z*, *x'*, *y'*, *z'*, and so forth. The coördinates of the centre of gravity are then

$$\xi = \frac{\Sigma\, m\, x}{\Sigma\, m}, \ \eta = \frac{\Sigma\, m\, y}{\Sigma\, m}, \ \zeta = \frac{\Sigma\, m\, z}{\Sigma\, m},$$

in which expressions *x*, *y*, *z* may change either by uniform motion or by uniform acceleration or by any other law, according as the mass in question is acted on by no external force, by a constant external force, or by a variable external force. The centre of gravity will have in all these cases a different motion, and in the first may even be at rest. If now *internal* forces, acting between every two masses, *m'* and *m''*, come into play in the system, opposite displacements *w'*, *w''* will thereby be produced in the direction of the lines of junction of the masses, such that, allowing for signs, $m'w' + m''w'' = 0$. Also with respect to the components x_1 and x_2 of these displacements the equation $m'x_1 + m''x_2 = 0$ will hold. The internal forces consequently

produce in the expressions ξ, η, ζ only such additions as mutually destroy each other. Consequently, the *motion of the centre of gravity* of a system is determined by *external* forces only.

If we wish to know the *acceleration* of the centre of gravity of the system, the accelerations of the system's *parts* must be similarly treated. If φ, φ', φ'' . . . . denote the accelerations of m, m', m'' . . . . in any direction, and φ the acceleration of the centre of gravity in the same direction, $\varphi = \Sigma m \varphi / \Sigma m$, or putting the total mass $\Sigma m = M$, $\varphi = \Sigma m \varphi / M$. Accordingly, we obtain the acceleration of the centre of gravity of a system in any direction by taking the sum of all the forces in that direction and dividing the result by the total mass. The centre of gravity of a system moves exactly as if all the masses and all the forces of the system were concentrated at that centre. Just as a single mass can acquire no acceleration without the action of some external force, so the centre of gravity of a system can acquire no acceleration without the action of external forces.

4. A few examples may now be given in illustration of the principle of the conservation of the centre of gravity.

Imagine an animal *free* in space. If the animal move in one direction a portion m of its mass, the remainder of it M will be moved in the opposite direction, always so that its centre of gravity retains its original position. If the animal draw back the mass m, the motion of M also will be reversed. The animal is unable, without external supports or forces, to move itself from the spot which it occupies, or to alter motions impressed upon it from without.

A lightly running vehicle A is placed on rails and

loaded with stones. A man stationed in the vehicle
casts out the stones one after another, in the same di-
rection. The vehicle, supposing the friction to be suf-
ficiently slight, will at once be set in motion in the op-
posite direction. The centre of gravity of the system
as a whole (of the vehicle + the stones) will, so far as
its motion is not destroyed by external obstacles, con-
tinue to remain in its original spot. If the same man
were to pick up the stones from without and place
them in the vehicle, the vehicle in this case would also
be set in motion ; but not to the same extent as before,
as the following example will render evident.

A projectile of mass m is thrown with a velocity v
from a cannon of mass M. In the reaction, M also re-
ceives a velocity, V, such that, making allowance for
the signs, $MV + mv = 0$. This explains the so-called
recoil. The relation here is $V = -(m/M)v$; or, for
equal velocities of flight, the recoil is less according as
the mass of the cannon is greater than the mass of the
projectile. If the work done by the powder be expressed
by A, the *vires vivæ* will be determined by the equation
$MV^2/2 + mv^2/2 = A$; and, the sum of the momenta
being by the first-cited equation $= 0$, we readily obtain
$V = \sqrt{2Am/M(M+m)}$. Consequently, neglecting
the mass of the exploded powder, the recoil vanishes
when the mass of the projectile vanishes. If the mass
m were not expelled from the cannon but sucked into
it, the recoil would take place in the opposite direc-
tion. But it would have no time to make itself visible
since before any perceptible distance had been trav-
ersed, m would have reached the bottom of the bore.
As soon, however, as M and m are in rigid connection
with each other, as soon, that is, as they are *relatively*
at rest to each other, they must be *absolutely* at rest,

for the centre of gravity of the system as a whole has no motion. For the same reason no considerable motion can take place when the stones in the preceding example are taken into the vehicle, because on the establishment of rigid connections between the vehicle and the stones the opposite momenta generated are destroyed. A cannon sucking in a projectile would experience a perceptible recoil only if the sucked in projectile could fly through it.

Oscillations of the body of a locomotive.   Imagine a locomotive freely suspended in the air, or, what will subserve the same purpose, at rest with insufficient friction on the rails. By the law of the conservation of the centre of gravity, as soon as the heavy masses of iron in connection with the piston-rods begin to oscillate, the body of the locomotive will be set in oscillation in a contrary direction—a motion which may greatly disturb its uniform progress. To eliminate this oscillation, the motion of the masses of iron worked by the piston-rods must be so compensated for by the contrary motion of other masses that the centre of gravity of the system as a whole will remain in one position. In this way no motion of the body of the locomotive will take place. This is done by affixing masses of iron to the driving-wheels.

Illustration of the last case.   The facts of this case may be very prettily shown by Page's electromotor (Fig. 150). When the iron core in the bobbin *AB* is projected by the internal forces acting between bobbin and core to the right, the body of the motor, supposing it to rest on lightly movable wheels *rr*, will move to the left. But if to a spoke of the fly-wheel *R* we affix an appropriate balance-weight *a*, which always moves in the contrary direction to the iron core, the sideward movement of the body of the motor may be made totally to vanish.

Of the motion of the fragments of a bursting bomb A bursting we know nothing. But it is plain, by the law of the bomb. conservation of the centre of gravity, that, making allowance for the resistance of the air and the obstacles the individual parts may meet, the centre of gravity of the system will continue after the bursting to describe the parabolic path of its original projection.

5. A law closely allied to the law of the centre of Law of the gravity, and similarly applicable to *free* systems, is the tion of principle of the conservation of areas. Although Newton Areas.
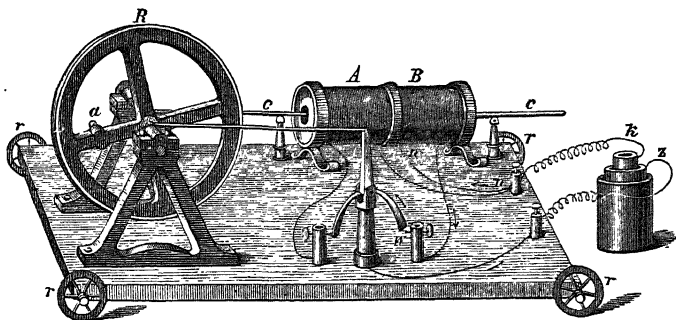
Fig. 150.

had, so to say, this principle within his very grasp, it was nevertheless not enunciated until a long time afterwards by EULER, D'ARCY, and DANIEL BERNOULLI. Euler and Daniel Bernoulli discovered the law almost simultaneously (1746), on the occasion of treating a problem proposed by Euler concerning the motion of balls in rotatable tubes, being led to it by the consideration of the action and reaction of the balls and the tubes. D'Arcy (1747) started from Newton's investigations, and generalised the law of sectors which the latter had employed to explain Kepler's laws.

Two masses m, m' (Fig. 151) are in mutual action.
By virtue of this action the masses describe the dis-
tances AB, CD in the direction of their line of junction.
Allowing for the signs, then, $m . AB + m' . CD = 0$.
Drawing *radii vectores* to the moving masses from any

point O, and regarding
the areas described in
opposite senses by the
radii as having opposite
signs, we further obtain
$m . OAB + m' . OCD = 0$.
Which is to say, if two
masses mutually act on
each other, and *radii vec-
tores* be drawn to these
masses from any point,
the sum of the areas
described by the radii
multiplied by the respec-
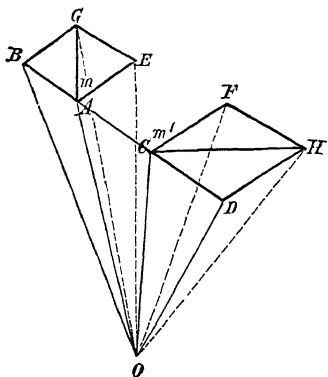
Fig. 151.

tive masses is $= 0$. If the masses are also acted on
by external forces and as the effect of these the areas
OAE and OCF are described, the joint action of the
internal and external forces, during any very small
period of time, will produce the areas OAG and OCH.
But it follows from Varignon's theorem that

$$mOAG + m'OCH = m\, OAE + m'\, OCF + $$
$$mOAB + m'OCD = mOAE + m'OCF;$$

in other words, *the sum of the products of the areas so de-
scribed into the respective masses which compose a system
is unaltered by the action of internal forces.*

If we have several masses, the same thing may be
asserted, for every two masses, of the projection on any
given plane of the motion. If we draw radii from

any point to the several masses, and project on any plane the areas the radii describe, the sum of the products of these areas into the respective masses will be independent of the action of internal forces. This is the *law of the conservation of areas.*

If a single mass not acted on by forces is moving uniformly forward in a straight line and we draw a radius vector to the mass from any point O, the area described by the radius increases proportionally to the time. The same law holds for $\Sigma m f$, in cases in which several masses not acted on by forces are moving, where we signify by the summation the algebraic sum of all the products of the areas (f) into the moving masses—a sum which we shall hereafter briefly refer to as the sum of the mass-areas. If *internal* forces come into play between the masses of the system, this relation will remain unaltered. It will still subsist, also, if external forces be applied whose lines of action pass through the *fixed* point O, as we know from the researches of Newton.

If the mass be acted on by an external force, the area f described by its radius vector will increase in time by the law $f = a\,t^2/2 + b\,t + c$, where a depends on the accelerative force, b on the initial velocity, and c on the initial position. The sum $\Sigma m f$ increases by the same law, where several masses are acted upon by external accelerative forces, provided these may be regarded as constant, which for sufficiently small intervals of time is always the case. The law of areas in this case states that the *internal* forces of the system have *no influence* on the increase of the sum of the mass-areas.

A free rigid body may be regarded as a system whose parts are maintained in their relative positions

by internal forces. The law of areas is applicable therefore to this case also. A simple instance is afforded by the uniform rotation of a rigid body about an axis passing through its centre of gravity. If we call m a portion of its mass, r the distance of the portion from the axis, and α its angular velocity, the sum of the mass-areas produced in unit of time will be $\Sigma m (r/2) r \alpha = (\alpha/2) \Sigma m r^2$, or, the product of the moment of inertia of the system into half its angular velocity. This product can be altered only by external forces.

6. A few examples may now be cited in illustration of the law.

If two rigid bodies K and K' are connected, and K is brought by the action of internal forces into rotation relatively to K', immediately K' also will be set in rotation, in the opposite direction. The rotation of K generates a sum of mass-areas which, by the law, must be compensated for by the production of an equal, but opposite, sum by K'.

This is very prettily exhibited by the electromotor of Fig. 152. The fly-wheel of the motor is placed in a horizontal plane, and the motor thus attached to a vertical axis, on which it can freely turn. The wires conducting the current dip, in order to prevent their interference with the rotation, into two conaxial gutters of mercury fixed on the axis. The body of the motor (K') is tied by a thread to the stand supporting the axis and the current is turned on. As soon as the fly-wheel (K), viewed from above, begins to rotate in the direction of the hands of a watch, the string is drawn taut and the body of the motor exhibits the tendency to rotate *in the opposite direction*—a rotation which immediately takes place when the thread is burnt away.

The motor is, with respect to rotation about its

axis, a free system.   The sum of the mass-areas gen- Its explana-
erated, for the case of rest, is $= 0$.   But the *wheel* of law.
the motor being set in rotation by the action of the in-
ternal electro-magnetic forces, a sum of mass-areas is
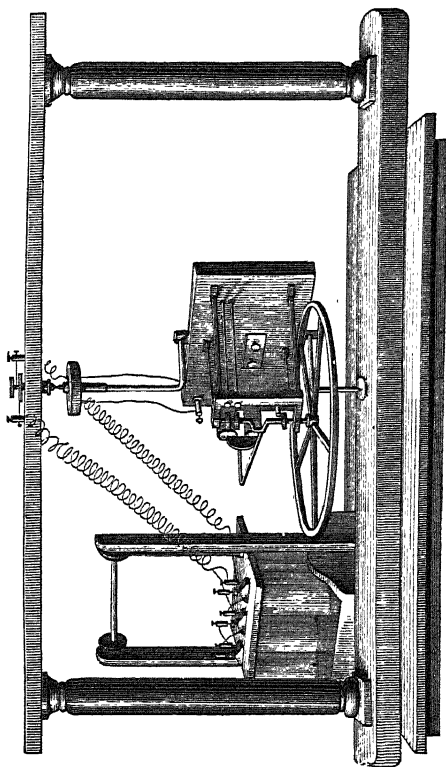
Fig. 152.

produced which, as the total sum must remain $= 0$, is
compensated for by the rotation in the opposite direc-
tion of the body of the motor. If an index be attached
to the body of the motor and kept in a fixed position

by an elastic spring, the rotation of the body of the
motor cannot take place.   Yet every acceleration of
the wheel in the direction of the hands of a watch (pro-
duced by a deeper immersion of the battery) causes
the index to swerve in the opposite direction, and every
retardation produces the contrary effect,

A beautiful but curious phenomenon presents itself
when the current to the motor is interrupted.   Wheel
and motor continue at first their movements in oppo-
site directions.   But the effect of the friction of the
axes soon becomes apparent and the parts gradually
assume with respect to each other relative rest.   The
motion of the body of the motor is seen to diminish ;
for a moment it ceases ; and, finally, when the state of
relative rest is reached, it is reversed and assumes the
direction of the original motion of the wheel.   The
whole motor now rotates in the direction the wheel did
at the start.   The explanation of the phenomenon is
obvious.   The motor is not a *perfectly* free system.   It
is impeded by the friction of the axes.   In a perfectly
free system the sum of the mass-areas, the moment
the parts re-entered the state of relative rest, would
again necessarily be $= 0$.   But in the present instance,
an external force is introduced—the friction of the
axes.   The friction on the axis of the wheel diminishes
the mass-areas generated by the wheel and body of
the motor alike.   But the friction on the axis of the
body of the motor only diminishes the sum of the mass-
areas generated by the body.   The wheel retains, thus,
an excess of mass-area, which when the parts are rela-
tively at rest is rendered apparent in the motion of the
entire motor.   The phenomenon subsequent to the in-
terruption of the current supplies us with a model of
what according to the hypothesis of astronomers has

taken place on the moon. The tidal wave created by the earth has reduced to such an extent by friction the velocity of rotation of the moon that the lunar day has grown to a month. The fly-wheel represents the fluid mass moved by the tide. Its illustra-
tion in the
case of the
moon.

Another example of this law is furnished by *reac-tion-wheels.* If air or gas be emitted from the wheel (Fig. 153 *a*) in the direction of the short arrows, the whole wheel will be set in rotation in the direction of the large arrow. In Fig. 153 *b*, another simple reaction-wheel is represented. A brass tube *r r* plugged at both ends and appropriately perforated, is placed on a second brass tube *R*, supplied with a thin steel pivot through which air can be blown; the air escapes at the apertures *O, O'.* Reaction-
wheels.

It might be supposed that sucking on the reaction-wheels would produce the opposite motion to that resulting from blowing. Yet this does not usually take place, and the reason is obvious. The air that is sucked into the spokes of the wheel must take part immediately in the motion of the wheel, must enter the condition of relative rest with respect to the wheel; and when the system is completely at rest, the sum of its mass-areas must be $= 0$. Generally, no perceptible rotation takes place on the sucking in of the air. The circumstances are similar to those of the recoil of a cannon which sucks in a projectile. If, therefore, an elastic ball, which has but one escape-tube, be attached to the reaction-wheel, in the manner represented in Fig. 153 *a*, and be alternately squeezed so that the same quantity of air is by turns blown out and sucked in, the wheel will continue rapidly to revolve in the same direction as it did in the case in which we blew into it. This is partly due to the fact that the air Variation
of the phe-
nomena of
reaction-
wheels.
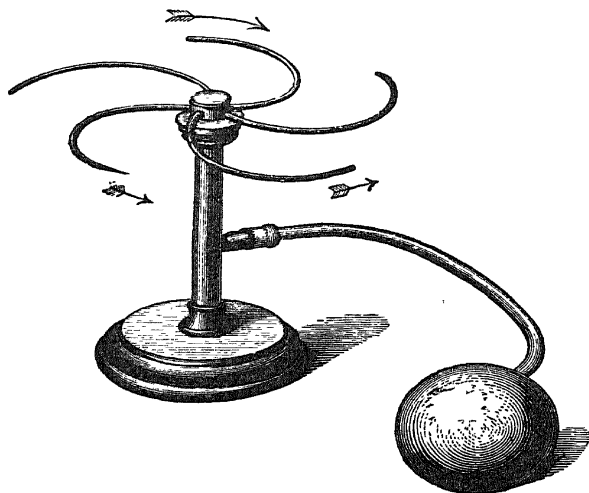
Fig. 153 a.
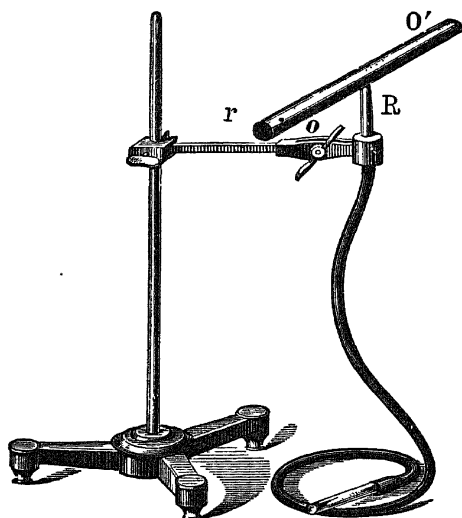
Fig. 153 b.

sucked into the spokes must participate in the motion
of the latter and therefore can produce no reactional
rotation, but it also partly results from the difference
of the motion which the air outside the tube assumes
in the two cases. In blowing, the air flows out in jets,
and performs rotations. In sucking, the air comes in
from all sides, and has no distinct rotation.

The correctness of this view is easily demonstrated.
If we perforate the bottom of a hollow cylinder, a closed

band-box for instance, and
place the cylinder on the steel
pivot of the tube *R*, after the
side has been slit and bent in
the manner indicated in Fig.
154, the box will turn in the
direction of the long arrow
when blown into and in the

Fig. 154.

direction of the short arrow when sucked on. The air,
here, on entering the cylinder, can continue its rotation
unimpeded, and this motion is accordingly compensated
for by a rotation in the opposite direction.
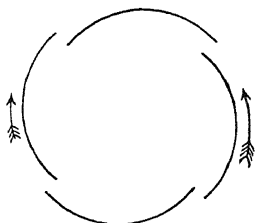
7. The following case also exhibits similar condi-
tions. Imagine a tube (Fig. 155 *a*) which, running
straight from *a* to *b*, turns at right angles
to itself at the latter point, passes to *c*,
describes the circle *c d e f*, whose plane
is at right angles to *a b*, and whose cen-
tre is at *b*, then proceeds from *f* to *g*,
and, finally, continuing the straight line
a b, runs from *g* to *h*. The entire tube
is free to turn on an axis *a h*. If we
pour into this tube, in the manner in-

Fig. 155 a.

dicated in Fig. 155 *b*, a liquid, which flows in the di-
rection *c d e f*, the tube will immediately begin to turn
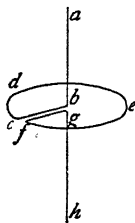
in the direction $fedc$. This impulse, however, ceases, the moment the liquid reaches the point f, and flowing out into the radius fg is obliged to join in the motion of the latter. By the use of a constant stream of liquid,
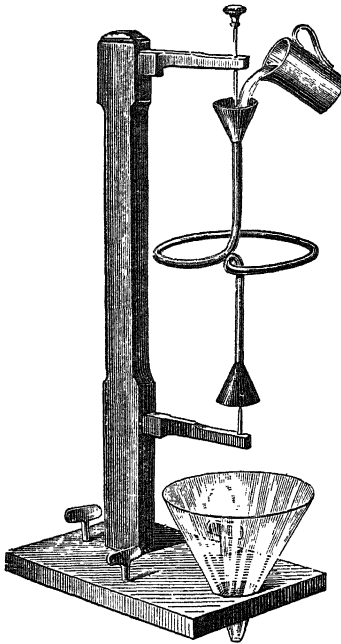
Fig. 155 b.

therefore, the rotation of the tube may soon be stopped. But if the stream be interrupted, the fluid, in flowing off through the radius fg, will impart to the tube a motional impulse in the direction of its own motion, $cdef$, and the tube will turn in this direction. All these phenomena are easily explained by the law of areas.

The trade-winds, the deviation of the oceanic currents and of rivers, Foucault's pendulum experiment, and the like, may also be treated as examples of the law

Additional illustrations. of areas. Another pretty illustration is afforded by bodies with variable moments of inertia. Let a body with the moment of inertia Θ rotate with the angular velocity α and, during the motion, let its moment of inertia be transformed by internal forces, say by springs, into Θ', α will then pass into α', where $\alpha\Theta = \alpha'\Theta'$, that is $\alpha' = \alpha(\Theta/\Theta')$. On any considerable diminution of the moment of inertia, a great increase of

angular velocity ensues. The principle might con-
ceivably be employed, instead of Foucault's method,
to demonstrate the rotation of the earth, [in fact, some
attempts at this have been made, with no very marked
success].

A phenomenon which substantially embodies the Rotating
conditions last suggested is the following. A glass funnel.
funnel, with its axis placed in a vertical position, is
rapidly filled with a liquid in such a manner that the
stream does not enter in the direction of the axis but
strikes the sides. A slow rotatory motion is thereby
set up in the liquid which as long as the funnel is full, is
not noticed. But when the fluid retreats into the neck
of the funnel, its moment of inertia is so diminished
and its angular velocity so increased that a violent
eddy with considerable axial depression is created.
Frequently the entire effluent jet is penetrated by an
axial thread of air.

8. If we carefully examine the principles of the Both prin-
centre of gravity and of the areas, we shall discover in ciples are
simply spe-
cial cases of
both simply convenient the law of
action and
modes of expression, for reaction.
practical purposes, of
a well-known property
of mechanical phenom-
ena. To the accelera-
tion φ of one mass m
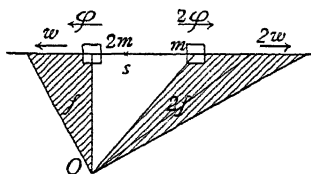
Fig. 156.

there always corresponds a contrary acceleration φ' of
a second mass m', where allowing for the signs $m\varphi +$
$m'\varphi' = 0$. To the force $m\varphi$ corresponds the equal
and opposite force $m'\varphi'$. When any masses m and
$2m$ describe with the contrary accelerations 2φ and φ
the distances $2w$ and w (Fig. 156), the position of
their centre of gravity S remains unchanged, and the

sum of their mass-areas with respect to any point O is, allowing for the signs, $2m.f + m.2f = 0$. This simple exposition shows us, that the principle of the centre of gravity expresses the same thing with respect to *parallel coördinates* that the principle of areas expresses with respect to *polar coördinates*. Both contain simply the fact of reaction.

But they may also be construed as generalisations of the law of inertia.

The principles in question admit of still another simple construction. Just as a single body cannot, without the influence of external forces, that is, without the aid of a second body, alter its uniform motion of progression or rotation, so also a system of bodies cannot, without the aid of a second system, on which it can, so to speak, brace and support itself, alter what may properly and briefly be called its *mean* velocity of progression or rotation. Both principles contain, thus, a *generalised statement of the law of inertia*, the correctness of which in the present form we not only *see* but *feel*.

Importance of an instinctive grasp of mechanical facts.

This feeling is not unscientific; much less is it detrimental. Where it does not replace conceptual insight but exists by the side of it, it is really the fundamental requisite and sole evidence of a *complete* mastery of mechanical facts. We are ourselves a fragment of mechanics, and this fact profoundly modifies our mental life.* No one will convince us that the consideration of mechanico-physiological processes, and of the feelings and instincts here involved, must be excluded from scientific mechanics. If we know principles like those of the centre of gravity and of areas only in their abstract mathematical form, without having dealt with the palpable simple facts, which are at once their applica-

---

* For the development of this view, see E. Mach, *Grundlinien der Lehre von den Bewegungsempfindungen.* (Leipsic: Engelmann, 1875.)

tion and their source, we only half comprehend them, and shall scarcely recognise actual phenomena as examples of the theory. We are in a position like that of a person who is suddenly placed on a high tower but has not previously travelled in the district round about, and who therefore does not know how to interpret the objects he sees.

<div style="text-align:center">IV.</div>

<div style="text-align:center">THE LAWS OF IMPACT.</div>

1. The laws of impact were the occasion of the enunciation of the most important principles of mechanics, and furnished also the first examples of the application of such principles. As early as 1639, a contemporary of Galileo, the Prague professor, MARCUS MARCI (born in 1595), published in his treatise *De Proportione Motus* (Prague) a few results of his investigations on impact. He knew that a body striking in elastic percussion another of the same size at rest, loses its own motion and communicates an equal quantity to the other. He also enunciates, though not always with the requisite precision, and frequently mingled with what is false, other propositions which still hold good. Marcus Marci was a remarkable man. He possessed for his time very creditable conceptions regarding the composition of motions and "impulses." In the formation of these ideas he pursued a method similar to that which Roberval later employed. He speaks of *partially* equal and opposite motions, and of *wholly* opposite motions, gives parallelogram constructions, and the like, but is unable, although he speaks of an accelerated motion of descent, to reach perfect clearness with regard to the idea of force and consequently also with regard to the composition of forces. In spite

Historical position of the Laws of Impact.

of this, however, he discovers Galileo's theorem re-
garding the descent of bodies in the chords of circles,

IOANNES MARCVS MARCI PHIL: & MEDIC: DOCTOR
et Profeffor natus Landscronæ Hermanndurorum in Boemia
anno 1595. 13 Iunij.

also a few propositions relating to the motion of the
pendulum, and has knowledge of centrifugal force and
so on. Although Galileo's *Discourses* had appeared a

year previously, we cannot, in view of the condition of things produced in Central Europe by the Thirty Years'
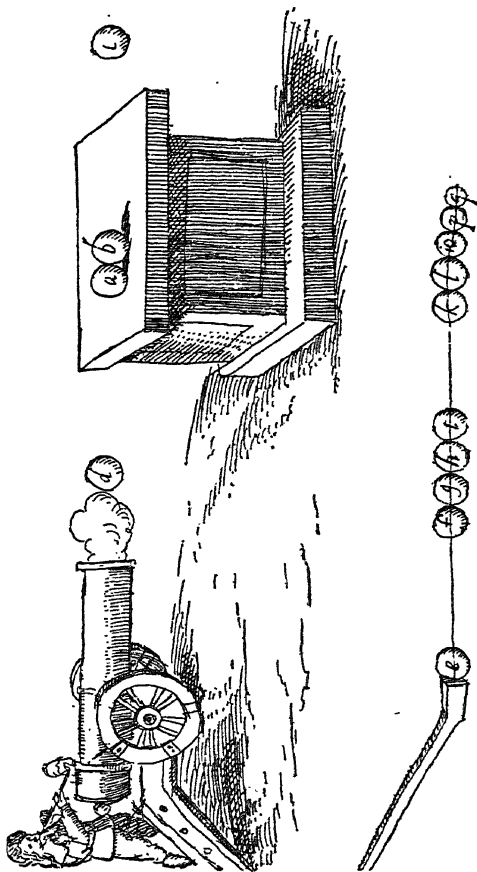
An Illustration from *De Proportione Motus* (Marcus Marci).

War, assume that Marci was acquainted with them. Not only would the many errors in Marci's book thus be rendered unintelligible, but it would also have to

be explained how Marci, as late as 1648, in a continu-
ation of his treatise, could have found it necessary to
defend the theorem of the chords of circles against the
Jesuit Balthasar Conradus. An imperfect *oral* com-
munication of Galileo's researches is the more reason-
able conjecture.* When we add to all this that Marci
was on the very verge of anticipating Newton in the
discovery of the composition of light, we shall recog-
nise in him a man of very considerable parts. His
writings are a worthy and as yet but slightly noticed
object of research for the historian of physics. Though
Galileo, as the clearest-minded and most able of his
contemporaries, bore away in this province the palm,
we nevertheless see from writings of this class that he
was not by any means alone in his thought and ways
of thinking.

2. GALILEO himself made several experimental at-
tempts to ascertain the laws of impact; but he was not
in these endeavors wholly successful. He principally
busied himself with the force of a body in motion, or
with the "force of percussion," as he expressed it,
and endeavored to compare this force with the pressure
of a weight at rest, hoping thus to measure it. To this
end he instituted an extremely ingenious experiment,
which we shall now describe.

A vessel I (Fig. 157) in whose base is a plugged
orifice, is filled with water, and a second vessel II is
hung beneath it by strings; the whole is fastened to
the beam of an equilibrated balance. If the plug is
removed from the orifice of vessel I, the fluid will fall

---

* I have been convinced, since the publication of the first edition of this
work, (see E. Wohlwill's researches, *Die Entdeckung des Beharrungsgesetzes*,
in the *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie*, 1884, XV, page 387,) that Marcus Marci
derived his information concerning the motion of falling bodies, from Galileo's
earlier Dialogues. He may also have known the works of Benedetti.

in a jet into vessel II. A portion of the pressure due
to the resting weight of the water in I is lost and re-
placed by an action of impact on vessel II. Galileo
expected a depression of the whole scale, by which he
hoped with the assistance of a counter-weight to de-
termine the effect of the impact. He was to some ex-
tent surprised to obtain *no* depression, and he was un-
able, it appears, perfectly to clear up the matter in his
mind.

3. To-day, of course, the explanation is not diffi-
cult. By the removal of the plug there is produced,
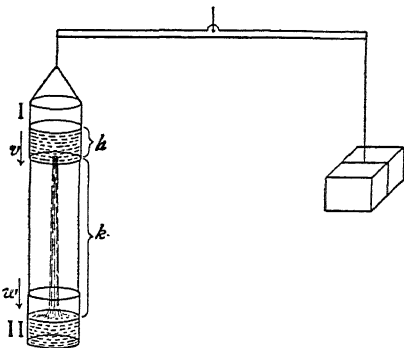
Fig. 157.

first, a diminution of the pressure. This consists of
two factors: (1) The weight of the jet suspended in
the air is lost ; and (2) A reaction-pressure upwards is
exerted by the effluent jet on vessel I (which acts like
a Segner's wheel). Then there is an increase of pres-
sure (Factor 3) produced by the action of the jet on the
bottom of vessel II. Before the first drop has reached
the bottom of II, we have only to deal with a diminu-
tion of pressure, which, when the apparatus is in full
operation, is immediately compensated for. This *initial*

depression was, in fact, all that Galileo could observe. Let us imagine the apparatus in operation, and denote the height the fluid reaches in vessel I by h, the corresponding velocity of efflux by v, the distance of the bottom of I from the surface of the fluid in II by k, the velocity of the jet at this surface by w, the area of the basal orifice by a, the acceleration of gravity by g, and the specific gravity of the fluid by s. To determine Factor (1) we may observe that v is the velocity acquired in descent through the distance h. We have, then, simply to picture to ourselves this motion of descent continued through k. The time of descent of the jet from I to II is therefore the time of descent through $h + k$ less the time of descent through h. During this time a cylinder of base a is discharged with the velocity v. Factor (1), or the weight of the jet suspended in the air, accordingly amounts to

$$\sqrt{2gh}\left[\sqrt{\frac{2(h+k)}{g}} - \sqrt{\frac{2h}{g}}\right] as.$$

To determine Factor (2) we employ the familiar equation $mv = pt$. If we put $t = 1$, then $mv = p$, that is the pressure of reaction upwards on I is equal to the momentum imparted to the fluid jet in unit of time. We will select here the unit of weight as our unit of force, that is, use gravitation measure. We obtain for Factor (2) the expression $[av(s/g)]v = p$, (where the expression in brackets denotes the mass which flows out in unit of time,) or

$$a\sqrt{2gh} \cdot \frac{s}{g} \cdot \sqrt{2gh} = 2ahs.$$

Similarly we find the pressure on II to be

$$\left(av \cdot \frac{s}{g}\right)w = q, \text{ or factor 3 :}$$

$$a \frac{s}{g} \sqrt{2gh} \sqrt{2g(h+k)}.$$

The total variation of the pressure is accordingly

$$-\sqrt{2gh}\left[\sqrt{\frac{2(h+k)}{g}} - \sqrt{\frac{2h}{g}}\right] as$$
$$- 2ahs$$

$$+ \frac{as}{g}\sqrt{2gh}\sqrt{2g(h+k)}$$

or, abridged,

$$-2as[\sqrt{h(h+k)} - h] - 2ahs$$
$$+ 2as\sqrt{h(h+k)},$$

—which three factors *completely* destroy each other. In the very necessity of the case, therefore, Galileo could only have obtained a negative result.

We must supply a brief comment respecting Factor (2). It might be supposed that the pressure on the basal orifice which is lost, is ahs and not $2ahs$. But this *statical* conception would be totally inadmissible in the present, *dynamical* case. The velocity v is not generated by gravity instantaneously in the effluent particles, but is the outcome of the mutual pressure between the particles flowing out and the particles left behind ; and pressure can only be determined by the momentum generated. The erroneous introduction of the value ahs would at once betray itself by self-contradictions.

If Galileo's mode of experimentation had been less elegant, he would have determined without much difficulty the pressure which a *continuous* fluid jet exerts. But he could never, as he soon became convinced, have counteracted by a *pressure* the effect of an instantaneous *impact*. Take—and this is the supposition of

Galileo—a freely falling, heavy body. Its final velocity, we know, increases proportionately to the time. The very smallest velocity requires a definite *portion of time* to be produced in (a principle which even Mariotte contested). If we picture to ourselves a body moving vertically upwards with a definite velocity, the body will, according to the amount of this velocity, ascend a definite time, and consequently also a definite distance. The heaviest imaginable body impressed in the vertical upward direction with the smallest imaginable velocity will ascend, be it only a little, in opposition to the force of gravity. If, therefore, a heavy body, be it ever so heavy, receive an instantaneous upward impact from a body in motion, be the mass and velocity of that body ever so small, and such impact impart to the heavier body the smallest imaginable velocity, that body will, nevertheless, yield and

move somewhat in the upward direction. The *slightest* impact, therefore, is able to overcome the *greatest* pressure ; or, as Galileo says, the force of percussion compared with the force of pressure is *infinitely* great. This result, which is sometimes attributed to intellectual obscurity on Galileo's part, is, on the contrary, a brilliant proof of his intellectual acumen. We should say to-day, that the force of percussion, the momentum, the impulse, the quantity of motion mv, is a quantity of different *dimensions* from the pressure p. The dimensions of the former are $m\,l\,t^{-1}$, those of the latter $m\,l\,t^{-2}$. In reality, therefore, pressure is related to momentum of impact as a line is to a surface. Pressure is p, the momentum of impact is $p\,t$. Without employing mathematical terminology it is hardly possible to express the fact better than Galileo did. We now also see why it is possible to measure the impact of a continuous fluid

jet by a pressure. We compare the momentum destroyed per second of time with the pressure acting per second of time, that is, homogeneous quantities of the form $p\,t$.

4. The first systematic treatment of the laws of impact was evoked in the year 1668 by a request of the Royal Society of London. Three eminent physicists WALLIS (Nov. 26, 1668), WREN (Dec. 17, 1668), and HUYGENS (Jan. 4, 1669) complied with the invitation of the society, and communicated to it papers in which, independently of each other, they stated, without deductions, the laws of impact. Wallis treated only of the impact of inelastic bodies, Wren and Huygens only of the impact of elastic bodies. Wren, previously to publication, had tested by experiments his theorems, which, in the main, agreed with those of Huygens. These are the experiments to which Newton refers in the *Principia.* The same experiments were, soon after this, also described, in a more developed form, by Mariotte, in a special treatise, *Sur le Choc des Corps.* Mariotte also gave the apparatus now known in physical collections as the percussion-machine.

According to Wallis, the decisive factor in impact is *momentum,* or the product of the mass (*pondus*) into the velocity (*celeritas*). By this momentum the force of percussion is determined. If two inelastic bodies which have equal momenta strike each other, rest will ensue after impact. If their momenta are unequal, the difference of the momenta will be the momentum after impact. If we divide this momentum by the sum of the masses, we shall obtain the velocity of the motion after the impact. Wallis subsequently presented his theory of impact in another treatise, *Mechanica sive de Motu,* London, 1671. All his theorems may be

brought together in the formula now in common use, $u = (mv + m'v')/(m + m')$, in which m, m' denote the masses, v, v' the velocities before impact, and u the velocity after impact.

Huygens's methods and results. 5. The ideas which led Huygens to his results, are to be found in a posthumous treatise of his, *De Motu Corporum ex Percussione*, 1703. We shall examine these in some detail. The assumptions from which Huygens

Fig. 158.
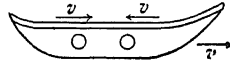
Fig. 159.
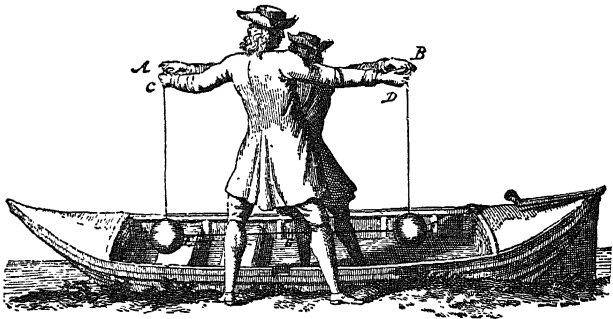
An Illustration from *De Percussione* (Huygens).

proceeds are : (1) the law of inertia; (2) that elastic bodies of equal mass, colliding with equal and opposite velocities, separate after impact with the same velocities; (3) that all velocities are relatively estimated; (4) that a larger body striking a smaller one at rest imparts to the latter velocity, and loses a part of its own; and finally (5) that when *one* of the colliding bodies preserves its velocity, this also is the case with the *other*.

Huygens, now, imagines two equal elastic masses, which meet with equal and opposite velocities v. After the impact they rebound from each other with exactly the same velocities. Huygens is right in *assuming* and not *deducing* this. That elastic bodies exist which recover their form after impact, that in such a transaction no perceptible *vis viva* is lost, are facts which experience alone can teach us. Huygens, now, conceives the occurrence just described, to take place on a boat which is moving with the velocity v. For the spectator in the boat the previous case still subsists ; but for the spectator on the shore the velocities of the spheres before impact are respectively $2v$ and 0, and after impact 0 and $2v$. An elastic body, therefore, impinging on another of equal mass at rest, communicates to the latter its entire velocity and remains after the impact itself at rest. If we suppose the boat affected with any imaginable velocity, u, then for the spectator on the shore the velocities before impact will be respectively $u + v$ and $u - v$, and after impact $u - v$ and $u + v$. But since $u + v$ and $u - v$ may have *any* values whatsoever, it may be asserted as a principle that equal elastic masses *exchange* in impact their velocities.

A body at rest, however great, is set in motion by a body which strikes it, however small ; as Ga- lileo pointed out. Huygens, now, shows, that the *approach* of the bodies before impact and their recession after impact take place with the *same relative* velocity. A
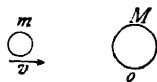
Fig. 160.

body m impinges on a body of mass M at rest, to which it imparts in impact the velocity, as yet undetermined, w. Huygens, in the demonstration of this proposition, supposes that the event takes place on a boat moving

from M towards m with the velocity $w/2$. The initial velocities are, then, $v - w/2$ and $- w/2$; and the final velocities, x and $+ w/2$. But as M has not altered the value, but only the sign, of its velocity, so m, if a loss of *vis viva* is not to be sustained in elastic impact, can only alter the sign of its velocity. Hence, the final velocities are $-(v - w/2)$ and $+ w/2$. As a fact, then, the relative velocity of approach before impact is equal to the relative velocity of separation after impact. Whatever change of velocity a body may suffer, in every case, we can, by the fiction of a boat in motion, and apart from the algebraical signs, keep the value of the velocity the same before and after impact. The proposition holds, therefore, generally.

Third, if the velocities of approach are inversely proportional to the masses, so are the velocities of recession.

If two masses M and m collide, with velocities V and v *inversely proportional* to the masses, M after impact will rebound with the velocity V and m with the velocity v. Let us suppose that the velocities after impact are V_1 and v_1; then by the preceding proposition we must have $V + v = V_1 + v_1$, and by the principle of *vis viva*

$$\frac{MV^2}{2} + \frac{mv^2}{2} = \frac{MV_1{}^2}{2} + \frac{mv_1{}^2}{2}.$$

Let us assume, now, that $v_1 = v + w$; then, necessarily, $V_1 = V - w$; but on this supposition

$$\frac{MV_1{}^2}{2} + \frac{mv_1{}^2}{2} = \frac{MV^2}{2} + \frac{mv^2}{2} + (M + m)\frac{w^2}{2}.$$

And this equality can, in the conditions of the case, only subsist if $w = 0$; wherewith the proposition above stated is established.

Huygens demonstrates this by a comparison, constructively reached, of the possible heights of ascent of the bodies prior and subsequently to impact. If

the velocities of the impinging bodies are not inversely proportional to the masses, they may be made such by the fiction of a boat in motion. The proposition thus includes all imaginable cases.

The conservation of *vis viva* in impact is asserted by Huygens in one of his last theorems (11), which he subsequently also handed in to the London Society. But the principle is unmistakably at the foundation of the previous theorems.

6. In taking up the study of any event or phenom- enon A, we may acquire a knowledge of its component elements by approaching it from the point of view of a different phenomenon B, which we already know ; in which case our investigation of A will appear as the application of principles before familiar to us. Or, we may begin our investigation with A itself, and, as na-ture is throughout uniform, reach the same principles originally in the contemplation of A. The investiga-tion of the phenomena of impact was pursued simul-taneously with that of various other mechanical pro-cesses, and both modes of analysis were really pre-sented to the inquirer.

To begin with, we may convince ourselves that the problems of impact can be disposed of by the New-tonian principles, with the help of only a minimum of *new* experiences. The investigation of the laws of im-pact contributed, it is true, to the discovery of New-ton's laws, but the latter do not rest solely on this foun-dation. The requisite new experiences, not contained in the Newtonian principles, are simply the informa-tion that there are *elastic* and *inelastic bodies.* Inelastic bodies subjected to pressure alter their form without recovering it ; elastic bodies possess for all their *forms* definite systems of pressures, so that every alteration

of form is associated with an alteration of pressure, and *vice versa.* Elastic bodies recover their form ; and the forces that induce the form-alterations of bodies do not come into play until the bodies are in contact.

First, inelastic masses.

Let us consider two inelastic masses M and m moving respectively with the velocities V and v. If these masses come in contact while possessed of these unequal velocities, internal form-altering forces will be set up in the system M, m. These forces do not alter the quantity of motion of the system, neither do they displace its centre of gravity. With the restitution of equal velocities, the form-alterations cease and in inelastic bodies the forces which produce the alterations vanish. Calling the common velocity of motion after impact u, it follows that $Mu + mu = MV + Mv$, or $u = (MV + mv)/(M + m)$, the rule of Wallis.

Impact in an equivalent point of view.

Now let us assume that we are investigating the phenomena of impact without a previous knowledge of Newton's principles. We very soon discover, when we so proceed, that velocity is not the *sole* determinative factor of impact; still another physical quality is decisive—weight, load, mass, *pondus, moles, massa.* The moment we have noted this fact, the simplest case is easily dealt with. If two bodies of equal weight or equal mass collide with equal and opposite velocities ; if, further, the bodies do not separate after impact but retain some common velocity, plainly the sole *uniquely* determined velocity after the collision is the velocity 0. If, further, we make the observation that only the *difference* of the velocities, that is only relative velocity, determines the phenomenon of impact, we shall, by imagining the environment to move, (which experience
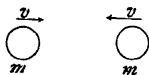
Fig. 161.

tells us has no influence on the occurrence,) also readily perceive additional cases. For equal inelastic masses with velocities v and 0 or v and v' the velocity after impact is $v/2$ or $(v + v')/2$. It stands to reason that we can pursue such a line of reflection only after experience has informed us *what* the essential and decisive features of the phenomena are.

If we pass to unequal masses, we must not only know from experience that mass *generally* is of consequence, but also *in what manner* its influence is effective. If, for example, two bodies of masses 1 and 3 with the velocities v and V collide, we might reason
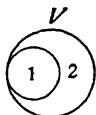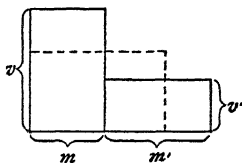
Fig. 162.   Fig. 163.

thus. We cut out of the mass 3 the mass 1 (Fig. 162), and first make the masses 1 and 1 collide : the resultant velocity is $(v + V)/2$. There are now left, to equalise the velocities $(v + V)/2$ and V, the masses $1 + 1 = 2$ and 2, which applying the same principle gives

$$\frac{\dfrac{v + V}{2} + V}{2} = \frac{v + 3V}{4} = \frac{v + 3V}{1 + 3}.$$

Let us now consider, more generally, the masses m and m', which we represent in Fig. 163 as suitably proportioned horizontal lines. These masses are affected with the velocities v and v', which we represent by ordinates erected on the mass-lines. Assuming that

$m < m'$, we cut off from m' a portion m. The offsetting of m and m gives the mass $2m$ with the velocity $(v + v')$: 2. The dotted line indicates this relation. We proceed similarly with the remainder $m' - m$. We cut off from $2m$ a portion $m' - m$, and obtain the mass $2m - (m' - m)$ with the velocity $(v + v')/2$ and the mass $2(m' - m)$ with the velocity $[(v + v')/2 + v']/2$. In this manner we may proceed till we have obtained for the whole mass $m + m'$ the *same* velocity u. The constructive method indicated in the figure shows very plainly that here the surface equation $(m + m') u = mv + m'v'$ subsists. We readily perceive, however, that we cannot pursue this line of reasoning except the sum $mv + m'v'$, that is the *form* of the influence of m and v, has through some experience or other been previously suggested to us as the determinative and decisive factor. If we renounce the use of the Newtonian principles, then some other specific experiences concerning the import of mv which are equivalent to those principles, are indispensable.

7. The impact of *elastic* masses may also be treated by the Newtonian principles. The sole observation here required is, that a deformation of elastic bodies calls into play *forces of restitution*, which directly depend on the deformation. Furthermore, bodies possess impenetrability; that is to say, when bodies affected with unequal velocities meet in impact, forces which equalise these velocities are produced. If two elastic masses M, m with the velocities C, c collide, a deformation will be effected, and this deformation will not cease until the velocities of the two bodies are equalised. At this instant, inasmuch as only internal forces are involved and therefore the momentum and

the motion of the centre of gravity of the system remain unchanged, the common equalised velocity will be

$$u = \frac{MC + mc}{M + m}.$$

Consequently, up to this time, M's velocity has suffered a diminution $C - u$; and m's an increase $u - c$.

But elastic bodies being bodies that recover their forms, in *perfectly* elastic bodies the very same forces that produced the deformation, will, only in the inverse order, *again* be brought into play, through the very same elements of time and space. Consequently, on the supposition that m is overtaken by M, M will a second time sustain a diminution of velocity $C - u$, and m will a second time receive an increase of velocity $u - c$. Hence, we obtain for the velocities V, v after impact the expressions $V = 2u - C$ and $v = 2u - c$, or

$$V = \frac{MC + m(2c - C)}{M + m}, \; v = \frac{mc + M(2C - c)}{M + m}.$$

If in these formulæ we put $M = m$, it will follow that $V = c$ and $v = C$; or, if the impinging masses are equal, the velocities which they have will be interchanged. Again, since in the particular case $M/m = - c/C$ or $MC + mc = 0$ also $u = 0$, it follows that $V = 2u - C = - C$ and $v = 2u - c = - c$; that is, the masses recede from each other in this case with the same velocities (only oppositely directed) with which they approached. The approach of any two masses M, m affected with the velocities C, c, estimated as positive when in the same direction, takes place with the velocity $C - c$; their separation with the velocity $V - v$. But it follows at once from $V = 2u - C$, $v = 2u - c$, that $V - v = - (C - c)$; that is, the relative velocity of approach and recession is the same.

By the use of the expressions $V = 2u - C$ and $v = 2u - c$, we also very readily find the two theorems

$$MV + mv = MC + mc \text{ and}$$
$$MV^2 + mv^2 = MC^2 + mc^2,$$

which assert that the quantity of motion before and after impact, estimated in the same direction, is the same, and that also the *vis viva* of the system before and after impact is the same. We have reached, thus, by the use of the Newtonian principles, all of Huygens's results.

The implications of Huygens's view.

8. If we consider the laws of impact from Huygens's point of view, the following reflections immediately claim our attention. The height of ascent which the centre of gravity of any system of masses can reach is given by its *vis viva*, $\frac{1}{2}\sum mv^2$. In every case in which work is done by forces, and in such cases the masses follow the forces, this sum is increased by an amount equal to the work done. On the other hand, in every case in which the system moves in opposition to forces, that is, when work, as we may say, is *done upon* the system, this sum is diminished by the amount of work done. As long, therefore, as the algebraical sum of the work done *on* the system and the work done *by* the system is not changed, whatever other alterations may take place, the sum $\frac{1}{2}\sum mv^2$ also remains unchanged. Huygens now, observing that this first property of material systems, discovered by him in his investigations on the pendulum, also obtained in the case of impact, could not help remarking that also the sum of the *vires vivæ* must be the same before and after impact. For in the mutually effected alteration of the forms of the colliding bodies the material system considered has the same amount of work *done on* it as, on

the reversal of the alteration, is *done by* it, provided always the bodies develop forces wholly determined by the shapes they assume, and that they regain their original form by means of the same forces employed to effect its alteration.   That the latter process takes place, *definite experience* alone can inform us.   This law obtains, furthermore, only in the case of so-called *perfectly* elastic bodies.

Contemplated from this point of view, the majority of the Huygenian laws of impact follow at once.   Equal masses, which strike each other with equal but opposite velocities, rebound with the same velocities.   The velocities are *uniquely* determined only when they are *equal*, and they conform to the principle of *vis viva* only by being the *same* before and after impact.   Further it is evident, that if one of the unequal masses in impact change only the sign and not the magnitude of its velocity, this must also be the case with the other. On this supposition, however, the relative velocity of separation after impact is the same as the velocity of approach before impact.   Every imaginable case can be reduced to this one.   Let c and c' be the velocities of the mass m before and after impact, and let them be of any value and have any sign.   We imagine the *whole* system to receive a velocity u of such magnitude that $u + c = -(u + c')$ or $u = (c - c')/2$.   It will be seen thus that it is always possible to discover a velocity of transportation for the system such that the velocity of one of the masses will only change its sign.   And so the proposition concerning the velocities of approach and recession holds generally good.

As Huygens's peculiar group of ideas was not fully perfected, he was compelled, in cases in which the velocity-ratios of the impinging masses were not origin-

ally known, to draw on the Galileo-Newtonian system
for certain conceptions, as was pointed out above.
Such an appropriation of the concepts mass and mo-
mentum, is contained, although not explicitly ex-
pressed, in the proposition according to which the ve-
locity of each impinging mass simply changes its sign
when before impact $M/m = -c/C$. If Huygens had
wholly restricted himself to his own point of view, he
would scarcely have *discovered* this proposition, al-
though, once discovered, he was able, after his own
fashion, to supply its *deduction.* Here, owing to the
fact that the momenta produced are equal and oppo-
site, the equalised velocity of the masses on the com-
pletion of the change of form will be $u = 0$. When the
alteration of form is reversed, and the same amount of
work is performed that the system originally suffered,
the *same* velocities with *opposite* signs will be *restored.*

If we imagine the entire system affected with a ve-
locity of *translation,* this *particular* case will simulta-
neously present the *general* case.
Let the impinging masses be
represented in the figure by
$M = BC$ and $m = AC$ (Fig.
164), and their respective velo-
cities by $C = AD$ and $c = BE$.
On AB erect the perpendicular
CF, and through F draw IK
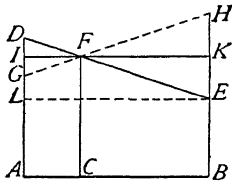
Fig. 164.

parallel to AB. Then $ID = (m . \overline{C-c})/(M+m)$ and
$KE = (M . \overline{C-c})/(M+m)$. On the supposition now
that we make the masses M and m collide with the
velocities ID and KE, while we simultaneously impart
to the system as a whole the velocity

$$u = AI = KB = C - (m . \overline{C-c})/(M+m) =$$
$$c + (M . \overline{C-c})/(M+m) = (MC + mc)/(M+m),$$

the spectator who is moving forwards with the velocity *u* will see the particular case presented, and the spectator who is at rest will see the general case, be the velocities what they may. The general formulæ of impact, above deduced, follow at once from this conception. We obtain:

$$V = AG = C - 2\frac{m(C-c)}{M+m} = \frac{MC + m(2c - C)}{M+m}$$

$$v = BH = c + 2\frac{M(C-c)}{M+m} = \frac{mc + M(2C-c)}{M+m}.$$

Huygen's successful employment of the fictitious motions is the outcome of the simple perception that bodies not affected with *differences* of velocities do not act on one another in impact. All forces of impact are determined by differences of velocity (as all thermal effects are determined by differences of temperature). And since forces generally determine, not velocities, but only changes of velocities, or, again, differences of velocities, consequently, in every aspect of impact the sole decisive factor is *differences* of velocity. With respect to which bodies the velocities are estimated, is indifferent. In fact, many cases of impact which from lack of practice appear to us as different cases, turn out on close examination to be one and the same.

Signification of the fictitious motions.

Similarly, the capacity of a moving body for work, whether we measure it with respect to the time of its action by its momentum or with respect to the distance through which it acts by its *vis viva*, has no significance referred to a single body. It is invested with such, only when a second body is introduced, and, in the first case, then, it is the difference of the velocities, and in the second the square of the difference that is decisive. *Velocity* is a physical *level*, like temperature, potential function, and the like.

Velocity, a physical level.

Possible
different
origin of
Huygens's
ideas.

It remains to be remarked, that Huygens could have reached, originally, in the investigation of the phenomena of impact, the same results that he previously reached by his investigations of the pendulum. In every case there is one thing and one thing only to be done, and that is, *to discover in all the facts the same elements*, or, if we will, to *re*discover in one fact the elements of another which we already know. From which facts the investigation starts, is, however, a matter of historical accident.

Conservation of momentum interpreted.

9. Let us close our examination of this part of the subject with a few general remarks. The sum of the *momenta* of a system of moving bodies is preserved in impact, both in the case of inelastic and elastic bodies. But this preservation does not take place *precisely* in the sense of Descartes. The momentum of a body is not diminished in proportion as that of another is increased; a fact which Huygens was the first to note. If, for example, two equal inelastic masses, possessed of equal and opposite velocities, meet in impact, the two bodies lose in the Cartesian sense their entire momentum. If, however, we reckon all velocities *in a given direction* as positive, and all in the opposite as negative, the sum of the momenta *is* preserved. Quantity of motion, conceived in this sense, is always preserved.

The *vis viva* of a system of inelastic masses is altered in impact; that of a system of perfectly elastic masses is preserved. The diminution of *vis viva* produced in the impact of inelastic masses, or produced generally when the impinging bodies move with a common velocity, after impact, is easily determined. Let M, m be the masses, C, c their respective velocities be-

fore impact, and u their common velocity after impact ;
then the loss of *vis viva* is

$$\tfrac{1}{2}MC^2 + \tfrac{1}{2}mc^2 - \tfrac{1}{2}(M+m)u^2, \quad \ldots \ldots \quad (1)$$

which in view of the fact that $u = (MC + mc)/(M+m)$
may be expressed in the form $\tfrac{1}{2}(Mm/M+m)(C-c)^2$.
Carnot has put this loss in the form

$$\tfrac{1}{2}M(C-u)^2 + \tfrac{1}{2}m(u-c)^2 \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots (2)$$

If we select the latter form, the expressions $\tfrac{1}{2}M(C-u)^2$
and $\tfrac{1}{2}m(u-c)^2$ will be recognised as the *vis viva* generated by the *work of the internal forces.* The loss of
vis viva in impact is equivalent, therefore, to the work
done by the internal or so-called molecular forces. If
we equate the two expressions (1) and (2), remembering that $(M+m)u = MC + mc$, we shall obtain an
identical equation. Carnot's expression is important
for the estimation of losses due to the impact of parts
of machines.

In all the preceding expositions we have treated
the impinging masses as points which moved only in the
direction of the lines joining them. This simplification is admissible when the centres of gravity and the
point of contact of the impinging masses lie in one
straight line, that is, in the case of so-called direct impact. The investigation of what is called *oblique* impact is somewhat more complicated, but presents no
especial interest in point of principle.

A question of a different character was treated by
WALLIS. If a body rotate about an axis and its motion
be suddenly checked by the retention of one of its
points, the force of the percussion will vary with the
position (the distance from the axis) of the point arrested. The point at which the intensity of the impact
is greatest is called by Wallis the *centre of percussion.*

If this point be checked, the axis will sustain no pressure. We have no occasion here to enter in detail into these investigations; they were extended and developed by Wallis's contemporaries and successors in many ways.

10. We will now briefly examine, before concluding this section, an interesting application of the laws of impact; namely, the determination of the velocities of projectiles by the *ballistic pendulum.* A mass M is suspended by a weightless and massless string (Fig. 165), so as to oscillate as a pendulum. While in the position of equilibrium it suddenly receives the horizontal velocity V. It ascends by virtue of this velocity to an altitude $h = (l)(1 - \cos \alpha) = V^2/2g$, where l denotes the length of the pendulum, α the angle of elongation, and g the acceleration of gravity. As the relation $T = \pi \sqrt{l/g}$ subsists between the time of oscillation T and the quantities l, g, we easily obtain $V = (gT/\pi)\sqrt{2(1 - \cos \alpha)}$, and by the use of a familiar trigonometrical formula, also
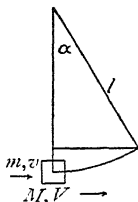
Fig. 165.

$$V = \frac{2}{\pi}gT \sin\frac{\alpha}{2}.$$

If now the velocity V is produced by a projectile of the mass m which being hurled with a velocity v and sinking in M is arrested in its progress, so that whether the impact is elastic or inelastic, in any case the two masses acquire after impact the *common* velocity V, it follows that $mv = (M + m)V$; or, if m be sufficiently small compared with M, also $v = (M/m)V$; whence finally

$$v = \frac{2}{\pi} \cdot \frac{M}{m}gT \sin\frac{\alpha}{2}.$$

If it is not permissible to regard the ballistic pen- A different deduction.
dulum as a simple pendulum, our reasoning, in con-
formity with principles before employed, will take the
following shape. The projectile m with the velocity v
has the momentum mv, which is diminished by the
pressure p due to impact in a very short interval of
time τ to mV. Here, then, $m(v-V) = p\tau$, or, if V
compared with v is very small, $mv = p\tau$. With Pon-
celet, we reject the assumption of anything like *in-
stantaneous* forces, which generate *instanter* velocities.
There are no instantaneous forces. What has been
called such are very great forces that produce per-
ceptible velocities in very short intervals of time, but
which in other respects do not differ from forces that
act continuously. If the force active in impact cannot
be regarded as constant during its entire period of ac-
tion, we have only to put in the place of the expression
$p\tau$ the expression $\int p\,dt$. In other respects the reason-
ing is the same.

A force equal to that which destroys the momentum The *vis viva* and
of the projectile, acts in reaction on the pendulum. If work of the pendulum.
we take the line of projection of the shot, and conse-
quently also the line of the force, perpendicular to the
axis of the pendulum and at the distance b from it, the
moment of this force will be bp, the angular accelera-
tion generated $bp/\Sigma mr^2$, and the angular velocity pro-
duced in time τ

$$\varphi = \frac{b \cdot p\tau}{\Sigma mr^2} = \frac{bmv}{\Sigma mr^2}.$$

The *vis viva* which the pendulum has at the end of
time τ is therefore

$$\tfrac{1}{2}\varphi^2 \Sigma mr^2 = \tfrac{1}{2}\frac{b^2 m^2 v^2}{\Sigma mr^2}.$$

By virtue of this *vis viva* the pendulum performs the excursion α, and its weight Mg, (a being the distance of the centre of gravity from the axis,) is lifted the distance $a(1 - \cos\alpha)$. The work performed here is $Mga(1 - \cos\alpha)$, which is equal to the above-mentioned *vis viva*. Equating the two expressions we readily obtain

$$v = \frac{\sqrt{2\,Mga\,\Sigma m r^2(1 - \cos\alpha)}}{m\,b},$$

and remembering that the time of oscillation is

$$T = \pi\sqrt{\frac{\Sigma m r^2}{Mga}},$$

and employing the trigonometrical reduction which was resorted to immediately above, also

$$v = \frac{2}{\pi}\frac{M}{m}\frac{a}{b}gT . \sin\frac{\alpha}{2}.$$

This formula is in every respect similar to that obtained for the simple case. The observations requisite for the determination of v, are the mass of the pendulum and the mass of the projectile, the distances of the centre of gravity and point of percussion from the axis, and the time and extent of oscillation. The formula also clearly exhibits the dimensions of a velocity. The expressions $2/\pi$ and $\sin(\alpha/2)$ are simple numbers, as are also M/m and a/b, where both numerators and denominators are expressed in units of the same kind. But the factor gT has the dimensions lt^{-1}, and is consequently a velocity. The ballistic pendulum was invented by ROBINS and described by him at length in a treatise entitled *New Principles of Gunnery*, published in 1742.

v.

D'ALEMBERT'S PRINCIPLE.

1. One of the most important principles for the History of the principle. rapid and convenient solution of the problems of mechanics is the *principle of D'Alembert*. The researches concerning the centre of oscillation on which almost all prominent contemporaries and successors of Huygens had employed themselves, led directly to a series of simple observations which D'ALEMBERT ultimately generalised and embodied in the principle which goes by his name. We will first cast a glance at these preliminary performances. They were almost without exception evoked by the desire to replace the deduction of Huygens, which did not appear sufficiently obvious, by one that was more *convincing*. Although this desire was founded, as we have already seen, on a miscomprehension due to historical circumstances, we have, of course, no occasion to regret the new points of view which were thus reached.

2. The first in importance of the founders of the James Bernoulli's contributions to the theory of the centre of oscillation. theory of the centre of oscillation, after Huygens, is JAMES BERNOULLI, who sought as early as 1686 to explain the compound pendulum by the lever. He arrived, however, at results which not only were obscure but also were at variance with the conceptions of Huygens. The errors of Bernoulli were animadverted on by the Marquis de L'HOPITAL in the *Journal de Rotterdam*, in 1690. The consideration of velocities acquired in *infinitely small* intervals of time in place of velocities acquired in *finite* times—a consideration which the last-named mathematician suggested—led to the removal

of the main difficulties that beset this problem ; and in 1691, in the *Acta Eruditorum*, and, later, in 1703, in the *Proceedings of the Paris Academy* James Bernoulli corrected his error and presented his results in a final and complete form. We shall here reproduce the essential points of his final deduction.

A horizontal, massless bar AB (Fig. 166) is free to rotate about A; and at the distances r, r' from A the masses m, m' are attached. The accelerations with which these masses *as thus connected* will fall must be different from the accelerations which they would assume if their connections were severed and they fell freely.

Fig. 166.

There will be one point and one only, at the distance x, as yet unknown, from A which will fall with the same acceleration as it would have if it were free, that is, with the acceleration g. This point is termed the centre of oscillation.

If m and m' were to be attracted to the earth, not proportionally to their masses, but m so as to fall when free with the acceleration $\varphi = gr/x$ and m' with the acceleration $\varphi' = gr'/x$, that is to say, if the *natural* accelerations of the masses were proportional to their distances from A, these masses would not interfere with one another when connected. In reality, however, m sustains, in consequence of the connection, an upward component acceleration $g - \varphi$, and m' receives in virtue of the same fact a downward component acceleration $\varphi' - g$; that is to say, the former suffers an upward force of $m(g - \varphi) = g(\overline{x - r}/x)m$ and the latter a downward force of $m'(\varphi' - g) = g(\overline{r' - x}/x)m'$.

Since, however, the masses exert what influence they have on each other solely through the medium of
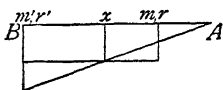
the lever by which they are joined, the upward force upon the one and the downward force upon the other must satisfy the law of the lever. If m in consequence of its being connected with the lever is held back by a force f from the motion which it would take, if free, it will also exert the same force f on the lever-arm r by reaction. It is this reaction pull alone that can be transferred to m' and be balanced there by a pressure $f' = (r/r') f$, and is therefore equivalent to the latter pressure. There subsists, therefore, agreeably to what has been above said, the relation $g \, (\overline{r' - x}/x) \, m' = r/r' \cdot g \, (\overline{x - r}/x) \, m$ or, $(x - r) \, m \, r = (r' - x) \, m' r'$, from which we obtain $x = (m \, r^2 + m' r'^2)/(m \, r + m' r')$, exactly as Huygens found it. The generalisation of this reasoning, for any number of masses, which need not lie in a single straight line, is obvious.

3. JOHN BERNOULLI (in 1712) attacked in a different manner the problem of the centre of oscillation. His performances are easiest consulted in his Collected Works (*Opera*, Lausanne and Geneva, 1762, Vols. II and IV). We shall examine in detail here the main ideas of this physicist. Bernoulli reaches his goal by conceiving the *masses* and *forces* separated.

First, let us consider two simple pendulums of dif- ferent lengths l, l' whose bobs are affected with gravitational accelerations proportional to the lengths of the pendulums, that is, let us put $l/l' = g/g'$. As the time of oscillation of a pendulum is $T = \pi \sqrt{l/g}$, it follows that the times of oscillation of these pendulums will be the same. Doubling the length of a pendulum, accordingly, while at the same time doubling the acceleration of gravity does not alter the period of oscillation.

Second, though we cannot directly alter the accel-

eration of gravity at any one spot on the earth, we
can do what amounts virtually to this. Thus, imagine
a straight massless bar of length $2a$, free to rotate about

its middle point; and attach to the one ex-
tremity of it the mass m and to the other the
mass m'. Then the total mass is $m + m'$ at
the distance a from the axis. But the force
which acts on it is $(m - m')\, g$, and the ac-
celeration, consequently, $\overline{(m - m'/m + m')}\, g$.
Hence, to find the length of the simple pen-
dulum, having the ordinary acceleration of

gravity g, which is isochronous with the present pen-
dulum of the length a, we put, employing the preced-
ing theorem,

$$\frac{l}{a} = \frac{g}{\dfrac{m - m'}{m + m'}\, g}, \text{ or } l = a\,\frac{m + m}{m - m'},$$

Fig. 167.

: m'
| a
|
| a
| m

Third, we imagine a simple pendulum of length 1
with the mass m at its extremity. The weight of m
produces, by the principle of the lever, the same ac-
celeration as half this force at a distance 2 from the
point of suspension. Half the mass m placed at the
distance 2, therefore, would suffer by the action of the
force impressed at 1 the same acceleration, and a fourth
of the mass m would suffer double the acceleration ; so
that a simple pendulum of the length 2 having the orig-
inal force at distance 1 from the point of suspension
and one-fourth the original mass at its extremity would
be isochronous with the original one. Generalising
this reasoning, it is evident that we may transfer any
force f acting on a compound pendulum at any dis-
tance r, to the distance 1 by making its value rf, and
any and every mass placed at the distance r to the
distance 1 by making its value $r^2 m$, without changing

the time of oscillation of the pendulum.   If a force f
act on a lever-arm a (Fig. 168) while at the distance r
from the axis a mass m is attached, f will be equiva-
lent to a force af/r impressed on
m and will impart to it the linear
acceleration af/mr and the angu-
lar acceleration af/mr^2. Hence,
to find the angular acceleration
of a compound pendulum, we

Fig. 168.

divide the sum of the *statical moments* by the sum of
the *moments of inertia*.
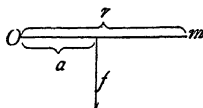
BROOK TAYLOR, an Englishman,* also developed
this idea, on substantially the same principles, but
quite independently of John Bernoulli.   His solution,
however, was not published until some time later, in
1715, in his work, *Methodus Incrementorum.*

The above are the most important attempts to solve
the problem of the centre of oscillation.   We shall see
that they contain the very same ideas that D'Alembert
enunciated in a generalised form.

4. On a system of points M, M', M''. . . . connected
with one another in any way,† the forces P, P', P''. . . .
are impressed.   (Fig. 169.)   These forces would im-
part to the *free* points of the system certain determinate
motions.   To the *connected* points, however, *different*
motions are usually imparted—motions which could
be produced by the forces W, W', W''. . . .   These
last are the motions which we shall study.

Conceive the force P resolved into W and V, the
force P' into W' and V', and the force P'' into W''

---

* Author of Taylor's theorem, and also of a remarkable work on perspec-
tive.—*Trans.*

† In precise technical language, they are subject to *constraints*, that is,
forces regarded as infinite, which compel a certain relation between their
motions.—*Trans.*

and V'', and so on. Since, owing to the connections,
only the components W, W', W''. . . . are effective,
therefore, the forces V, V', V''. . . . must be *equilib-
rated* by the connections. We will call the forces P, P',
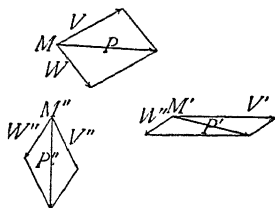
Fig. 169.

P'' the *impressed* forces,
the forces W, W', W''. . . .,
which produce the ac-
tual motions, the *effective*
forces, and the forces V,
V', V'' . . . . the forces
gained and lost, or the
equilibrated forces. We
perceive, thus, that if we
resolve the impressed forces into the effective forces
and the equilibrated forces, the latter form a system
balanced by the connections. This is the principle of
D'Alembert. We have allowed ourselves, in its expo-
sition, only the unessential modification of putting
forces for the momenta generated by the forces. In this
form the principle was stated by D'ALEMBERT in his
Traité de dynamique, published in 1743.

As the system V, V', V''. . . . is in *equilibrium*, the
principle of *virtual displacements* is applicable thereto.
This gives a second form of D'Alembert's principle.
A third form is obtained as follows : The forces P, P'. . . .
are the resultants of the components W, W'. . . . and
V, V'. . . . If, therefore, we combine with the forces
W, W'. . . . and V, V'. . . . the forces $-P$, $-P'$. . . .,
equilibrium will obtain. The force-system $-P$, W, V
is in equilibrium. But the system V is independently
in equilibrium. Therefore, also the system $-P$, W is
in equilibrium, or, what is the same thing, the system
P, $-W$ is in equilibrium. Accordingly, if the effective
forces with opposite signs be joined to the impressed

forces, the two, owing to the connections, will balance. The principle of virtual displacements may also be applied to the system $P, -IV$. This LAGRANGE did in his *Mécanique analytique*, 1788.

The fact that equilibrium subsists between the system P and the system $-IV$, may be expressed in still another way. We may say that the system IV is *equivalent* to the system P. In this form HERMANN (*Phoronomia*, 1716) and EULER (*Comment. Acad. Petrop.*,

Fig. 170.

Old Series, Vol. VII, 1740) employed the principle. It is substantially not different from that of D'Alembert.

5. We will now illustrate D'Alembert's principle by one or two examples.

On a massless wheel and axle with the radii R, r the loads P and Q are hung, which are not in equilibrium. We resolve the force P into (1) W (the force which would produce the actual motion of the mass if this were free) and (2) V, that is, we put $P = W + V$ and also $Q = W' + V'$; it being evident that we may here disregard all motions that are not in the vertical. We have, accordingly, $V = P - W$ and $V' = Q - W'$,

Fig. 171.

and, since the forces V, V' are in equilibrium, also $V.R = V'.r$. Substituting for V, V' in the last equation their values in the former, we get
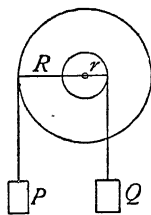
$$(P - W) R = (Q - W') r \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad (1)$$

which may also be directly obtained by the employment of the second form of D'Alembert's principle. From the conditions of the problem we readily perceive

that we have here to deal with a uniformly accelerated motion, and that all that is therefore necessary is to ascertain the acceleration. Adopting gravitation measure, we have the forces W and W', which produce in the masses P/g and Q/g the accelerations γ and γ'; wherefore, $W = (P/g)\gamma$ and $W' = (Q/g)\gamma'$. But we also know that $\gamma' = -\gamma(r/R)$. Accordingly, equation (1) passes into the form

$$\left(P - \frac{P}{g}\gamma \right) R = \left(Q + \frac{Q}{g}\frac{r}{R}\gamma \right) r \quad \cdots \quad (2)$$

whence the values of the two accelerations are obtained

$$\gamma = \frac{PR - Qr}{PR^2 + Qr^2}Rg, \text{ and } \gamma' = -\frac{PR - Qr}{PR^2 + Qr^2}rg.$$

These last determine the motion.

It will be seen at a glance that the same result can be obtained by the employment of the ideas of statical moment and moment of inertia. We get by this method for the angular acceleration

$$\varphi = \frac{PR - Qr}{\dfrac{P}{g}R^2 + \dfrac{Q}{g}r^2} = \frac{PR - Qr}{PR^2 + Qr^2} \cdot g;$$

and as $\gamma = R\varphi$ and $\gamma' = -r\varphi$ we re-obtain the preceding expressions.

When the masses and forces are given, the problem of finding the motion of a system is *determinate*. Suppose, however, only the acceleration γ is given with which P moves, and that the problem is to find the loads P and Q that produce this acceleration. We obtain easily from equation (2) the result $P = Q(Rg + r\gamma)r/(g - \gamma)R^2$, that is, a relation between P and Q. One of the two loads therefore is arbitrary. The prob-

lem in this form is an *indeterminate* one, and may be solved in an infinite number of different ways.

The following may serve as a second example.

A weight P (Fig. 172) free to move on a vertical straight line AB, is attached to a cord passing over a pulley and carrying a weight Q at the other end. The cord makes with the line AB the variable angle α. The motion of the present case cannot be uniformly accelerated. But if we consider only vertical motions we can easily give for every value of α the momentary accelera-

Fig. 172.

tion (γ and γ') of P and Q. Proceeding exactly as we did in the last case, we obtain

$$P = W + V,$$
$$Q = W' + V'$$

also

$$V' \cos \alpha = V, \text{ or, since } \gamma' = -\gamma \cos \alpha,$$

$$\left(Q + \frac{Q}{g} \cos \alpha \gamma\right) \cos \alpha = P - \frac{P}{g} \gamma; \text{ whence}$$

$$\gamma = \frac{P - Q \cos \alpha}{Q \cos^2 \alpha + P} g$$

$$\gamma' = -\frac{P - Q \cos \alpha}{Q \cos^2 \alpha + P} \cos \alpha \, g.$$

Again the same result may be easily reached by the employment of the ideas of statical moment and mo- ment of inertia in a more generalised form. The fol- lowing reflexion will render this clear. The force, or statical moment, that acts on P is $P - Q \cos \alpha$. But the weight Q moves $\cos \alpha$ times as fast as P; conse- quently its mass is to be taken $\cos^2 \alpha$ times. The ac- celeration which P receives, accordingly is,
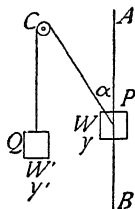
$$\gamma = \frac{P - Q\cos\alpha}{\dfrac{Q}{g}\cos^2\alpha + \dfrac{P}{g}} = \frac{P - Q\cos\alpha}{Q\cos^2\alpha + P}\; g.$$

In like manner the corresponding expression for γ' may be found.

The foregoing procedure rests on the simple remark, that not the circular path of the motion of the masses is of consequence, but only the *relative* velocities or *relative* displacements. This extension of the concept moment of inertia may often be employed to advantage.

Import and character of D'Alembert's principle. 6. Now that the application of D'Alembert's principle has been sufficiently illustrated, it will not be difficult to obtain a clear idea of its significance. Problems relating to the *motion* of connected points are here disposed of by recourse to experiences concerning the mutual actions of connected bodies reached in the investigation of problems of *equilibrium*. Where the last mentioned experiences do not suffice, D'Alembert's principle also can accomplish nothing, as the examples adduced will amply indicate. We should, therefore, carefully avoid the notion that D'Alembert's principle is a *general* one which renders special experiences superfluous. Its conciseness and apparent simplicity are wholly due to the fact that it refers us to experiences already in our possession. Detailed knowledge of the subject under consideration founded on exact and minute experience, cannot be dispensed with. This knowledge we must obtain either from the case presented, by a direct investigation, or we must previously have obtained it, in the investigation of some other subject, and carry it with us to the problem in hand. We learn, in fact, from D'Alembert's principle, as our examples show, nothing that we could not also have learned by

other methods. The principle fulfils in the solution of problems, the office of a routine-form which, to a certain extent, spares us the trouble of thinking out each new case, by supplying directions for the employment of experiences before known and familiar to us. The principle does not so much promote our *insight* into the processes as it secures us a *practical mastery* of them. The value of the principle is of an economical character.

When we have solved a problem by D'Alembert's principle, we may rest satisfied with the experiences previously made concerning equilibrium, the application of which the principle implies. But if we wish *clearly and thoroughly* to apprehend the phenomenon, that is, to rediscover in it the simplest mechanical elements with which we are familiar, we are obliged to push our researches further, and to replace our experiences concerning equilibrium either by the Newtonian or by the Huygenian conceptions, in some way similar to that pursued on page 266. If we adopt the former alternative, we shall mentally see the accelerated motions enacted which the mutual action of bodies on one another produces ; if we adopt the second, we shall directly contemplate the *work* done, on which, in the Huygenian conception, the *vis viva* depends. The latter point of view is particularly convenient if we employ the principle of virtual displacements to express the conditions of equilibrium of the system V or $P — W$. D'Alembert's principle then asserts, that the sum of the virtual moments of the system V, or of the system $P — W$, is equal to zero. The elementary work of the equilibrated forces, if we leave out of account the straining of the connections, is equal to zero. The total work done, then, is performed *solely* by the system P,

and the work performed by the system W must, accordingly, be equal to the work done by the system P. All the work that can *possibly* be done is due, neglecting the strains of the connections, to the *impressed* forces. As will be seen, D'Alembert's principle in this form is not essentially different from the principle of *vis viva*.

7. In practical applications the principle of D'Alembert it is convenient to resolve every force P impressed on a mass m of the system into the mutually perpendicular components X, Y, Z parallel to the axes of a system of rectangular coördinates; every effective force W into corresponding components $m\xi$, $m\eta$, $m\zeta$, where ξ, η, ζ denote accelerations in the directions of the coördinates; and every displacement, in a similar manner, into three displacements δx, δy, δz. As the work done by each component force is effective only in displacements parallel to the directions in which the components act, the equilibrium of the system $(P, -W)$ is given by the equation

$$\Sigma\{(X - m\xi)\,\delta x + (Y - m\eta)\,\delta y + (Z - m\zeta)\,\delta z\} = 0 \quad (1)$$

or

$$\Sigma (X\delta x + Y\delta y + Z\delta z) = \Sigma m(\xi\delta x + \eta\delta y + \zeta\delta z) \quad . \quad . \quad (2)$$

These two equations are the direct expression of the proposition above enunciated respecting the *possible* work of the impressed forces. If this work be $= 0$, the particular case of equilibrium results. The principle of virtual displacements flows as a *special* case from this expression of D'Alembert's principle; and this is quite in conformity with reason, since in the general as well as in the particular case the experimental perception of the *import of work* is the sole thing of consequence.

Equation (1) gives the requisite equations of mo-

tion; we have simply to express as many as possible of the displacements δx, δy, δz by the others in terms of their relations to the latter, and put the coefficients of the remaining arbitrary displacements $= 0$, as was illustrated in our applications of the principle of virtual displacements.

The solution of a very few problems by D'Alembert's principle will suffice to impress us with a full sense of its convenience. It will also give us the conviction that it is possible, in every case in which it may be found necessary, to solve directly and with perfect insight the very same problem by a consideration of elementary mechanical processes, and to arrive thereby at exactly the same results. Our conviction of the *feasibility* of this operation renders the performance of it, in cases in which purely practical ends are in view, unnecessary.

VI.

THE PRINCIPLE OF VIS VIVA.

1. The principle of *vis viva*, as we know, was first employed by HUYGENS. JOHN and DANIEL BERNOULLI had simply to provide for a greater generality of expression; they added little. If p, p', p''.... are weights, m, m', m''.... their respective masses, h, h', h''.... the distances of descent of the free or connected masses, and v, v', v''.... the velocities acquired, the relation obtains

$$\Sigma p h = \tfrac{1}{2} \Sigma m v^2.$$

If the initial velocities are not $= 0$, but are v_0, $v_0{'}$, $v_0{''}$...., the theorem will refer to the increment of the *vis viva* by the work and read

$$\Sigma p h = \tfrac{1}{2} \Sigma m (v^2 - v_0{}^2).$$

The principle still remains applicable when p .... are, not weights, but any constant forces, and h ... not the vertical spaces fallen through, but any paths in the lines of the forces. If the forces considered are variable, the expressions $p\,h,\ p'h'$ .... must be replaced by the expressions $\int p\,ds,\ \int p'\,ds'$ ...., in which p denotes the variable forces and ds the elements of distance described in the lines of the forces. Then

$$\int p\,ds + \int p'\,ds' + \ldots = \tfrac{1}{2}\Sigma\,m\,(v^2 - v_0{}^2)$$

or

$$\Sigma \int p\,ds = \tfrac{1}{2}\Sigma\,m\,(v^2 - v_0{}^2) \ . \ . \ . \ . \ . \ . \ . \ . \ (1)$$

2. In illustration of the principle of *vis viva* we shall first consider the simple problem which we treated by the principle of D'Alembert. On a wheel and axle with the radii $R,\ r$ hang the weights $P,\ Q$. When this machine is set in motion, work is performed by which the acquired *vis viva* is fully determined. For a rotation of the machine through the angle α, the *work* is
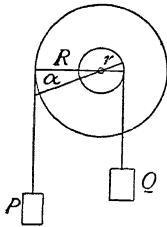
Fig. 173.

$$P \cdot R\,\alpha - Q \cdot r\,\alpha = \alpha\,(PR - Qr).$$

Calling the angular velocity which corresponds to this angle of rotation, φ, the *vis viva* generated will be

$$\frac{P}{g}\frac{(R\,\varphi)^2}{2} + \frac{Q}{g}\frac{(r\,\varphi)^2}{2} = \frac{\varphi^2}{2g}(PR^2 + Qr^2).$$

Consequently, the equation obtains

$$\alpha\,(PR - Qr) = \frac{\varphi^2}{2g}(PR^2 + Qr^2) \ . \ . \ . \ . \ . \ (1)$$

Now the motion of this case is a uniformly accelerated motion; consequently, the *same* relation obtains here between the angle α, the angular velocity φ, and the

angular acceleration ψ, as obtains in free descent between s, v, g. If in free descent $s = v^2/2g$, then here $\alpha = \varphi^2/2\psi$.

Introducing this value of α in equation (1), we get for the angular acceleration of P, $\psi = (\overline{PR - Qr}/\overline{PR^2 + Qr^2})g$, and, consequently, for its absolute acceleration $\gamma = (\overline{PR - Qr}/PR^2 + Qr^2) Rg$, exactly as in the previous treatment of the problem.

As a second example let us consider the case of a massless cylinder of radius r, in the surface of which, diametrically opposite each other, are fixed two equal masses m, and which in consequence of the weight of

A rolling cylinder on an inclined plane.
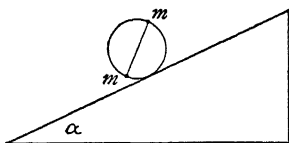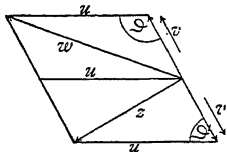
Fig. 174.   Fig. 175.

these masses rolls without sliding down an inclined plane of the elevation α. First, we must convince ourselves, that in order to represent the total *vis viva* of the system we have simply to sum up the *vis viva* of the motions of rotation and progression. The axis of the cylinder has acquired, we will say, the velocity u in the direction of the length of the inclined plane, and we will denote by v the absolute velocity of rotation of the surface of the cylinder. The velocities of rotation v of the two masses m make with the velocity of progression u the angles θ and θ' (Fig. 175), where $\theta + \theta' = 180°$. The compound velocities w and z satisfy therefore the equations

$$w^2 = u^2 + v^2 - 2uv\cos\theta$$
$$z^2 = u^2 + v^2 - 2uv\cos\theta'.$$

THE SCIENCE OF MECHANICS.

The law of
motion of
such a
cylinder. But since $\cos\theta = -\cos\theta'$, it follows that
$$w^2 + z^2 = 2u^2 + 2v^2, \text{ or,}$$
$$\tfrac{1}{2}mw^2 + \tfrac{1}{2}mz^2 = \tfrac{1}{2}m2u^2 + \tfrac{1}{2}m2v^2 = mu^2 + mv^2.$$

If the cylinder moves through the angle φ, m describes in consequence of the rotation the space $r\varphi$, and the axis of the cylinder is likewise displaced a distance $r\varphi$. As the spaces traversed are to each other, so also are the velocities v and u, which therefore are equal. The total *vis viva* may accordingly be expressed by $2mu^2$. If l is the distance the cylinder travels along the length of the inclined plane, the work done is $2mg.l\sin\alpha = 2mu^2$; whence $u = \sqrt{gl.\sin\alpha}$. If we compare with this result the velocity acquired by a body in *sliding* down an inclined plane, namely, the velocity $\sqrt{2gl\sin\alpha}$, it will be observed that the contrivance we are here considering moves with only one-half the acceleration of descent that (friction neglected) a sliding body would under the same circumstances. The reasoning of this case is not altered if the mass be uniformly distributed over the entire surface of the cylinder. Similar considerations are applicable to the case of a *sphere* rolling down an inclined plane. It will be seen, therefore, that Galileo's experiment on falling bodies is in need of a quantitative correction.

A modifica-
tion of the
preceding
case. Next, let us distribute the mass m uniformly over the surface of a cylinder of radius R, which is coaxal with and rigidly joined to a massless cylinder of radius r, and let the latter roll down the inclined plane. Since here $v/u = R/r$, the principle of *vis viva* gives $mgl \sin\alpha = \tfrac{1}{2}mu^2(1 + R^2/r^2)$, whence

$$u = \sqrt{\dfrac{2gl\sin\alpha}{1 + \dfrac{R^2}{r^2}}}.$$

For $R/r = 1$ the acceleration of descent assumes its previous value $g/2$. For very large values of R/r the acceleration of descent is very small. When $R/r = \infty$ it will be impossible for the machine to roll down the inclined plane at all.

As a third example, we will consider the case of a chain, whose total length is l, and which lies partly on a horizontal plane and partly on a plane having the angle of elevation α. If we imagine the surface on which the chain rests to be very smooth, any very small portion of the chain left hanging over on the in-
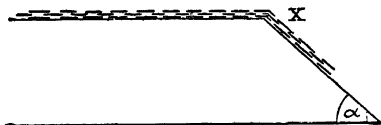
Fig. 176.

clined plane will draw the remainder after it. If μ is the mass of unit of length of the chain and a portion x is hanging over, the principle of *vis viva* will give for the velocity v acquired the equation

$$\frac{\mu l v^2}{2} = \mu x g \frac{x}{2} \sin \alpha = \mu g \frac{x^2}{2} \sin \alpha,$$

or $v = x \sqrt{g \sin \alpha / l}$. In the present case, therefore, the velocity acquired is proportional to the space described. The very law holds that Galileo first conjectured was the law of freely falling bodies. The same reflexions, accordingly, are admissible here as at page 248.

3. Equation (1), the equation of *vis viva*, can always be employed, to solve problems of moving bodies, when the *total* distance traversed and the force that acts in each element of the distance are known. It was disclosed, however, by the labors of Euler, Daniel Bernoulli, and Lagrange, that cases occur in which the

principle of *vis viva* can be employed without a knowledge of the *actual path* of the motion. We shall see later on that Clairaut also rendered important services in this field.

Galileo, even, knew that the velocity of a heavy falling body depended solely on the *vertical height* descended through, and not on the length or *form* of the path traversed. Similarly, Huygens finds that the *vis viva* of a heavy material system is dependent on the

Fig. 177.

vertical heights of the masses of the system. Euler was able to make a further step in advance. If a body K (Fig. 177) is attracted towards a fixed centre C in obedience to some given law, the increase of the *vis viva* in the case of rectilinear approach is calculable from the initial and terminal distances $(r_o, r_{,})$. But the increase is the same, if K passes at all from the position r_o to the position $r_{,}$, independently of the *form of its path, KB*. For the elements of the work done must be calculated from the projections on the radius of the actual displacements, and are thus ultimately the same as before.

If K is attracted towards several fixed centres C, C', C''. . . ., the increase of its *vis viva* depends on the initial distances r_o, r_o', r_o''. . . . and on the terminal distances $r_{,}$, $r_{,}'$, $r_{,}''$. . . ., that is on the initial and terminal *positions* of K. Daniel Bernoulli extended this idea, and showed further that where movable bodies are in a state of *mutual* attraction the change of *vis viva* is determined solely by their initial and terminal dis-

tances from one another. The *analytical* treatment of these problems was perfected by Lagrange. If we join a point having the coördinates a, b, c with a point having the coördinates x, y, z, and denote by r the length of the line of junction and by α, β, γ the angles that line makes with the axes of x, y, z, then, according to Lagrange, because

$$r^2 = (x - a)^2 + (y - b)^2 + (z - c)^2,$$

$$\cos \alpha = \frac{x - a}{r} = \frac{dr}{dx}, \ \cos \beta = \frac{y - b}{r} = \frac{dr}{dy},$$

$$\cos \gamma = \frac{z - c}{r} = \frac{dr}{dz}.$$

Accordingly, if $f(r) = \dfrac{dF(r)}{dr}$ is the repulsive force, or the negative of the attractive force acting between the two points, the components will be

$$X = f(r) \cos \alpha = \frac{dF(r)}{dr}\frac{dr}{dx} = \frac{dF(r)}{dx},$$

$$Y = f(r) \cos \beta = \frac{dF(r)}{dr}\frac{dr}{dy} = \frac{dF(r)}{dy},$$

$$Z = f(r) \cos \gamma = \frac{dF(r)}{dr}\frac{dr}{dz} = \frac{dF(r)}{dz}.$$

The force-components, therefore, are the partial differential coefficients of *one and the same* function of r, or of the coördinates of the repelling or attracting points. Similarly, if several points are in mutual action, the result will be

$$X = \frac{dU}{dx}$$

$$Y = \frac{dU}{dy}$$

$$Z = \frac{dU}{dz},$$

where U is a function of the coördinates of the points. This function was subsequently called by Hamilton[*] the *force-function.*

Transforming, by means of the conceptions here reached, and under the suppositions given, equation (1) into a form applicable to rectangular coördinates, we obtain

$$\Sigma \int (X dx + Y dy + Z dz) = \Sigma \tfrac{1}{2} m (v^2 - v_0^2) \text{ or,}$$

since the expression to the left is a complete differential,

$$\Sigma \left(\int \frac{dU}{dx} dx + \frac{dU}{dy} dy + \frac{dU}{dz} dz \right) =$$
$$\Sigma \int dU = \Sigma (U_1 - U_0) = \Sigma \tfrac{1}{2} m (v^2 - v_0^2),$$

where U_1 is a function of the terminal values and U_0 the *same* function of the initial values of the coördinates. This equation has received extensive applications, but it simply expresses the knowledge that under the conditions designated the *work done* and therefore also the *vis viva* of a system is *dependent* on the *positions,* or the coördinates, of the bodies constituting it.

If we imagine all masses fixed and only a single one in motion, the work changes only as U changes. The equation $U = constant$ defines a so-called level surface, or surface of equal work. Movement upon such a surface produces no work. U increases in the direction in which the forces tend to move the bodies.

VII.

THE PRINCIPLE OF LEAST CONSTRAINT.

1. GAUSS enunciated (in Crelle's *Journal für Mathematik*, Vol. IV, 1829, p. 233) a new law of mechanics, the principle of *least constraint.* He observes, that, in

---

[*] *On a General Method in Dynamics, Phil. Trans.* for 1834. See also C. G. J. Jacobi, *Vorlesungen über Dynamik,* edited by Clebsch, 1866.

the form which mechanics has historically assumed, dy-
namics is founded upon statics, (for example, D'Alem-
bert's principle on the principle of virtual displace-
ments,) whereas one naturally would expect that in
the highest stage of the science statics would appear ·
as a particular case of dynamics.   Now, the principle
which Gauss supplied, and which we shall discuss in
this section, includes both dynamical and statical cases.
It meets, therefore, the requirements of scientific and
logical æsthetics. We have already pointed out that this
is also true of D'Alembert's principle in its Lagrangian
form and the mode of expression above adopted.
No *essentially new principle*, Gauss remarks, can now be
established in mechanics ; but this does not exclude
the discovery of *new points of view*, from which mechan-
ical phenomena may be fruitfully contemplated. Such
a new point of view is afforded by the principle of
Gauss.

2. Let m, m, ... be masses, connected in any man-
ner with one another. These masses, if *free*, would, under
the action of the forces im-
pressed on them, describe in a
very short element of time the
spaces a b, a, b, ...; but in
consequence of their *connec-*
tions they describe in the same
element of time the spaces a c,
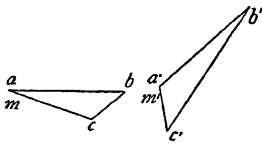
Fig. 178.

a, c, ... Now, Gauss's principle asserts, that the mo-
tion of the connected points is such that, *for the motion
actually taken*, the sum of the products of the mass of
each material particle into the square of the distance of
its deviation from the position it would have reached if
free, namely $m(bc)^2 + m,(b,c,)^2 + \ldots . = \Sigma m(bc)^2$, is
a *minimum*, that is, is smaller for the actual motion

than for any other conceivable motion *in the same connections.* If this sum, $\Sigma\, m(b\,c)^2$, is less for *rest* than for any motion, equilibrium will obtain. The principle includes, thus, both statical and dynamical cases.

The sum $\Sigma\, m(b\,c)^2$ is called the "constraint."* In forming this sum it is plain that the velocities present in the system may be neglected, as the relative positions of a, b, c are not altered by them.

3. The new principle is equivalent to that of D'Alembert; it may be used in place of the latter; and, as Gauss has shown, can also be deduced from it. The *impressed* forces carry the free mass m in an element of time through the space $a\,b$, the *effective* forces carry the same mass in the same time in consequence of the connections through the space $a\,c$. We resolve $a\,b$ into $a\,c$
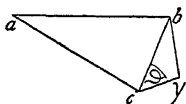
and $c\,b$; and do the same for all the masses. It is thus evident that forces corresponding to the distances $c\,b$, c, b, ... and proportional to $m\,c\,b$, m, c, b,..., do not, owing to the connections, become

Fig. 179.

effective, but form with the connections an equilibrating system. If, therefore, we erect at the terminal positions c, $c_{,}$, $c_{,,}$.... the virtual displacements $c\,\gamma$, c, $\gamma_{,}$,...., forming with $c\,b$, c, $b_{,}$.... the angles θ, $\theta_{,}$.... we may apply, since by D'Alembert's principle forces proportional to $m\,c\,b$, m, c, $b_{,}$.... are here in equilibrium, the principle of virtual velocities. Doing so, we shall have

* Professor Mach's term is *Abweichungssumme.* The *Abweichung* is the *declination* or *departure* from free motion, called by Gauss the *Ablenkung.* (See Dühring, *Principien der Mechanik*, §§ 168, 169; Routh, *Rigid Dynamics*, Part I, §§ 390-394.) The quantity $\Sigma\, m(b\,c)^2$ is called by Gauss the *Zwang*; and German mathematicians usually follow this practice. In English, the term *constraint* is established in this sense, although it is also used with another, hardly quantitative meaning, for the force which restricts a body absolutely to moving in a certain way.—*Trans.*

$\Sigma\, m\, c\, b \,.\, c\, \gamma \cos\theta \gtreqless 0$ . . . . (1)

But

$(b\gamma)^2 = (bc)^2 + (c\gamma)^2 - 2\,bc\,.\,c\gamma \cos\theta,$

$(b\gamma)^2 - (bc)^2 = (c\gamma)^2 - 2\,bc\,.\,c\gamma \cos\theta,$ and

$\Sigma\, m\,(b\gamma)^2 - \Sigma\, m\,(bc)^2 = \Sigma\, m\,(c\gamma)^2 - 2\,\Sigma\, m\,bc\,.\,c\gamma \cos\theta$ (2)

Accordingly, since by (1) the second member of the right-hand side of (2) can only be $= 0$ or *negative*, that is to say, as the sum $\Sigma\, m\,(c\gamma)^2$ can never be diminished by the subtraction, but only *increased*, therefore the left-hand side of (2) must also always be positive and consequently $\Sigma\, m\,(b\gamma)^2$ always greater than $\Sigma\, m\,(bc)^2$, which is to say, every conceivable constraint from unhindered motion is greater than the constraint for the actual motion.

4. The declination, bc, for the very small element of time τ, may, for purposes of practical treatment, be designated by s, and following Scheffler (Schlömilch's *Zeitschrift für Mathematik und Physik*, 1858, Vol. III, p. 197), we may remark that $s = \gamma\tau^2/2$, where γ denotes acceleration. Consequently, $\Sigma\, m\, s^2$ may also be expressed in the forms

$$\Sigma\, m\,.\,s\,.\,s = \frac{\tau^2}{2}\,\Sigma\, m\,\gamma\,.\,s = \frac{\tau^2}{2}\,\Sigma\, p\,.\,s = \frac{\tau^4}{4}\,\Sigma\, m\,\gamma^2,$$

where p denotes the force that produces the declination from free motion. As the constant factor in no wise affects the minimum condition, we may say, the actual motion is always such that

$\quad\quad \Sigma\, m\, s^2$ . . . . (1)

or

$\quad\quad \Sigma\, p\, s$ . . . . (2)

or

$\quad\quad \Sigma\, m\,\gamma^2$ . . . . (3)

is a minimum.

5. We will first employ, in our illustrations, the third form. Here again, as our first example, we se-
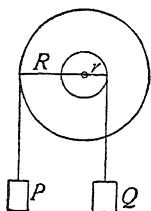
Fig. 180.

lect the motion of a wheel and axle by the overweight of one of its parts and shall use the designations above frequently employed. Our problem is, to so determine the actual accelerations γ of P and γ, of Q, that $(P/g)\,(g-\gamma)^2 + (Q/g)\,(g-\gamma_{\prime})^2$ shall be a minimum, or, since $\gamma_{\prime} = -\gamma\,(r/R)$, so that $P\,(g-\gamma)^2 +$ $Q(g+\gamma.r/R)^2 = N$ shall assume its smallest value. Putting, to this end,

$$\frac{dN}{d\gamma} = -P(g-\gamma) + Q\left(g+\gamma\frac{r}{R}\right)\frac{r}{R} = 0,$$

we get $\gamma = (\overline{PR - Qr}/\overline{PR^2 + Qr^2})\,Rg$, exactly as in the previous treatments of the problem.

As our second example, the motion of descent on an inclined plane may be taken. In this case we shall
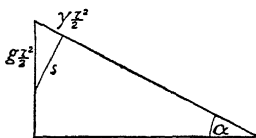
Fig. 181.

employ the first form, $\Sigma\,m\,s^2$. Since we have here only to deal with one mass, our inquiry will be directed to finding that acceleration of descent γ for the plane by which the square of the declination (s^2) is made a minimum. By Fig. 181 we have

$$s^2 = \left(g\frac{\tau^2}{2}\right)^2 + \left(\gamma\frac{\tau^2}{2}\right)^2 - 2\left(g\frac{\tau^2}{2}\cdot\gamma\frac{\tau^2}{2}\right)\sin\alpha,$$

and putting $d(s^2)/d\gamma = 0$, we obtain, omitting all constant factors, $2\gamma - 2g\sin\alpha = 0$ or $\gamma = g.\sin\alpha$, the familiar result of Galileo's researches.

The following example will show that Gauss's prin- ciple also embraces cases of equilibrium. On the arms a, a' of a lever (Fig. 182) are hung the heavy masses m, m'. The principle requires that $m(g - \gamma)^2 + m'(g - \gamma')^2$ shall be a minimum. But $\gamma' = -\gamma(a'/a)$. Further, if the masses are in-versely proportional to the lengths of the lever-arms, that is to say, if $m/m' = a'/a$, then $\gamma' = -\gamma(m/m')$. Conse-
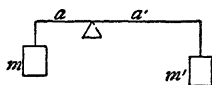
Fig. 182.

quently, $m(g - \gamma)^2 + m'(g + \gamma \cdot m/m')^2 = N$ must be made a minimum. Putting $dN/d\gamma = 0$, we get $m(1 + m/m')\gamma = 0$ or $\gamma = 0$. Accordingly, in this case *equilibrium* presents the least constraint from free motion.

Every *new* cause of constraint, or restriction upon the freedom of motion, increases the quantity of con-straint, but the increase is always the least possible. If two or more systems be connected, the motion of least constraint from the motions of the unconnected systems is the actual motion.

If, for example, we join together several simple pendulums so as to form a compound linear pendulum, the latter will oscillate with the motion of least constraint from the motion of the single pendulums. The simple pendulum, for any excursion α, receives, in the di-rection of its path, the acceleration g $\sin\alpha$. Denoting, therefore, by $\gamma \sin\alpha$ the acceleration corresponding to this excur-sion at the axial distance 1 on the com-

Fig. 183.

pound pendulum, $\Sigma m(g\sin\alpha - r\gamma\sin\alpha)^2$ or $\Sigma m(g - r\gamma)^2$ will be the quantity to be made a minimum. Conse-quently, $\Sigma m(g - r\gamma)r = 0$, and $\gamma = g(\Sigma mr/\Sigma mr^2)$.
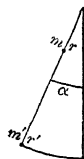
The problem is thus disposed of in the simplest manner. But this simple solution is possible only because the *experiences* that Huygens, the Bernoullis, and others long before collected, are implicitly contained in Gauss's principle.

6. The *increase* of the quantity of constraint, or declination, from free motion by *new* causes of constraint may be exhibited by the following examples.

Over two stationary pulleys *A, B*, and beneath a movable pulley *C* (Fig. 184), a cord is passed, each
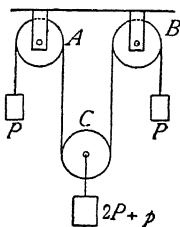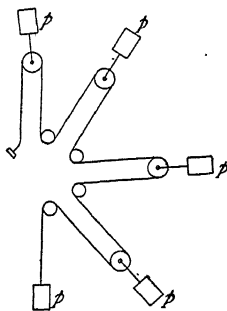
Fig. 184.   Fig. 185.

extremity of which is weighted with a load *P*; and on *C* a load $2P + p$ is placed. The movable pulley will now descend with the acceleration $(p/\overline{4P + p})\, g$. But if we make the pulley *A* fast, we impose upon the system a new cause of constraint, and the quantity of constraint, or declination, from free motion will be increased. The load suspended from *B*, since it now moves with double the velocity, must be reckoned as possessing four times its original mass. The movable pulley accordingly sinks with the acceleration $(p/\overline{6P + p})\, g$. A simple calculation will show that the constraint in the latter case is greater than in the former.

A number, *n*, of equal weights, *p*, lying on a smooth horizontal surface, are attached to *n* small movable pulleys through which a cord is drawn in the manner indicated in the figure and loaded at its free extremity with *p*. According as *all* the pulleys are *movable* or *all except one* are *fixed*, we obtain for the motive weight *p*, allowing for the relative velocities of the masses as referred to *p*, respectively, the accelerations $(4n/\overline{1+4n})g$ and $(4/5)\,g$. If all the $n+1$ masses are movable, the deviation assumes the value $pg/\overline{4n+1}$, which increases as *n*, the number of the movable masses, is decreased.
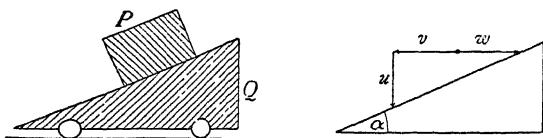
Fig. 186.

7. Imagine a body of weight *Q*, movable on rollers on a horizontal surface, and having an inclined plane face. On this inclined face a body of weight *P* is placed. We now perceive *instinctively* that *P* will descend with *quicker* acceleration when *Q* is movable and can give way, than it will when *Q* is fixed and *P*'s descent more hindered. To any distance of descent *h* of *P* a horizontal velocity *v* and a vertical velocity *u* of *P* and a horizontal velocity *w* of *Q* correspond. Owing to the conservation of the quantity of horizontal motion, (for here only internal forces act,) we have $Pv = Qw$, and for obvious geometrical reasons (Fig. 186) also

$$u = (v + w)\tan\alpha$$

The velocities, consequently, are

$$u = u$$

$$v = \frac{Q}{P+Q} \cot \alpha . u,$$

$$w = \frac{P}{P+Q} \cot \alpha . u.$$

For the work Ph performed, the principle of *vis viva* gives

$$Ph = \frac{P}{g} \frac{u^2}{2} + \frac{P}{g} \left(\frac{Q}{P+Q} \cot \alpha \right)^2 \frac{u^2}{2} + $$
$$\frac{Q}{g} \left(\frac{P}{P+Q} \cot \alpha \right)^2 \frac{u^2}{2}.$$

Multiplying by $\frac{g}{P}$, we obtain

$$gh = \left(1 + \frac{Q}{P+Q} \frac{\cos^2 \alpha}{\sin^2 \alpha} \right) \frac{u^2}{2}.$$

To find the *vertical* acceleration γ with which the space h is described, be it noted that $h = u^2/2\gamma$. Introducing this value in the last equation, we get

$$\gamma = \frac{(P+Q) \sin^2 \alpha}{P \sin^2 \alpha + Q} . g.$$

For $Q = \infty$, $\gamma = g \sin^2 \alpha$, the same as on a stationary inclined plane. For $Q = 0$, $\gamma = g$, as in free descent. For finite values of $Q = mP$, we get,

$$\text{since } \frac{1+m}{\sin^2 \alpha + m} > 1,$$

$$\gamma = \frac{(1+m) \sin^2 \alpha}{m + \sin^2 \alpha} . g > g \sin^2 \alpha.$$

The making of Q stationary, being a newly imposed cause of constraint, accordingly *increases* the quantity of constraint, or declination, from free motion.

To obtain γ, in this case, we have employed the principle of the conservation of momentum and the

principle of *vis viva.* Employing Gauss's principle,
we should proceed as follows. To the velocities de-
noted as u, v, w the accelerations γ, δ, ε correspond.
Remarking that in the free state the only acceleration
is the vertical acceleration of P, the others vanishing,
the procedure required is, to make

$$\frac{P}{g}(g-\gamma)^2 + \frac{P}{g}\delta^2 + \frac{Q}{g}\varepsilon^2 = N$$

a minimum. As the problem possesses significance
only when the bodies P and Q touch, that is only when
$\gamma = (\delta + \varepsilon)\tan\alpha$, therefore, also

$$N = \frac{P}{g}[g-(\delta+\varepsilon)\tan\alpha]^2 + \frac{P}{g}\delta^2 + \frac{Q}{g}\varepsilon^2.$$

Forming the differential coefficients of this expression
with respect to the two remaining independent vari-
ables δ and ε, and putting each equal to zero, we ob-
tain

$$-[g-(\delta+\varepsilon)\tan\alpha]\,P\tan\alpha + P\delta = 0 \text{ and}$$
$$-[g-(\delta+\varepsilon)\tan\alpha]\,P\tan\alpha + Q\varepsilon = 0.$$

From these two equations follows immediately
$P\delta - Q\varepsilon = 0$, and, ultimately, the same value for γ
that we obtained before.

We will now look at this problem from another
point of view. The body P describes at an angle β
with the horizon the space s, of which the horizontal
and vertical components are v and u, while simulta-
neously Q describes the horizontal distance w. The
force-component that acts in the direction of s is $P\sin\beta$,
consequently the acceleration in this direction, allow-
ing for the relative velocities of P and Q, is

$$\frac{P \cdot \sin\beta}{\dfrac{P}{g} + \dfrac{Q}{g}\left(\dfrac{w}{s}\right)^2}.$$

Third, by
the ex-
tended con-
cept of mo-
ment of in-
ertia. Employing the following equations which are directly deducible,

$$Q w = P v$$
$$v = s \cos \beta$$
$$u = v \tan \beta.$$

the acceleration in the direction of s becomes

$$\frac{Q \sin \beta}{Q + P \cos^2 \beta} g$$

and the vertical acceleration corresponding thereto is

$$\gamma = \frac{Q \sin^2 \beta}{Q + P \cos^2 \beta} \cdot g,$$

an expression, which as soon as we introduce by means of the equation $u = (v + w) \tan \alpha$, the angle-functions of α for those of β, again assumes the form above given. By means of our extended conception of moment of inertia we reach, accordingly, the same result as before.

Finally we will deal with this problem in a direct manner. The body P does not descend on the movable inclined plane with the vertical acceleration g, with which it would fall if free, but with a different vertical acceleration, γ. It sustains, therefore, a vertical counterforce $(P/g)(g - \gamma)$. But as P and Q, friction neglected, can only act on each other by means of a pressure S, *normal* to the inclined plane, therefore

$$\frac{P}{g}(g - \gamma) = S \cos \alpha \text{ and}$$

$$S \sin \alpha = \frac{Q}{g} \varepsilon = \frac{P}{g} \delta.$$

From this is obtained

$$\frac{P}{g}(g - \gamma) = \frac{Q}{g} \varepsilon \cot \alpha,$$

and by means of the equation $\gamma = (\delta + \varepsilon) \tan \alpha$, ultimately, as before,

$$\gamma = \frac{(P + Q)\sin^2 \alpha}{P \sin^2 \alpha + Q} g \cdot \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots (1)$$

$$\delta = \frac{Q \sin \alpha \cos \alpha}{P \sin^2 \alpha + Q} g \cdot \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots (2)$$

$$\varepsilon = \frac{P \sin \alpha \cos \alpha}{P \sin^2 \alpha + Q} g \cdot \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots (3)$$

If we put $P = Q$ and $\alpha = 45°$, we obtain for this particular case $\gamma = \frac{2}{3}g$, $\delta = \frac{1}{3}g$, $\varepsilon = \frac{1}{3}g$. For $P/g =$ Discussion of the results. $Q/g = 1$ we find the "constraint," or declination from free motion, to be $g^2/3$. If we make the inclined plane stationary, the constraint will be $g^2/2$. If P moved on a stationary inclined plane of elevation β, where $\tan \beta = \gamma/\delta$, that is to say, in the same path in which it moves on the movable inclined plane, the constraint would only be $g^2/5$. And, in that case it would, in reality, be less impeded than if it attained the same acceleration by the displacement of Q.

8. The examples treated will have convinced us that Gauss's principle affords no new insight. *no substantially new* insight or perception is afforded by Gauss's principle. Employing form (3) of the principle and resolving all the forces and accelerations in the mutually perpendicular coördinate-directions, giving here the letters the same significations as in equation (1) on page 342, we get in place of the declination, or constraint, $\Sigma m \gamma^2$, the expression

$$N = \Sigma m \left[\left(\frac{X}{m} - \xi \right)^2 + \left(\frac{Y}{m} - \eta \right)^2 + \left(\frac{Z}{m} - \zeta \right)^2 \right] \quad (4)$$

and by virtue of the minimum condition

$$dN = 2 \Sigma m \left[\left(\frac{X}{m} - \xi \right) d\xi + \left(\frac{Y}{m} - \eta \right) d\eta + \right.$$

$$\left(\frac{Z}{m} - \ddot{z}\right)d\ddot{z}\bigg] = 0.$$

or $\Sigma\left[(X - m\ddot{\xi})d\ddot{\xi} + (Y - m\ddot{\eta})d\ddot{\eta} + (Z - m\ddot{z})d\ddot{z}\right] = 0.$

Gauss's and D'Alembert's principles commutable.

If no connections exist, the coefficients of the (in that case arbitrary) $d\ddot{\xi}$, $d\ddot{\eta}$, $d\ddot{z}$, severally made $= 0$, give the equations of motion. But if connections do exist, we have the same relations between $d\ddot{\xi}$, $d\ddot{\eta}$, $d\ddot{z}$ as above in equation (1), at page 342, between δx, δy, δz. The equations of motion come out the same; as the treatment of the *same* example by D'Alembert's principle and by Gauss's principle fully demonstrates. The first principle, however, gives the equations of motion directly, the second only after differentiation. If we seek an expression that shall give by differentiation D'Alembert's equations, we are led perforce to the principle of Gauss. The principle, therefore, is new only in *form* and not in *matter*. Nor does it, further, possess any advantage over the Lagrangian form of D'Alembert's principle in respect of competency to comprehend both statical *and* dynamical problems, as has been before pointed out (page 342).

The physical basis of the principle.

There is no need of seeking a mystical or *metaphysical* reason for Gauss's principle. The expression "least constraint" may seem to promise something of the sort; but the name proves nothing. The answer to the question, *"In what* does this constraint consist?"* cannot be derived from metaphysics, but must be sought in the facts. The expression (2) of page 353, or (4) of page 361, which is made a minimum, represents the *work* done in an element of time by the deviation of the constrained motion from the free motion. This work, *the work due to the constraint,* is less for the motion actually performed than for any other possible motion.

Once we have recognised *work* as the factor deter-
minative of motion, once we have grasped the mean-
ing of the principle of virtual displacements to be, that
motion can never take place except where work can be
performed, the following converse truth also will in-
volve no difficulty, namely, that *all* the work that *can*
be performed in an element of time actually *is* per-
formed. Consequently, the total diminution of work
due in an element of time to the connections of the
system's parts is restricted to the portion annulled by
the *counter-work* of those parts. It is again merely a
new aspect of a familiar fact with which we have here
to deal.

This relation is displayed in the very simplest cases.
Let there be two masses *m* and *m* at *A,* the one im-
pressed with a force *p,* the other with
the force *q.* If we connect the two, we
shall have the mass 2 *m* acted on by a
resultant force *r.* Supposing the spaces
described in an element of time by the
free masses to be represented by *A C,*
A B, the space described by the con-
joint, or double, mass will be $AO = \frac{1}{2} AD$. The deviation, or constraint,
is $m(OB^2 + OC^2)$. It is less than
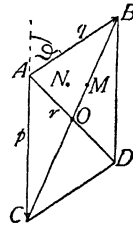
Fig. 187.

it would be if the mass arrived at the end of the ele-
ment of time in *M* or indeed in any point lying out-
side of *B C,* say *N,* as the simplest geometrical con-
siderations will show. The deviation is proportional
to the expression $\overline{p^2 + q^2 + 2pq \cos \theta}/2$, which in the
case of equal and opposite forces becomes $2p^2$, and in
the case of equal and like-directed forces zero.

Two forces *p* and *q* act on the same mass. The
force *q* we resolve parallel and at right angles to the

direction of p in r and s. The work done in an element of time is proportional to the squares of the forces, and if there be no connections is expressible by $p^2 + q^2 = p^2 + r^2 + s^2$. If now r act directly counter to the force p, a diminution of work will be effected and the sum mentioned becomes $(p - r)^2 + s^2$. Even in the principle of the composition of forces, or of the mutual independence of forces, the properties are contained which Gauss's principle makes use of. This will best be perceived by imagining all the accelerations simultaneously performed. If we discard the obscure verbal form in which the principle is clothed, the metaphysical impression which it gives also vanishes. We see the simple fact; we are disillusioned, but also enlightened.

The elucidations of Gauss's principle here presented are in great part derived from the paper of Scheffler cited above. Some of his opinions which I have been unable to share I have modified.. We cannot, for example, accept as new the principle which he himself propounds, for both in form and in import it is *identical* with the D'Alembert-Lagrangian.

<div align="center">VIII.</div>

<div align="center">THE PRINCIPLE OF LEAST ACTION.</div>

1. MAUPERTUIS enunciated, in 1747, a principle which he called "*le principe de la moindre quantité d'action,*" the principle of *least action.* He declared this principle to be one which eminently accorded with the wisdom of the Creator. He took as the measure of the "action" the product of the mass, the velocity, and the space described, or $m v s$. *Why*, it must be confessed, is not clear. By mass and velocity definite quantities may be understood; not so, however, by

space, when the time is not stated in which the space is described. If, however, unit of time be meant, the distinction of space and velocity in the examples treated by Maupertuis is, to say the least, peculiar. It appears that Maupertuis reached this obscure expression by an unclear mingling of his ideas of *vis viva* and the principle of virtual velocities. Its indistinctness will be more saliently displayed by the details.

2. Let us see how Maupertuis applies his principle. If M, m be two inelastic masses, C and c their velocities before impact, and u their common velocity after impact, Maupertuis requires, (putting here velocities for spaces,) that the "action" expended in the change of the velocities in impact shall be a minimum. Hence, $M(C - u)^2 + m(c - u)^2$ is a minimum; that is, $M(C - u) + m(c - u) = 0$; or

$$u = \frac{MC + mc}{M + m}.$$

For the impact of elastic masses, retaining the same designations, only substituting V and v for the two velocities after impact, the expression $M(C - V)^2 + m(c - v)^2$ is a minimum; that is to say,

$$M(C - V)\, dV + m(c - v)\, dv = 0. \quad \ldots \quad (1)$$

In consideration of the fact that the velocity of approach before impact is equal to the velocity of recession after impact, we have

$$C - c = -(V - v) \text{ or}$$
$$C + V - (c + v) = 0 \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; (2)$$

and

$$dV - dv = 0 \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; . \; (3)$$

The combination of equations (1), (2), and (3) readily gives the familiar expressions for V and v. These two cases may, as we see, be viewed as pro-

cesses in which the least change of *vis viva* by reaction takes place, that is, in which the *least counter-work* is done. They fall, therefore, under the principle of Gauss.

Mauper-
tuis's de-
duction of
the law of
the lever by
this prin-
ciple.
3. Peculiar is Maupertuis's deduction of the *law of the lever.* Two masses M and m (Fig. 188) rest on a bar a, which the fulcrum divides into the portions x and $a - x$. *If the bar be set in rotation,* the velocities and the spaces described will be proportional to the lengths of the lever-arms, and $Mx^2 + m(a - x)^2$ is the quantity to be made a minimum, that is $Mx - m(a - x) = 0$; whence $x = ma/\overline{M + m}$,—a condition that in the case of *equilibrium* is actually fulfilled. In criticism of this, it is to be remarked, first, that masses not subject to gravity or other forces, as Maupertuis
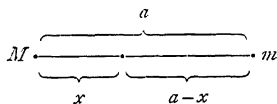
Fig. 188.

here tacitly assumes, are *always* in equilibrium, and, secondly, that the inference from Maupertuis's deduction is that the principle of least action is fulfilled *only* in the case of equilibrium, a conclusion which it was certainly not the author's intention to demonstrate.

If it were sought to bring this treatment into approximate accord with the preceding, we should have to assume that the *heavy* masses M and m constantly produced in each other during the process the least possible change of *vis viva.* On that supposition, we should get, designating the arms of the lever briefly by a, b, the velocities acquired in unit of time by u, v, and the acceleration of gravity by g, as our minimum expression, $M(g - u)^2 + m(g - v)^2$; whence $M(g - u) du + m(g - v) dv = 0$. But in view of the connection of the masses as lever,

$$\frac{u}{a} = -\frac{v}{b}, \text{ and}$$

$$du = -\frac{a}{b}\,dv\,;$$

whence these equations correctly follow

$$u = a\,\frac{Ma - mb}{Ma^2 + mb^2}\,g,\ \ v = -b\,\frac{Ma - mb}{Ma^2 + mb^2}\,g,$$

and for the case of equilibrium, where $u = v = 0$,

$$Ma - mb = 0.$$

Thus, this deduction also, when we come to rectify it, leads to Gauss's principle.

4. Following the precedent of Fermat and Leib- Treatment
of the mo-
tion of light
nitz, Maupertuis also treats by his method the *motion* by the prin-
of light. Here again, however, ciple of
least ac-
tion.
he employs the notion "least ac-
tion" in a totally different sense.
The expression which for the
case of refraction shall be a min-
imum, is $m \cdot AR + n \cdot RB$,
where AR and RB denote the
paths described by the light in
the first and second media re-

Fig. 189.

spectively, and m and n the corresponding velo-
cities. True, we really do obtain here, if R be de-
termined in conformity with the minimum condition,
the result $\sin \alpha / \sin \beta = n/m = const$. But before, the
"action" consisted in the *change* of the expressions
mass $\times$ velocity $\times$ distance; now, however, it is con-
stituted of the *sum* of these expressions. Before, the
spaces described in unit of time were considered; in
the present case the *total* spaces traversed are taken.
Should not $m \cdot AR - n \cdot RB$ or $(m - n)(AR - RB)$
be taken as a minimum, and if not, why not? But
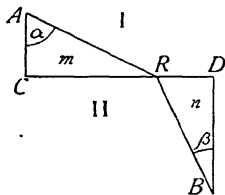
even if we accept Maupertuis's conception, the reciprocal values of the velocities of the light are obtained, and not the actual values.

It will thus be seen that Maupertuis really had no principle, properly speaking, but only a vague formula, which was forced to do duty as the expression of different familiar phenomena not really brought under one conception. I have found it necessary to enter into some detail in this matter, since Maupertuis's performance, though it has been unfavorably criticised by all mathematicians, is, nevertheless, still invested with a sort of historical halo. It would seem almost as if something of the pious faith of the church had crept into mechanics. However, the mere *endeavor* to gain a more extensive view, although beyond the powers of the author, was not altogether without results. Euler, at least, if not also Gauss, was stimulated by the attempt of Maupertuis.

5. Euler's view is, that the *purposes* of the phenomena of nature· afford as good a basis of explanation as their *causes*. If this position be taken, it will be presumed *a priori* that all natural phenomena present a maximum or minimum. Of what character this maximum or minimum is, can hardly be ascertained by metaphysical speculations. But in the solution of mechanical problems by the ordinary methods, it is possible, if the requisite attention be bestowed on the matter, to find the expression which in all cases is made a maximum or a minimum. Euler is thus not led astray by any metaphysical propensities, and proceeds much more scientifically than Maupertuis. He seeks an expression whose variation put $= 0$ gives the ordinary equations of mechanics.

For a *single* body moving under the action of forces

Euler finds the requisite expression in the formula The form
$\int v\, ds$, where ds denotes the element of the path and which the principle
v the corresponding velocity. This expression is smaller assumed in Euler's
for the path *actually* taken than for any other infinitely hands.
adjacent neighboring path between the same initial
and terminal points, which the body may be *constrained*
to take. Conversely, therefore, by *seeking* the path that
makes $\int v\, ds$ a minimum, we can also determine the
path. The problem of minimising $\int v\, ds$ is, of course,
as Euler assumed, a permissible one, only when v de-
pends on the position of the elements ds, that is to
say, when the principle of *vis viva* holds for the forces,
or a force-function exists, or what is the same thing,
when v is a simple function of coördinates. For a mo-
tion in a plane the expression would accordingly as-
sume the form

$$\int \varphi\,(x,\,y) \sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right)^2} \cdot dx$$

In the simplest cases Euler's principle is easily veri-
fied. If no forces act, v is constant, and the curve of
motion becomes a straight line, for which $\int v\, ds =$
$v \int ds$ is unquestionably *shorter* than for any other
curve between the same terminal points.
Also, a body moving on a curved surface
without the action of forces or friction,
preserves its velocity, and describes on
the surface a *shortest* line.

The consideration of the motion of a
projectile in a parabola ABC (Fig. 190) Euler's principle applied to
will also show that the quantity $\int v\, ds$ the motion of a projec-
is smaller for the parabola than for any tile.
other neighboring curve; smaller, even,

Fig. 190

than for the *straight* line ABC between the same ter-
minal points. The velocity, here, depends solely on the

vertical space described by the body, and is therefore
the same for all curves whose altitude above OC is the
same. If we divide the curves by a system of horizontal
straight lines into elements which severally correspond,
the elements to be multiplied by the same v's, though
in the upper portions smaller for the straight line AD
than for AB, are in the lower portions just the reverse;
and as it is here that the larger v's come into play, the
sum upon the whole is smaller for ABC than for the
straight line.

Putting the origin of the coördinates at A, reckon-
ing the abscissas x vertically downwards as positive,
and calling the ordinates perpendicular thereto y, we
obtain for the expression to be minimised

$$\int_0^x \sqrt{2g(a+x)}\sqrt{1+\left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right)^2} \cdot dx,$$

where g denotes the acceleration of gravity and a the
distance of descent corresponding to the initial velocity.
As the condition of minimum the calculus of variations
gives

$$\frac{\sqrt{2g(a+x)}\frac{dy}{dx}}{\sqrt{1+\left(\frac{dy^2}{dx}\right)}} = C \text{ or}$$

$$\frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{C}{\sqrt{2g(a+x)-C^2}} \text{ or}$$

$$y = \int \frac{C\,dx}{\sqrt{2g(a+x)-C^2}},$$

and, ultimately,

$$y = \frac{C}{g}\sqrt{2g(a+x)-C^2} + C',$$

where C and C' denote constants of integration that pass into $C = \sqrt{2 g a}$ and $C' = 0$, if for $x = 0$, $dx/dy = 0$ and $y = 0$ be taken.   Therefore, $y = 2\sqrt{a x}$.   By this method, accordingly, the path of a projectile is shown to be of parabolic form.

6. Subsequently, Lagrange drew *express* attention to the fact that Euler's principle is applicable only in cases in which the principle of *vis viva* holds.   Jacobi pointed out that we cannot assert that $\int v\, ds$ for the actual motion is a *minimum*, but simply that the *variation* of this expression, in its passage to an infinitely adjacent neighboring path, is $= 0$.   Generally, indeed, this condition coincides with a maximum or minimum, but it is possible that it should occur *without* such; and the minimum property in particular is subject to certain limitations.   For example, if a body, constrained to move on a spherical surface, is set in motion by some impulse, it will describe a great circle, generally a shortest line.   But if the length of the arc described exceeds 180°, it is easily demonstrated that there exist shorter infinitely adjacent neighboring paths between the terminal points.

7. So far, then, this fact only has been pointed out, that the ordinary equations of motion are obtained by equating the variation of $\int v\, ds$ to zero.   But since the properties of the motion of bodies or of their paths may always be defined by differential expressions equated to zero, and since furthermore the condition that the variation of an integral expression shall be equal to zero is likewise given by differential expressions equated to zero, unquestionably *various other* integral expressions may be devised that give by variation the ordinary equations of motion, without its following that the

integral expressions in question must possess on that account any particular *physical* significance.

8. The striking fact remains, however, that so *simple* an expression as $\int v\,ds$ does possess the property mentioned, and we will now endeavor to ascertain its physical import. To this end the analogies that exist between the motion of masses and the motion of light, as well as between the motion of masses and the equilibrium of strings—analogies noted by John Bernoulli and by Möbius—will stand us in stead.

A body on which no forces act, and which therefore preserves its velocity and direction constant, describes a straight line. A ray of light passing through a homogeneous medium (one having everywhere the same index of refraction) describes a straight line. A string, acted on by forces at its extremities only, assumes the shape of a straight line.

A body that moves in a curved path from a point A to a point B and whose velocity $v = \varphi(x, y, z)$ is a function of coördinates, describes between A and B a curve for which generally $\int v\,ds$ is a minimum. A ray of light passing from A to B describes the same curve, if the refractive index of its medium, $n = \varphi(x, y, z)$, is the same function of coördinates; and in this case $\int n\,ds$ is a minimum. Finally, a string passing from A to B will assume this curve, if its tension $S = \varphi(x, y, z)$ is the same above-mentioned function of coördinates; and for this case, also, $\int S\,ds$ is a minimum.

The *motion of a mass* may be readily deduced from the *equilibrium of a string*, as follows. On an element ds of a string, at its two extremities, the tensions S, S' act, and supposing the force on unit of length to be P, in addition a force $P.\,ds$. These three forces, which we shall represent in magnitude and direction by BA,

BC, BD (Fig. 191), are in equilibrium. If now, a body, with a velocity v represented in magnitude and direction by *AB*, enter the element of the path *ds*, and receive within the same the velocity component *BF* = — *BD*, the body will proceed on-
ward with the velocity $v' = BC$.
Let *Q* be an accelerating force
whose action is directly opposite
to that of *P*; then for unit of time
the acceleration of this force will
be *Q*, for unit of length of the
string Q/v, and for the element

Fig. 191.

of the string $(Q/v)\,ds$. The body will move, therefore,
in the *curve of the string*, if we establish between the
forces *P* and the tensions *S*, in the case of the string,
and the accelerating forces *Q* and the velocity v in the
case of the mass, the relation
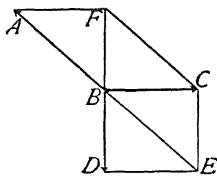
$$P : -\frac{Q}{v} = S : v.$$

The minus sign indicates that the directions of *P* and
Q are opposite.

A closed circular string is in equilibrium when be-
tween the tension *S* of the string, everywhere constant,
and the force *P* falling radially outwards on unit of
length, the relation $P = S/r$ obtains, where r is the
radius of the circle. A body will move with the con-
stant velocity v in a circle, when between the velocity
and the accelerating force *Q* acting radially inwards
the relation

$$\frac{Q}{v} = \frac{v}{r} \text{ or } Q = \frac{v^2}{r} \text{ obtains.}$$

A body will move with *constant* velocity v in *any* curve
when an accelerating force $Q = v^2/r$ constantly acts

on it in the direction of the centre of curvature of each element. A string will lie under a constant tension S in any curve if a force $P = S/r$ acting outwardly from the centre of curvature of the element is impressed on unit of length of the string.

No concept analogous to that of force is applicable to the *motion of light.* Consequently, the deduction of the motion of light from the equilibrium of a string or the motion of a mass must be differently effected. A mass, let us say, is moving with the velocity $AB = v$.
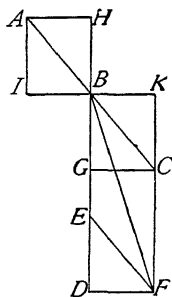
Fig. 192.

(Fig. 192.) A force in the direction BD is impressed on the mass which produces an increase of velocity BE, so that by the composition of the velocities $BC = AB$ and BE the new velocity $BF = v'$ is produced. If we resolve the velocities v, v' into components parallel and perpendicular to the force in question, we shall perceive that the *parallel components* alone are *changed* by the action of the force. This being the case, we get, denoting by k the perpendicular component, and by α and α' the angles v and v' make with the direction of the force,

$$k = v \sin \alpha$$
$$k = v' \sin \alpha' \text{ or}$$
$$\frac{\sin \alpha}{\sin \alpha'} = \frac{v'}{v}.$$

If, now, we picture to ourselves a ray of light that penetrates in the direction of v a refracting plane at right angles to the direction of action of the force, and thus passes from a medium having the index of refrac-

tion n into a medium having the index of refraction n', where $n/n' = v/v'$, this ray of light will describe the same path as the body in the case above. If, therefore, we wish to imitate the motion *of a mass* by the *motion of a ray of light* (in the same curve), we must everywhere put the indices of refraction, n, *proportional* to the velocities. To deduce the indices of refraction from the forces, we obtain for the velocity

$$d\left(\frac{v^2}{2}\right) = P\,dq, \text{ and}$$

for the index of refraction, by analogy,

$$d\left(\frac{n^2}{2}\right) = P\,dq,$$

where P denotes the force and dq a distance-element in the direction of the force. If ds is the element of the path and α the angle made by it with the direction of the force, we have then

$$d\left(\frac{v^2}{2}\right) = P\cos\alpha \,.\, ds$$

$$d\left(\frac{n^2}{2}\right) = P\cos\alpha \,.\, ds.$$

For the path of a projectile, under the conditions above assumed, we obtained the expression $y = 2\sqrt{ax}$. This same parabolic path will be described by a ray of light, if the law $n = \sqrt{2g(a+x)}$ be taken as the index of refraction of the medium in which it travels.

9. We will now more accurately investigate the manner in which this minimum property is related to the *form* of the curve. Let us take, first, (Fig. 193) a broken straight line ABC, which intersects the straight line MN, put $AB = s$, $BC = s'$, and seek the condition that makes $vs + v's'$ a minimum for the line that passes

through the fixed points A and B, where v and v' are
supposed to have different, though constant, values
above and below MN. If we displace the point B an
infinitely small distance to D, the new line through A
and C will remain parallel to the original one, as the
drawing symbolically shows. The expression $vs + v's'$
is increased hereby by an amount

$$- v\, m \sin \alpha + v'\, m \sin \alpha',$$

where $m = DB$. The alteration is accordingly propor-
tional to $-v \sin \alpha + v' \sin \alpha'$, and the condition of
minimum is that

$$- v \sin \alpha + v' \sin \alpha' = 0, \ \text{ or } \ \frac{\sin \alpha}{\sin \alpha'} = \frac{v'}{v}.$$
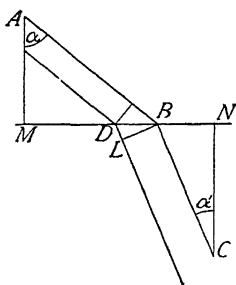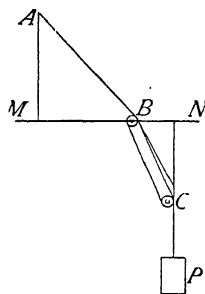
Fig. 193.　　　　　　　　Fig. 194.

If the expression $s/v + s'/v'$ is to be made a minimum,
we have, in a similar way,

$$\frac{\sin \alpha}{\sin \alpha'} = \frac{v}{v'}.$$

Second, the
application
of this con-
dition to the
equilibrium
of a string. If, next, we consider the case of a string stretched
in the direction ABC, the tensions of which S and S'
are different above and below MN, in this case it is
the minimum of $Ss + S's'$ that is to be dealt with. To
obtain a distinct idea of this case, we may imagine the

string stretched once between A and B and thrice between B and C, and finally a weight P attached. Then $S = P$ and $S' = 3P$. If we displace the point B a distance m, any diminution of the expression $Ss + S's'$ thus effected, will express the increase of *work* which the attached weight P performs. If $- Sm \sin \alpha + S'm \sin \alpha' = 0$, no work is performed. Hence, the *minimum* of $Ss + S's'$ corresponds to a *maximum* of work. In the present case the principle of least action is simply a *different form* of the principle of virtual displacements.

Now suppose that ABC is a ray of light, whose velocities v and v' above and below MN are to each other as 3 to 1. The motion of light between two points A and B is such that the light reaches B in a minimum of time. The physical reason of this is simple. The light travels from A to B, in the form of elementary waves, by different routes. Owing to the periodicity of the light, the waves generally destroy each other, and only those that reach the

Fig. 195.

designated point in equal times, that is, in equal phases, produce a result. But this is true only of the waves that arrive by the *minimum path* and its adjacent neighboring paths. Hence, for the path actually taken by the light $s/v + s'/v'$ is a minimum. And since the indices of refraction n are inversely proportional to the velocities v of the light, therefore also $ns + n's'$ is a minimum.

In the consideration of the *motion of a mass* the condition that $vs + v's'$ shall be a minimum, strikes us as something novel. (Fig. 195.) If a mass, in its passage

through a plane MN, receive, as the result of the action of a force impressed in the direction DB, an increase of velocity, by which v, its original velocity, is made v', we have for the path actually taken by the mass the equation *$v \sin \alpha = v' \sin \alpha' = k$. This equation, which is also the condition of minimum, simply states that only the velocity-component parallel to the direction of the force is altered, but that the component k at right angles thereto remains unchanged.* Thus, here also, Euler's principle simply states a familiar fact in a new form. (See p. 575.)

10. The minimum condition $- v \sin \alpha + v' \sin \alpha' = 0$ may also be written, if we pass from a finite broken straight line to the elements of curves, in the form

$$- v \sin \alpha + (v + dv) \sin(\alpha + d\alpha) = 0$$

or

$$d(v \sin \alpha) = 0$$

or, finally,

$$v \sin \alpha = const.$$

In agreement with this, we obtain for the motion of light

$$d(n \sin \alpha) = 0, \ n \sin \alpha = const,$$
$$d\left(\frac{\sin \alpha}{v}\right) = 0, \ \frac{\sin \alpha}{v} = const,$$

and for the equilibrium of a string

$$d(S \sin \alpha) = 0, \ S \sin \alpha = const.$$

To illustrate the preceding remarks by an example, let us take the parabolic path of a projectile, where α always denotes the angle that the element of the path makes with the perpendicular. Let the velocity be $v = \sqrt{2g(a + x)}$, and let the axis of the y-ordinates be horizontal. The condition $v \cdot \sin \alpha = const$, or $\sqrt{2g(a + x)} \cdot dy/ds = const$, is identical with that which the calculus of variation gives, and we now know

its *simple physical* significance. If we picture to ourselves a string whose tension is $S = V\overline{2g(a+x)}$, an arrange-
ment which might be effected by fixing frictionless
pulleys on horizontal parallel rods placed in a vertical
plane, then passing the string through these a sufficient
number of times, and finally attaching
a weight to the extremity of the string,
we shall obtain again, for equilibrium,
the preceding condition, the phys-
ical significance of which is now ob-
vious. When the distances between
the rods are made infinitely small the
string assumes the parabolic form.
In a medium, the refractive index of
which varies in the vertical direction
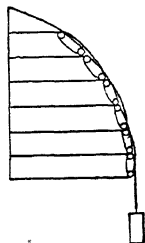
Fig. 196.

by the law $n = V\overline{2g(a+x)}$, or the velocity of light in
which similarly varies by the law $v = 1/V\overline{2g(a+x)}$,
a ray of light will describe a path which is a parabola.
If we should make the velocity in such a medium
$v = V\overline{2g(a+x)}$, the ray would describe a cycloidal path,
for which, not $\int V\overline{2g(a+x)} \cdot ds$, but the expression
$\int ds/V\overline{2g(a+x)}$ would be a minimum.

11. In comparing the equilibrium of a string with
the motion of a mass, we may employ in place of a
string wound round pulleys,
a simple homogeneous cord,
provided we subject the cord
to an appropriate system of
forces. We readily observe
that the systems of forces
that make the tension, or,
as the case may be, the ve-

Fig. 197.

locity, the *same* function of coördinates, are *differ-
ent*. If we consider, for example, the force of gravity,
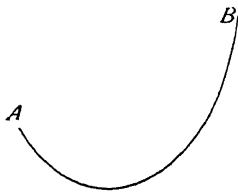
$v = \sqrt{2g(a + x)}$. A string, however, subjected to the action of gravity, forms a catenary, the tension of which is given by the formula $S = m - nx$, where m and n are constants. The analogy subsisting between the equilibrium of a string and the motion of a mass is substantially conditioned by the fact that for a string subjected to the action of forces possessing a force-function U, there obtains in the case of equilibrium the easily demonstrable equation $U + S = const$. This *physical* interpretation of the principle of least action is here illustrated only for simple cases; but it may also be applied to cases of greater complexity, by imagining groups of surfaces of equal tension, of equal velocity, or equally refractive indices constructed which divide the string, the path of the motion, or the path of the light into elements, and by making α in such a case represent the angle which these elements make with the respective surface-normals. The principle of least action was extended to systems of masses by Lagrange, who presented it in the form

$$\delta \sum m \int v \, ds = 0.$$

If we reflect that the principle of *vis viva*, which is the real foundation of the principle of least action, is not annulled by the connection of the masses, we shall comprehend that the latter principle is in this case also valid and physically intelligible.

IX.

HAMILTON'S PRINCIPLE.

1. It was above remarked that *various* expressions can be devised whose variations equated to zero give the ordinary equations of motion. An expression of this kind is contained in Hamilton's principle

$$\delta \int_{t_0}^{t_1} (U + T)\, dt = 0, \text{ or}$$

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1} (\delta U + \delta T)\, dt = 0,$$

where δU and δT denote the variations of the work and the *vis viva,* vanishing for the initial and terminal epochs. Hamilton's principle is easily deduced from D'Alembert's, and, conversely, D'Alembert's from Hamilton's; the two are in fact identical, their difference being merely that of form.*

2. We shall not enter here into any extended investigation of this subject, but simply exhibit the identity of the two principles by an *example*—

the same that served to illustrate the principle of D'Alembert: the motion of a wheel and axle by the over-weight of one of its parts. In place of the actual motion, we may imagine, performed in the same interval of time, a *different* motion, varying infinitely little from the actual motion, but coinciding exactly with it at the beginning
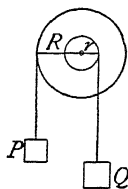
Fig. 198.

and end. There are thus produced in every element of time dt, variations of the work (δU) and of the *vis viva* (δT); variations, that is, of the values U and T realised in the actual motion. But for the actual motion, the integral expression, above stated, is $= 0$, and may be employed, therefore, to determine the actual motion. If the angle of rotation performed varies in the element of time dt an amount α from the angle of the actual motion, the variation of the work corresponding to such an alteration will be

$$\delta U = (PR - Qr)\, \alpha = M\alpha.$$

* Compare, for example, Kirchhoff, *Vorlesungen über mathematische Physik, Mechanik*, p. 25 *et seqq.*, and Jacobi, *Vorlesungen über Dynamik*, p. 58.

The *vis viva*, for any given angular velocity ω, is

$$T = \frac{1}{g}\,(PR^2 + Qr^2)\,\frac{\omega^2}{2},$$

and for a variation $\delta\omega$ of this velocity the variation of the *vis viva* is

$$\delta T = \frac{1}{g}\,(PR^2 + Qr^2)\,\omega\,\delta\omega.$$

But if the angle of rotation varies in the element dt an amount α,

$$\delta\omega = \frac{d\alpha}{dt} \text{ and}$$

$$\delta T = \frac{1}{g}\,(PR^2 + Qr^2)\,\omega\frac{d\alpha}{dt} = N\frac{d\alpha}{dt}.$$

The form of the integral expression, accordingly, is

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1}\left[M\alpha + N\frac{d\alpha}{dt}\right]dt = 0.$$

But as

$$\frac{d}{dt}\,(N\alpha) = \frac{dN}{dt}\,\alpha + N\frac{d\alpha}{dt},$$

therefore,

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1}\left(M - \frac{dN}{dt}\right)\alpha\cdot dt + (N\alpha)\Big|_{t_0}^{t_1} = 0.$$

The second term of the left-hand member, though, drops out, because, by hypothesis, at the beginning and end of the motion $\alpha = 0$. Accordingly, we have

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1}\left(M - \frac{dN}{dt}\right)\alpha\,dt = 0,$$

an expression which, since α in every element of time is arbitrary, cannot subsist unless generally

$$M - \frac{dN}{dt} = 0.$$

Substituting for the symbols the values they represent, we obtain the familiar equation

$$\frac{d\omega}{dt} = \frac{PR - Qr}{PR^2 + Qr^2} g.$$

D'Alembert's principle gives the equation

$$\left(M - \frac{dN}{dt}\right)\alpha = 0,$$

which holds for every *possible* displacement. We might, in the converse order, have started from this equation, have thence passed to the expression

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1}\left(M - \frac{dN}{dt}\right)\alpha\,dt = 0,$$

and, finally, from the latter proceeded to the same result

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1}\left(M\alpha + N\frac{d\alpha}{dt}\right)dt - (N\alpha)_{t_0}^{t_1} =$$

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1}\left(M\alpha + N\frac{d\alpha}{dt}\right)dt = 0.$$

3. As a second and more simple example let us consider the motion of vertical descent. For every infinitely small displacement s the equation subsists $[mg - m(dv/dt)]s = 0$, in which the letters retain their conventional significance. Consequently, this equation obtains

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1}\left(mg - m\frac{dv}{dt}\right)s\,.\,dt = 0,$$

which, as the result of the relations

$$d\frac{(mvs)}{dt} = m\frac{dv}{dt}s + mv\frac{ds}{dt} \text{ and}$$

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1} \frac{d(m\,v\,s)}{d\,t}\,d\,t = (m\,v\,s)\Big)_{t_0}^{t_1} = 0,$$

provided s vanishes at both limits, passes into the form

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1} \left(m\,g\,s + m\,v\,\frac{d\,s}{d\,t} \right) d\,t = 0,$$

that is, into the form of Hamilton's principle.

Thus, through all the apparent differences of the mechanical principles a common fundamental sameness is seen. These principles are not the expression of different facts, but, in a measure, are simply views of different *aspects* of the same fact.

x.

SOME APPLICATIONS OF THE PRINCIPLES OF MECHANICS TO HYDROSTATIC AND HYDRODYNAMIC QUESTIONS.

Method of
eliminating
the action
of gravity
on liquid
masses.

1. We will now supplement the examples which we have given of the application of the principles of mechanics, as they applied to rigid bodies, by a few hydrostatic and hydrodynamic illustrations. We shall first discuss the laws of equilibrium of a *weightless* liquid subjected exclusively to the action of so-called molecular forces. The forces of gravity we neglect in our considerations. A liquid may, in fact, be placed in circumstances in which it will behave as if no forces of gravity acted. The method of this is due to PLA-TEAU.* It is effected by immersing olive oil in a mixture of water and alcohol of the same density as the oil. By the principle of Archimedes the gravity of the masses of oil in such a mixture is exactly counterbalanced, and the liquid really acts as if it were devoid of weight.

* *Statique expérimentale et théorique des liquides,* 1873.

2. First, let us imagine a weightless liquid mass free in space. Its molecular forces, we know, act only at very small distances. Taking as our radius the dis- tance at which the molecular forces cease to exert a measurable influence, let us describe about a particle *a*, *b*, *c* in the interior of the mass a sphere—the so-called sphere of action. This sphere of action is regularly and uniformly filled with other particles. The resultant force on the central particles *a*, *b*, *c* is therefore zero. Those parts only that lie at a distance from the bounding surface less than the radius of the sphere of action are in different dynamic conditions from the particles in the interior. If the radii of curvature of
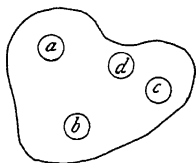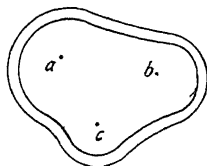
Fig. 199.   Fig. 200.

the surface-elements of the liquid mass be all regarded as very great compared with the radius of the sphere of action, we may cut off from the mass a superficial stratum of the thickness of the radius of the sphere of action in which the particles are in different physical conditions from those in the interior. If we convey a particle *a* in the interior of the liquid from the position *a* to the position *b* or *c*, the physical condition of this particle, as well as that of the particles which take its place, will remain unchanged. No work can be done in this way. Work can be done only when a particle is conveyed from the superficial stratum into the interior, or, from the interior into the superficial stratum. That is to say, work can be done only by a

change of size of the surface. The consideration whether the density of the superficial stratum is the same as that of the interior, or whether it is constant throughout the entire thickness of the stratum, is not primarily essential. As will readily be seen, the variation of the surface-area is equally the condition of the performance of work when the liquid mass is immersed in a second liquid, as in Plateau's experiments.

Diminution of superficial area due to positive work. We now inquire whether the work which by the transportation of particles into the interior effects a diminution of the surface-area is positive or negative, that is, whether work is performed or work is expended. If we put two fluid drops in contact, they will coalesce *of their own accord;* and as by this action the area of the surface is diminished, it follows that the work that produces a diminution of superficial area in a liquid mass is *positive.* Van der Mensbrugghe has
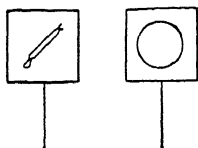
Fig. 201.

demonstrated this by a very pretty experiment. A square wire frame is dipped into a solution of soap and water, and on the soap-film formed a loop of moistened thread is placed. If the film within the loop be punctured, the film outside the loop will contract till the thread bounds a circle in the middle of the liquid surface. But the circle, of all plane figures of the same circumference, has the greatest area ; consequently, the liquid film has contracted to a minimum.

Consequent condition of liquid equilibrium The following will now be clear. A weightless liquid, the forces acting on which are molecular forces, will be in *equilibrium* in all forms in which a system of virtual displacements produces *no* alteration of the liquid's superficial area. But all infinitely small changes

of form may be regarded as *virtual* which the liquid admits without alteration of its *volume.* Consequently, equilibrium subsists for all liquid forms for which an infinitely small deformation produces a superficial variation $= 0$. For a given volume a *minimum* of superficial area gives stable equilibrium; a *maximum* unstable equilibrium.

Among all solids of the same volume, the sphere has the least superficial area. Hence, the form which a free liquid mass will assume, the form of stable equilibrium, is the sphere. For this form a maximum of work is done; for it, no more can be done If the liquid adheres to rigid bodies, the form assumed is dependent on various collateral conditions, which render the problem more complicated.

3. The connection between the *size* and the *form* of the liquid surface may be investigated as follows. We imagine the closed outer surface of the liquid to receive without alteration of the liquid's volume an infinitely small variation. By two sets of mutually perpendicular lines of curvature, we cut up the
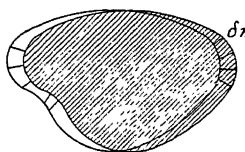
Fig. 202.

original surface into infinitely small rectangular elements. At the angles of these elements, on the original surface, we erect normals to the surface, and determine thus the angles of the corresponding elements of the varied surface. To every element dO of the original surface there now corresponds an element dO' of the varied surface; by an infinitely small displacement, δn, along the normal, outwards or inwards, dO passes into dO' and into a corresponding variation of magnitude.

Let dp, dq be the sides of the element dO. For the

sides dp', dq' of the element dO', then, these relations obtain

$$dp' = dp\left(1 + \frac{\delta n}{r}\right)$$

$$dq' = dq\left(1 + \frac{\delta n}{r'}\right),$$

where r and r' are the radii of curvature of the principal sections touching the elements of the lines of curvature p, q, or the so-called principal radii of curvature.* The radius of curvature of an outwardly convex element is reckoned as positive, that of an outwardly concave element as negative, in the usual manner. For the variation of the element we obtain, accordingly,

$$\delta \cdot dO = dO' - dO = dp\, dq\left(1 + \frac{\delta n}{r}\right)\left(1 + \frac{\delta n}{r'}\right) - dp\, dq.$$
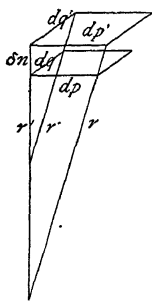
Neglecting the higher powers of δn we get

$$\delta \cdot dO = \left(\frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{r'}\right)\delta n \cdot dO.$$

The variation of the whole surface, then, is expressed by

$$\delta O = \int\left(\frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{r'}\right)\delta n \cdot dO \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad (1)$$

Furthermore, the normal displacements must be so chosen that

$$\int \delta n \cdot dO = 0 \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad (2)$$

Fig. 203.

that is, they must be such that the sum of the spaces produced by the outward and inward displacements of

---

* The normal at any point of a surface is cut by normals at infinitely neighboring points that lie in two directions on the surface from the original point, these two directions being at right angles to each other; and the distances from the surface at which these normals cut are the two principal, or extreme, radii of curvature of the surface.—*Trans.*

the superficial elements (in the latter case reckoned as negative) shall be equal to zero, or the *volume* remain constant.

Accordingly, expressions (1) and (2) can be put simultaneously $= 0$ only if $1/r + 1/r'$ has *the same value* for all points of the surface. This will be readily seen from the following consideration. Let the elements dO of the original surface be symbolically represented by the elements of the line AX (Fig. 204) and let the normal displacements δn be erected as ordinates thereon in the plane E, the outward displacements upwards as positive and the inward displacements downwards as negative.

Join the extremities of these ordinates so as to form a curve, and take the quadrature of the curve, reckoning the sur-

Fig. 204.

face above AX as positive and that below it as negative. For all systems of δn for which this quadrature $= 0$, the expression (2) also $= 0$, and all such systems of displacements are admissible, that is, are virtual displacements.
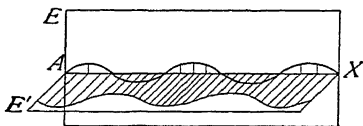
Now let us erect as ordinates, in the plane E', the values of $1/r + 1/r'$ that belong to the elements dO. A case may be easily imagined in which the expressions (1) and (2) assume coincidently the value zero. Should, however, $1/r + 1/r'$ have *different* values for different elements, it will always be possible without altering the zero-value of the expression (2), so to distribute the displacements δn that the expression (1) shall be different from zero. Only on the condition that $1/r + 1/r'$ has *the same value* for all the elements, is expres-

sion (1) necessarily and universally equated to zero with expression (2).

Accordingly, from the two conditions (1) and (2) it follows that $1/r + 1/r' = const$; that is to say, the sum of the reciprocal values of the principal radii of curvature, or of the radii of curvature of the principal normal sections, is, in the case of equilibrium, constant for the whole surface. By this theorem the dependence of the *area* of a liquid surface on its superficial *form* is defined. The train of reasoning here pursued was first developed by GAUSS,* in a much fuller and more special form. It is not difficult, however, to present its essential points in the foregoing simple manner.

4. A liquid mass, left wholly to itself, assumes, as we have seen, the spherical form, and presents an absolute minimum of superficial area. The equation $1/r + 1/r' = const$ is here visibly fulfilled in the form $2/R = const$, R being the radius of the sphere. If the free surface of the liquid mass be bounded by two solid circular rings, the planes of which are parallel to each other and perpendicular to the line joining their middle points, the surface of the liquid mass will assume the form of a surface of revolution. The nature of the meridian curve and the volume of the enclosed mass are determined by the radius of the rings R, by the distance between the circular planes, and by the value of the expression $1/r + 1/r'$ for the surface of revolution. When

$$\frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{r'} = \frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{\infty} = \frac{1}{R},$$

the surface of revolution becomes a cylindrical surface. For $1/r + 1/r' = 0$, where one normal section is con-

---

vex and the other concave, the meridian curve assumes the form of the catenary. Plateau visibly demonstrated these cases by pouring oil on two circular rings of wire fixed in the mixture of alcohol and water above mentioned.

Now let us picture to ourselves a liquid mass bounded by surface-parts for which the expression $1/r + 1/r'$ has a positive value, and by other parts for which the same expression has a negative value, or, more briefly expressed, by convex and concave surfaces. It will be readily seen that any displacement of the superficial elements outwards along the normal will produce in the concave parts a diminution of the superficial area and in the convex parts an increase. Consequently, *work* is *performed* when *concave surfaces* move outwards and *convex* surfaces *inwards*. Work also is performed when a superficial portion moves outwards for which $1/r + 1/r' = + a$, while simultaneously an equal superficial portion for which $1/r + 1/r' > a$ moves inwards.

Hence, when *differently curved* surfaces bound a liquid mass, the convex parts are forced inwards and the concave outwards till the condition $1/r + 1/r' = const$ is fulfilled for the entire surface. Similarly, when a *connected* liquid mass has *several* isolated surface-parts, bounded by rigid bodies, the value of the expression $1/r + 1/r'$ must, for the state of equilibrium be the same for all free portions of the surface.

For example, if the space between the two circular rings in the mixture of alcohol and water above referred to, be filled with oil, it is possible, by the use of a sufficient quantity of oil, to obtain a cylindrical surface whose two bases are spherical segments. The curvatures of the lateral and basal surfaces will accord-

ingly fulfil the condition $1/R + 1/\infty = 1/\rho + 1/\rho$, or $\rho = 2R$, where ρ is the radius of the sphere and R that of the circular rings. Plateau verified this conclusion by experiment.

Liquid mas-
ses enclos-
ing a hol-
low space.

5. Let us now study a weightless liquid mass which encloses a hollow space. The condition that $1/r + 1/r'$ shall have the same value for the interior and exterior surfaces, is here not realisable. On the contrary, as this sum has always a greater positive value for the closed exterior surface than for the closed interior surface, the liquid will perform work, and, flowing from the outer to the inner surface, cause the hollow space to disappear. If, however, the hollow space be occupied by a fluid or gaseous substance subjected to a determinate pressure, the work done in the last-mentioned process can be *counteracted* by the work expended to produce the compression, and thus equilibrium may be produced.

The me-
chanical
properties
of bubbles.

Let us picture to ourselves a liquid mass confined between two similar and similarly situated surfaces very near each other. A *bubble* is such a system. Its primary condition of equilibrium is the exertion of an excess of pressure by the inclosed gaseous contents. If the sum $1/r + 1/r'$ has the value $+ a$ for the exterior surface, it will have for the interior surface very nearly

Fig. 205.

the value $- a$. A bubble, left wholly to itself, will always assume the spherical form. If we conceive such a spherical bubble, the thickness of which we neglect, the total diminution of its superficial area, on the shortening of the radius r by dr, will be $16\, r\, \pi\, dr$. If, therefore, in the diminution of the surface by unit of area the work A is performed, then $A \cdot 16\, r\, \pi\, dr$ will
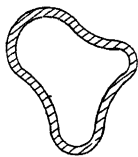
be the total amount of work to be compensated for by the work of compression $p . 4 r^2 \pi d r$ expended by the pressure p on the inclosed contents. From this follows $4 A / r = p$; from which A may be easily calculated if the measure of r is obtained and p is found by means of a manometer introduced in the bubble.

An *open spherical* bubble cannot subsist. If an open bubble is to become a figure of equilibrium, the sum $1/r + 1/r'$ must not only be constant for each of the two bounding surfaces, but must also be equal for both. Owing to the opposite curvatures of the surfaces, then, $1/r + 1/r' = 0$. Consequently, $r = -r'$ for all points. Such a surface is called a minimal surface; that is, it has the smallest area consistent with its containing certain closed contours. It is also a surface of zero-sum of principal curvatures; and its elements, as we readily see, are saddle-shaped. Surfaces of this kind are obtained by constructing closed space-curves of wire and dipping the wire into a solution of soap and water.* The soap-film assumes of its own accord the form of the curve mentioned. ^{Open bubbles.}

6. Liquid figures of equilibrium, made up of thin films, possess a peculiar property. The work of the forces of gravity affects the *entire* mass of a liquid; that of the molecular forces is restricted to its superficial film. Generally, the work of the forces of gravity preponderates. But in thin films the molecular forces come into very favorable conditions, and it is possible to produce the figures in question without difficulty in the open air. Plateau obtained them by dipping wire polyhedrons into solutions of soap and water. Plane liquid films are thus formed, which meet ^{Plateau's liquid figures of equilibrium.}

* The mathematical problem of determining such a surface, when the forms of the wires are given, is called *Plateau's Problem.—Trans.*

one another at the edges of the framework. When thin plane films are so joined that they meet at a hollow edge, the law $1/r + 1/r' = const$ no longer holds for the liquid surface, as this sum has the value zero for plane surfaces and for the hollow edge a very large negative value. Conformably, therefore, to the views above reached, the liquid should run out of the films, the thickness of which would constantly decrease, and escape at the edges. This is, in fact, what happens. But when the thickness of the films has decreased to a certain point, then, for *physical* reasons, which are, as it appears, not yet perfectly known, a *state of equilibrium* is effected.

Yet, notwithstanding the fact that the fundamental equation $1/r+1/r' = const$ is not fulfilled in these figures, because very thin liquid films, especially films of viscous liquids, present physical conditions somewhat different from those on which our original suppositions were based, these figures present, nevertheless, in all cases a *minimum* of superficial area. The liquid films, connected with the wire edges and with one another, always meet at the edges by threes at approximately equal angles of 120°, and by fours in corners at approximately equal angles. And it is geometrically demonstrable that these relations correspond to a minimum of superficial area. In the great diversity of phenomena here discussed but one fact is expressed, namely that the molecular forces do work, positive work, when the superficial area is diminished.

The reason the forms of equilibrium are symmetrical. 7. The figures of equilibrium which Plateau obtained by dipping wire polyhedrons in solutions of soap, form systems of liquid films presenting a remarkable *symmetry*. The question accordingly forces itself upon us, What has equilibrium to do with sym-

metry and regularity? The explanation is obvious. In every symmetrical system every deformation that tends to destroy the symmetry is complemented by an equal and opposite deformation that tends to restore it. In each deformation positive or negative work is done. One condition, therefore, though not an absolutely sufficient one, that a maximum or minimum of work corresponds to the form of equilibrium, is thus supplied by symmetry. Regularity is successive symmetry. There is no reason, therefore, to be astonished that the forms of equilibrium are often symmetrical and regular.

8. The science of mathematical hydrostatics arose in connection with a special problem—that of *the figure*

The figure of the earth
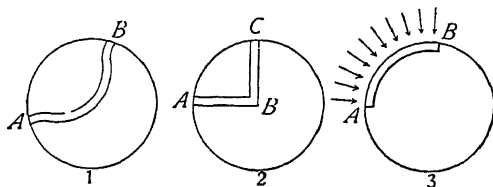
Fig. 206.

of the earth. Physical and astronomical data had led Newton and Huygens to the view that the earth is an oblate ellipsoid of revolution. NEWTON attempted to calculate this oblateness by conceiving the rotating earth as a fluid mass, and assuming that all fluid filaments drawn from the surface to the centre exert the same pressure on the centre. HUYGENS'S assumption was that the directions of the forces are perpendicular to the superficial elements. BOUGUER combined both assumptions. CLAIRAUT, finally (*Théorie de la figure de la terre,* Paris, 1743), pointed out that the fulfilment of *both* conditions does not assure the subsistence of equilibrium.

·Clairaut's starting-point is this. If the fluid earth is in equilibrium, we may, without disturbing its equilibrium, imagine any portion of it solidified. Accordingly, let all of it be solidified but a canal AB, of any form. The liquid in this canal must also be in equilibrium. But now the conditions which control equilibrium are more easily investigated. If equilibrium exists in *every imaginable canal of this kind*, then the *entire* mass will be in equilibrium. Incidentally Clairaut remarks, that the Newtonian assumption is realised when the canal passes through the centre (illustrated in Fig. 206, cut 2), and the Huygenian when the canal passes along the surface (Fig. 206, cut 3).

But the kernel of the problem, according to Clairaut, lies in a different view. In *all imaginable* canals,
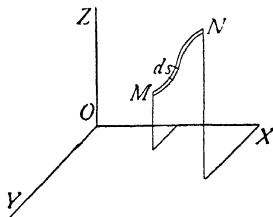
Fig. 207.   Fig. 208.

even in one *which returns into itself,* the fluid must be in equilibrium. Hence, if cross-sections be made at any two points M and N of the canal of Fig. 207, the two fluid columns MPN and MQN must exert on the surfaces of section at M and N equal pressures. The terminal pressure of a fluid column of any such canal cannot, therefore, depend on the *length* and the *form* of the fluid column, but must depend solely on the *position* of its terminal points.

Imagine in the fluid in question a canal MN of any form (Fig. 208) referred to a system of rectangular co-

ordinates.   Let the fluid have the *constant* density ρ
and let the force-components X, Y, Z acting on unit of
mass of the fluid in the coördinate directions, be func-
tions of the coördinates x, y, z of this mass.   Let the
element of length of the canal be called ds, and let its
projections on the axes be dx, dy, dz. The force-com-
ponents acting on unit of mass in the direction of the
canal are then $X(dx/ds)$, $Y(dy/ds)$, $Z(dz/ds)$.   Let
q be the cross-section ; then, the total force impelling
the element of mass $\rho q\, ds$ in the direction ds, is

$$\rho q\, ds \left(X\frac{dx}{ds} + Y\frac{dy}{ds} + Z\frac{dz}{ds} \right).$$

This force must be balanced by the increment of pres-
sure through the element of length, and consequently
must be put equal to $q \cdot dp$.   We obtain, accordingly,
$dp = \rho\,(X dx + Y dy + Z dz)$.   The difference of pres-
sure (p) between the two extremities M and N is found·
by integrating this expression from M to N. But as this
difference is not dependent on the form of the canal
but solely on the position of the extremities M and N,
it follows that $\rho\,(X dx + Y dy + Z dz)$, or, the density
being constant, $X dx + Y dy + Z dz$, must be a com-
plete differential.   For this it is necessary that

$$X = \frac{dU}{dx}, \quad Y = \frac{dU}{dy}, \quad Z = \frac{dU}{dz},$$

where U is a function of coördinates. *Hence, according
to Clairaut, the general condition of liquid equilibrium is,
that the liquid be controlled by forces which can be ex-
pressed as the partial differential coefficients of one and
the same function of coördinates.*

9. The Newtonian forces of gravity, and in fact all
central forces,—forces that masses exert in the direc-
tions of their lines of junction and which are functions

of the distances between these masses,—possess this
property. Under the action of forces of this character
the equilibrium of fluids is possible. If we know U,
we may replace the first equation by

$$dp = \rho \left(\frac{dU}{dx} dx + \frac{dU}{dy} dy + \frac{dU}{dz} dz \right)$$

or

$$dp = \rho\, dU \text{ and } p = \rho U + \textit{const.}$$

The totality of all the points for which $U = const$
is a surface, a so-called *level surface*. For this surface
also $p = const$. As all the force-relations, and, as we
now see, all the pressure-relations, are determined by
the nature of the function U, the pressure-relations,
accordingly, supply a diagram of the force-relations,
as was before remarked in page 98.

In the theory of Clairaut, here presented, is con-
tained, beyond all doubt, the idea that underlies the
doctrine of *force-function* or *potential*, which was after-
wards developed with such splendid results by La-
place, Poisson, Green, Gauss, and others. As soon
as our attention has been directed to this property of
certain forces, namely, that they can be expressed as
derivatives of the same function U, it is at once recog-
nised as a highly convenient and *economical* course to
investigate in the place of the forces themselves the
function U.

If the equation

$$dp = \rho\left(Xdx + Ydy + Zdz \right) = \rho\, dU$$

be examined, it will be seen that $Xdx + Ydy + Zdz$
is the element of the *work* performed by the forces on
unit of mass of the fluid in the displacement ds, whose
projections are $dx,\ dy,\ dz$. Consequently, if we trans-
port unit mass from a point for which $U = C_1$ to an-

other point, indifferently chosen, for which $U = C_2$, or, more generally, from the surface $U = C_1$ to the surface $U = C_2$, we perform, no matter by what path the conveyance has been effected, the *same* amount of work. All the points of the first surface present, with respect to those of the second, the same difference of pressure; the relation always being such, that

$$p_2 - p_1 = \rho \, (C_2 - C_1),$$

where the quantities designated by the same indices belong to the same surface.

10. Let us picture to ourselves a group of such very closely adjacent surfaces, of which every two successive ones differ from each other by the same, very small, amount of work required to transfer a mass from one to the other; in other words, imagine the surfaces $U = C$, $U = C + dC$, $U = C + 2dC$, and so forth.

A mass moving on a level surface evidently performs no work. Hence, every component force in a direction tangential to the surface is $= 0$; and the direction of the *resultant force* is everywhere normal to the surface. If we call dn the element of the normal intercepted between two consecutive surfaces, and f the force requisite to convey unit mass from the one surface to the other through this element, the

$C + 3dC$
$C + 2dC$
$C + dC$
C
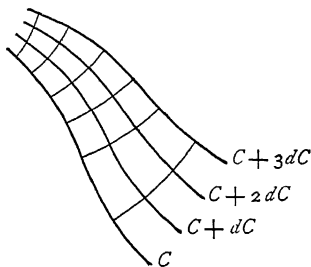
Fig. 209.

work done is $f \cdot dn = dC$. As dC is by hypothesis everywhere constant, the force $f = dC/dn$ is inversely proportional to the distance between the surfaces consid-

ered. If, therefore, the surfaces U are known, the *directions of the forces* are given by the elements of a system of curves everywhere at right angles to these surfaces, and the inverse distances between the surfaces measure the *magnitude* of the forces.* These surfaces and curves also confront us in the other departments of physics. We meet them as equipotential surfaces and lines of force in electrostatics and magnetism, as isothermal surfaces and lines of flow in the theory of the conduction of heat, and as equipotential surfaces and lines of flow in the treatment of electrical and liquid currents.

Illustration of Clairaut's doctrine by a simple example. 11. We will now illustrate the fundamental idea of Clairaut's doctrine by another, very simple example. Imagine two mutually perpendicular planes to cut the paper at right angles in the straight lines OX and OY (Fig. 210). We assume that a force-function exists $U = -xy$, where x and y are the distances from the two planes. The force-components parallel to CX and OY are then respectively

$$X = \frac{dU}{dx} = -y$$

and

$$Y = \frac{dU}{dy} = -x.$$

* The same conclusion may be reached as follows. Imagine a water pipe laid from New York to Key West, with its ends turning up vertically, and of glass. Let a quantity of water be poured into it, and when equilibrium is attained, let its height be marked on the glass at both ends. These two marks will be on one level surface. Now pour in a little more water and again mark the heights at both ends. The additional water in New York balances the additional water in Key West. The gravities of the two are equal. But their quantities are proportional to the vertical distances between the marks. Hence, the force of gravity on a fixed quantity of water is inversely as those vertical distances, that is, inversely as the distances between consecutive level surfaces.—*Trans.*

The level surfaces are cylindrical surfaces, whose generating lines are at right angles to the plane of the paper, and whose directrices, $xy = const$, are equilateral hyperbolas. The lines of force are obtained by turning the first mentioned system of curves through an angle of 45° in the plane of the paper about O. If a unit of mass pass from the point r to O by the route rpO, or rqO, or by any other route, the work done is always $Op \times Oq$. If we imagine a closed canal $OprqO$ filled with a liquid, the liquid in the canal will be in equilibrium. If transverse sections be made at any two points, each section will sustain at both its surfaces the same pressure.
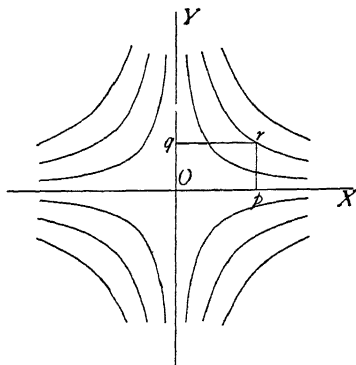
Fig. 210.

We will now modify the example slightly. Let the forces be $X = -y$, $Y = -a$, where a has a constant value. There exists now no function U so constituted that $X = dU/dx$ and $Y = dU/dy$; for in such a case it would be necessary that $dX/dy = dY/dx$, which is obviously not true. There is therefore no force-function, and consequently no level surfaces. If unit of mass be transported from r to O by the way of p, the work done is $a \times Oq$. If the transportation be effected by the route rqO, the work done is $a \times Oq + Op \times Oq$. If the canal $OprqO$ were filled with a liquid, the liquid could not be in equilibrium, but would be forced to

A modification of this example.

rotate constantly in the direction $O\,p\,r\,q\,O$. Currents of this character, which revert into themselves but continue their motion indefinitely, strike us as something quite foreign to our experience. Our attention, however, is directed by this to an important property of the forces of nature, to the property, namely, that the work of such forces may be expressed as a function of coördinates. Whenever exceptions to this principle are observed, we are disposed to regard them as apparent, and seek to clear up the difficulties involved.

12. We shall now examine a few problems of liquid *motion.* The founder of the theory of hydrodynamics is TORRICELLI. Torricelli,[*] by observations on liquids discharged through orifices in the bottom of vessels, discovered the following law. If the time occupied in the complete discharge of a vessel be divided into n equal intervals, and the quantity discharged in the last, the nth, interval be taken as the unit, there will be discharged in the $(n-1)^{\text{th}}$, the $(n-2)^{\text{th}}$, the $(n-3)^{\text{th}}$ . . . . interval, respectively, the quantities $3, 5, 7$ . . . . and so forth. An analogy between the motion of falling bodies and the motion of liquids is thus clearly suggested. Further, the perception is an immediate one, that the most curious consequences would ensue if the liquid, by its reversed velocity of efflux, could rise higher than its original level. Torricelli remarked, in fact, that it can rise *at the utmost* to this height, and assumed that it would rise *exactly* as high if all resistances could be removed. Hence, neglecting all resistances, the velocity of efflux, v, of a liquid discharged through an orifice in the bottom of a vessel is connected with the height h of the surface of the liquid by the equation $v = \sqrt{2gh}$; that is to say, the velocity

* *De Motu Gravium Projectorum,* 1643.

of efflux is the *final* velocity of a body *freely* falling through the height h, or liquid-head; for only with this velocity can the liquid just rise again to the surface.*

Torricelli's theorem consorts excellently with the rest of our knowledge of natural processes; but we feel, nevertheless, the need of a more exact insight. VARIGNON attempted to deduce the principle from the relation between force and the *momentum* generated by force. The familiar equation $pt = mv$ gives, if by α we designate the area of the basal orifice, by h the pressure-head of the liquid, by s its specific gravity, by g the acceleration of a freely falling body, by v the velocity of efflux, and by τ a small interval of time, this result

$$\alpha h s \cdot \tau = \frac{\alpha v \tau s}{g} \cdot v \text{ or } v^2 = g h.$$

Here $\alpha h s$ represents the pressure acting during the time τ on the liquid mass $\alpha v \tau s/g$. Remembering that v is a final velocity, we get, more exactly,

$$\alpha h s \cdot \tau = \frac{\alpha \dfrac{v}{2} \cdot \tau s}{g} \cdot v,$$

and thence the correct formula

$$v^2 = 2 g h.$$

13. DANIEL BERNOULLI investigated the motions of fluids by the principle of *vis viva*. We will now treat the preceding case from this point of view, only rendering the idea more modern. The equation which we employ is $ps = mv^2/2$. In a vessel of transverse section q (Fig. 211), into which a liquid of the specific

---

* The early inquirers deduce their propositions in the incomplete form of proportions, and therefore usually put v proportional to $\sqrt{g\,h}$ or $\sqrt{h}$.

gravity s is poured till the head h is reached, the surface sinks, say, the small distance dh, and the liquid mass $q \cdot dh \cdot s/g$ is discharged with the velocity v. The work done is the same as though the weight $q \cdot dh \cdot s$ had descended the distance h. The path of the motion in the vessel is not of consequence here. It makes no difference whether the stratum $q \cdot dh$ is discharged directly through the basal orifice, or passes, say, to a position a, while the liquid at a is displaced to b, that at b displaced to c, and that at c discharged. The work done is in each case $q \cdot dh \cdot s \cdot h$.
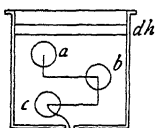
Fig. 211.

Equating this work to the *vis viva* of the discharged liquid, we get

$$q \cdot dh \cdot s \cdot h = \frac{q \cdot dh \cdot s}{g} \cdot \frac{v^2}{2}, \text{ or}$$

$$v = \sqrt{2gh}.$$

The sole assumption of this argument is that *all* the work done in the vessel appears as *vis viva* in the liquid discharged, that is to say, that the velocities within the vessel and the work spent in overcoming friction therein may be *neglected*. This assumption is not very far from the truth if vessels of sufficient width are employed, and no violent rotatory motion is set up.

The law of
liquid efflux
when pro-
duced by
the pres-
sure of
pistons.
Let us neglect the gravity of the liquid in the vessel, and imagine it loaded by a movable piston, on whose surface-unit the pressure p falls. If the piston be displaced a distance dh, the liquid volume $q \cdot dh$ will be discharged. Denoting the density of the liquid by ρ and its velocity by v, we then shall have

$$q \cdot p \cdot dh = q \cdot dh \cdot \rho \frac{v^2}{2}, \text{ or } v = \sqrt{\frac{2p}{\rho}}.$$

Wherefore, under the same pressure, different liquids are discharged with velocities inversely proportional to the square root of their density. It is generally supposed that this theorem is directly applicable to gases. Its *form*, indeed, is correct; but the deduction frequently employed involves an error, which we shall now expose.

14. Two vessels (Fig. 212) of equal cross-sections are placed side by side and connected with each other by a small aperture in the base of their dividing walls. For the velocity of flow through this aperture we obtain, under the same suppositions as before,

$$q \cdot dh \cdot s \, (h_1 - h_2) = q \, \frac{dh \cdot s}{g} \, \frac{v^2}{2}, \text{ or } v = \sqrt{2g\,(h_1 - h_2)}.$$

The application of this last result to the flow of gases.

If we neglect the gravity of the liquid and imagine the pressures p_1 and p_2 produced by pistons, we shall similarly have $v = \sqrt{2(p_1 - p_2)/\rho}$. For example, if the pistons employed be loaded with the weights P and $P/2$, the weight P will sink the distance h and $P/2$ will rise the distance h. The work $(P/2)h$ is thus left, to generate the *vis viva* of the effluent fluid.

A gas under such circumstances would behave differently. Supposing the gas to flow from the vessel containing the load P into that containing the load $P/2$, the first weight will fall a distance h, the second, however, since under half the pressure a gas doubles its volume, will rise a distance $2h$, so that the work $Ph - (P/2)\,2h = 0$ would be performed. In the case of gases, accordingly, some *additional* work, competent to produce the flow between the vessels must be performed. This work the gas itself performs, by expanding, and by overcoming by its *force of expan-*

The behaviour of a gas under the assumed conditions.

Fig. 212.

sion a pressure. The expansive force p and the volume w of a gas stand to each other in the familiar relation $pw = k$, where k, so long as the temperature of the gas remains unchanged, is a constant. Supposing the volume of the gas to expand under the pressure p by an amount dw, the work done is

$$\int p \, dw = k \int \frac{dw}{w}.$$

For an expansion from w_0 to w, or for an increase of pressure from p_0 to p, we get for the work

$$k \log\left(\frac{w}{w_0}\right) = k \log\left(\frac{p_0}{p}\right).$$

Conceiving by this work a volume of gas w_0 of density ρ, moved with the velocity v, we obtain

$$v = \sqrt{\frac{2p_0 \log\left(\frac{p_0}{p}\right)}{\rho}}.$$

The velocity of efflux is, accordingly, in this case also inversely proportional to the square root of the density; Its magnitude, however, is not the same as in the case of a liquid.

But even this last view is very defective. Rapid changes of the volumes of gases are always accompanied with changes of temperature, and, consequently also with changes of expansive force. For this reason, questions concerning the motion of gases cannot be dealt with as questions of pure mechanics, but always involve questions of *heat*. [Nor can even a thermodynamical treatment always suffice : it is sometimes necessary to go back to the consideration of molecular motions.]

15. The knowledge that a compressed gas contains stored-up work, naturally suggests the inquiry, whether

this is not also true of compressed liquids. As a mat-
ter of fact, every liquid under pressure *is* compressed.
To effect compression work is requisite, which reap-
pears the moment the liquid expands. But this work,
in the case of the mobile liquids, is very small. Imag-
ine, in Fig. 213, a gas and a mobile liquid of the same
volume, measured by *OA*, subjected to the same pres-
sure, a pressure of one atmosphere, designated by *AB*.
If the pressure be reduced to one-half an atmosphere,
the volume of the gas will be doubled, while that of
the liquid will be increased by only about 25 millionths.
The expansive work of the gas is represented by the
surface *ABDC*, that of the liquid by *ABLK*, where
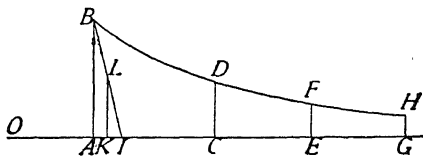
Fig. 213.

$AK = 0.0000025\,OA$. If the pressure decrease till it
become zero, the total work of the liquid is represented
by the surface *ABI*, where $AI = 0.00005\,OA$, and the
total work of the gas by the surface contained between
AB, the infinite straight line *ACEG* . . . ., and the
infinite hyperbola branch *BDFH* . . . . *Ordinarily*,
therefore, the work of expansion of liquids may be
neglected. There are however phenomena, for ex-
ample, the soniferous vibrations of liquids, in which
work of this very order plays a principal part. In such
cases, the changes of temperature the liquids undergo
must also be considered. We thus see that it is only
by a fortunate concatenation of circumstances that we
are at liberty to consider a phenomenon with any close

approximation to the truth as a mere matter of molar mechanics.

16. We now come to the idea which DANIEL BER-NOULLI sought to apply in his work *Hydrodynamica, sive de Viribus et Motibus Fluidorum Commentarii* (1738). When a liquid sinks, the space through which its centre of gravity actually descends (*descensus actualis*) is equal to the space through which the centre of gravity of the separated parts affected with the velocities acquired in the fall can ascend (*ascensus potentialis*). This idea, we see at once, is identical with that employed by Huygens. Imagine a vessel filled with a liquid (Fig. 214); and let its horizontal cross-section at the distance x from the plane of the basal orifice, be called $f(x)$. Let the liquid move and its surface descend a distance dx. The centre of gravity, then, descends the distance $xf(x) \cdot dx/M$, where $M = \int f(x)\,dx$. If k is the space of potential ascent of the liquid in a cross-section equal to unity, the space of potential ascent in the cross-section $f(x)$ will be $k/f(x)^2$, and the space of potential ascent of the centre of gravity will be
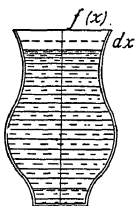
Fig. 214.

$$\frac{k\int \dfrac{dx}{f(x)}}{M} = k\frac{N}{M},$$

where

$$N = \int \frac{dx}{f(x)}.$$

For the displacement of the liquid's surface through a distance dx, we get, by the principle assumed, both N and k changing, the equation

$$- xf(x)\,dx = N\,dk + k\,dN.$$

This equation was employed by Bernoulli in the solu- tion of various problems. It will be easily seen, that Bernoulli's principle can be employed with success only when the *relative velocities* of the single parts of the liquid are known. Bernoulli assumes,—an assumption apparent in the formulæ,—that all particles once situated in a horizontal plane, continue their motion in a horizontal plane, and that the velocities in the different horizontal planes are to each other in the inverse ratio of the sections of the planes. This is the assumption of *the parallelism of strata.* It does not, in many cases, agree with the facts, and in others its agreement is incidental. When the vessel as compared with the orifice of efflux is very wide, no assumption concerning the motions within the vessel is necessary, as we saw in the development of Torricelli's theorem.

17. A few isolated cases of liquid motion were treated by NEWTON and JOHN BERNOULLI. We shall consider here one to which a familiar law is directly applicable. A cylindrical U-tube with vertical branches is filled with a liquid (Fig. 215). The length of the entire liquid column is l. If in one of the branches the column be forced a distance x below the level, the column in
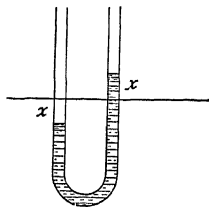
Fig. 215.

the other branch will rise the distance x, and the difference of level corresponding to the excursion x will be $2x$. If α is the transverse section of the tube and s the liquid's specific gravity, the force brought into play when the excursion x is made, will be $2\alpha s x$, which, since it must move a mass $\alpha l s/g$ will determine the acceleration $(2\alpha s x)/(\alpha l s/g) = (2g/l)\,x$, or, for unit

excursion, the acceleration $2g/l$. We perceive that pendulum vibrations of the duration

$$T = \pi \sqrt{\frac{l}{2g}}$$

will take place. The liquid column, accordingly, vibrates the same as a simple pendulum of half the length of the column.

The liquid pendulum of John Bernoulli.
A similar, but somewhat more general, problem was treated by John Bernoulli. The two branches of a cylindrical tube (Fig. 216), curved in any manner, make
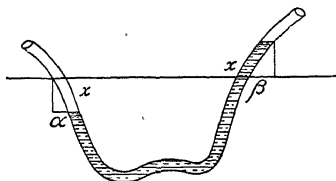
Fig. 216.

with the horizon, at the points at which the surfaces of the liquid move, the angles α and β. Displacing one of the surfaces the distance x, the other surface suffers an equal displacement. A difference of level is thus produced $x(\sin \alpha + \sin \beta)$, and we obtain, by a course of reasoning similar to that of the preceding case, employing the same symbols, the formula

$$T = \pi \sqrt{\frac{l}{g(\sin \alpha + \sin \beta)}}.$$

The laws of the pendulum hold true *exactly* for the liquid pendulum of Fig. 215 (viscosity neglected), even for vibrations of great amplitude; while for the filar pendulum the law holds only approximately true for small excursions.

18. The centre of gravity of a liquid as a whole can rise only as high as it would have to fall to produce its velocities. In every case in which this principle appears to present an exception, it can be shown that the excep-

tion is only *apparent.*   One example is Hero's fountain.
This apparatus, as we know, consists of three vessels,
which may be designated in the descending order as
A, B, C.   The water in the open vessel *A*
falls through a tube into the closed vessel
C; the air displaced in *C* exerts a pressure
on the water in the closed vessel *B*, and
this pressure forces the water in *B* in a
jet above *A* whence it falls back to its
original level.   The water in *B* rises, it is
true, considerably above the level of *B*,
but in actuality it merely flows by the
circuitous route of the fountain and the
vessel *A* to the much lower level of *C.*

Another ap-
parent exception
to the principle
in question is
that of Montgol-
fier's *hydraulic
ram,* in which the
liquid by its own
gravitational
work appears to
rise considerably
above its original
level. The liquid
flows (Fig. 217)
from a cistern *A*
through a long
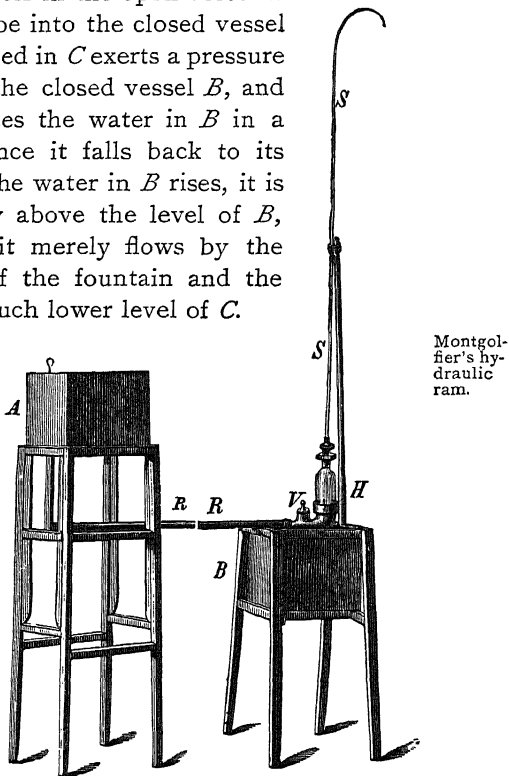
Fig. 217.

pipe *RR* and a valve *V*, which opens inwards, into a
vessel *B*. When the current becomes rapid enough, the
valve *V* is forced shut, and a liquid mass *m* affected with
the velocity *v* is suddenly arrested in *RR*, which must

be deprived of its momentum. If this be done in the
time t, the liquid can exert during this time a pressure
$q = mv/t$, to which must be added its hydrostatical
pressure p. The liquid, therefore, will be able, during
this interval of time, to penetrate with a pressure $p + q$
through a second valve into a *pila Heronis*, H, and in
consequence of the circumstances there existing will
rise to a higher level in the ascension-tube SS than
that corresponding to its simple pressure p. It is
to be observed here, that a considerable portion of the
liquid must first flow off into B, before a velocity requi-
site to close V is produced by the liquid's work in RR.
A small portion only rises above the original level;
the greater portion flows from A into B. If the liquid
discharged from SS were collected, it could be easily
proved that the centre of gravity of the quantity thus
discharged and of that received in B lay, as the result
of various losses, actually *below* the level of A.
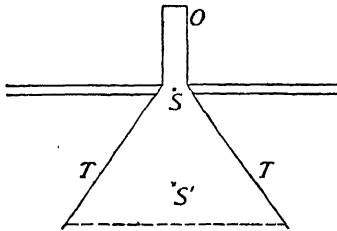
The principle of the hydraulic ram, that of the
transference of work done by a large liquid mass to a
smaller one, which
thus acquires a great
vis viva, may be illus-
trated in the following
very simple manner.
Close the narrow
opening O of a funnel
and plunge it, with its
wide opening down-
wards, deep into a

Fig. 218.

large vessel of water. If the finger closing the upper
opening be quickly removed, the space inside the
funnel will rapidly fill with water, and the surface of the
water outside the funnel will sink. The work performed

is equivalent to the descent of the contents of the funnel from the centre of gravity S of the superficial stratum to the centre of gravity S' of the contents of the funnel. If the vessel is sufficiently wide the velocities in it are all very small, and almost the entire *vis viva* is concentrated in the contents of the funnel. If all the parts of the contents had the same velocities, they could all rise to the original level, or the mass as a whole could rise to the height at which its centre of gravity was coincident with S. But in the narrower sections of the funnel the velocity of the parts is greater than in the wider sections, and the former therefore contain by far the greater part of the *vis viva*. Consequently, the liquid parts above are violently separated from the parts below and thrown out through the neck of the funnel high above the original surface. The remainder, however, are left considerably below that point, and the centre of gravity of the whole never as much as reaches the original level of S.

19. One of the most important achievements of Daniel Bernoulli is his distinction of *hydrostatic* and *hydrodynamic* pressure. The pressure which liquids exert is altered by motion; and the pressure of a liquid *in motion* may, according to the circumstances, be greater or less than that of the liquid *at rest* with the same arrangement of parts. We will illustrate this by a simple example. The vessel A, which has the form of a body of revolution with vertical axis, is kept

Fig. 219.

constantly filled with a frictionless liquid, so that its surface at mn does not change during the discharge at kl. We will reckon the vertical distance of a particle

Determina-
tion of the
pressures
generally
acting in li-
quids in
motion. from the surface mn downwards as positive and call
it z. Let us follow the course of a prismatic element of
volume, whose horizontal base-area is α and height β,
in its downward motion, neglecting, on the assump-
tion of the parallelism of strata, all velocities at right
angles to z. Let the density of the liquid be ρ, the
velocity of the element v, and the pressure, which is
dependent on z, p. If the particle descend the dis-
tance dz, we have by the principle of *vis viva*

$$\alpha \beta \rho \, d\left(\frac{v^2}{2}\right) = \alpha \beta \rho g \, dz - \alpha \frac{dp}{dz} \beta \, dz \quad \cdots \cdots \quad (1)$$

that is, the increase of the *vis viva* of the element is
equal to the work of gravity for the displacement in
question, less the work of the forces of pressure of the
liquid. The pressure on the upper surface of the element
is αp, that on the lower surface is $\alpha \left[p + (dp/dz)\beta \right]$.
The element sustains, therefore, if the pressure in-
crease downwards, an upward pressure $\alpha (dp/dz)\beta$;
and for any displacement dz of the element, the work
$\alpha (dp/dz)\beta \, dz$ must be deducted. Reduced, equation
(1) assumes the form

$$\rho \cdot d\left(\frac{v^2}{2}\right) = \rho g \, dz - \frac{dp}{dz} \, dz$$

and, integrated, gives

$$\rho \cdot \frac{v^2}{2} = \rho g z - p + const' \quad \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \quad (2)$$

If we express the velocities in two different hori-
zontal cross-sections a_1 and a_2 at the depths z_1 and z_2
below the surface, by v_1, v_2, and the corresponding
pressures by p_1, p_2, we may write equation (2) in the
form

$$\frac{\rho}{2} \cdot (v_1^2 - v_2^2) = \rho g (z_1 - z_2) + (p_2 - p_1) \quad \cdot \quad (3)$$

Taking for our cross-section a_1 the surface, $z_1 = 0$,
$p_1 = 0$; and as the same quantity of liquid flows through
all cross-sections in the same interval of time, $a_1 v_1 =$
$a_2 v_2$. Whence, finally,

$$p_2 = \rho g z_2 + \frac{\rho}{2} v_1^2 \left(\frac{a_2^2 - a_1^2}{a_2^2} \right).$$

The pressure p_2 of the liquid *in motion* (the hydro-
dynamic pressure) consists of the pressure $\rho g z_2$ of the
liquid *at rest* (the hydrostatic pressure) and of a pres-
sure $(\rho/2)v_1^2[(a_2^2 - a_1^2)/a_2^2]$ dependent on the density,
the velocity of flow, and the cross-sectional areas. In
cross-sections larger than the surface of the liquid, the
hydrodynamic pressure is greater than the hydrostatic,
and *vice versa*.

A clearer idea of the significance of Bernoulli's
principle may be obtained by imagining the liquid in
the vessel A unacted on by gravity, and its outflow
produced by a constant pressure p_1 on the surface.
Equation (3) then takes the form

$$p_2 = p_1 + \frac{\rho}{2} (v_1^2 - v_2^2).$$

If we follow the course of a particle thus moving, it
will be found that to every increase of the velocity of
flow (in the narrower cross-sections) a decrease of
pressure corresponds, and to every decrease of the ve-
locity of flow (in the wider cross-sections) an increase
of pressure. This, indeed, is evident, wholly aside
from mathematical considerations. In the present case
every *change* of the velocity of a liquid element must be
exclusively produced by the *work of the liquid's forces
of pressure*. When, therefore, an element enters into
a narrower cross-section, in which a greater velocity
of flow prevails, it can acquire this higher velocity only

on the condition that a greater pressure acts on its rear surface than on its front surface, that is to say, only when it moves from points of higher to points of lower pressure, or when the pressure decreases in the direction of the motion. If we imagine the pressures in a wide section and in a succeeding narrower section to be for a moment equal, the acceleration of the elements in the narrower section will not take place; the elements will not escape fast enough; they will accumulate before the narrower section; and *at the entrance* to it the requisite augmentation of pressure will be immediately produced. The converse case is obvious.

Treatment of a liquid problem in which viscosity and friction are considered.

20. In dealing with more complicated cases, the problems of liquid motion, even though viscosity be
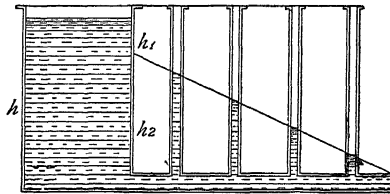
Fig. 220.

neglected, present great difficulties; and when the enormous effects of viscosity are taken into account, anything like a dynamical solution of almost every problem is out of the question. So much so, that although these investigations were begun by Newton, we have, up to the present time, only been able to master a very few of the simplest problems of this class, and that but imperfectly. We shall content ourselves with a simple example. If we cause a liquid contained in a vessel of the pressure-head h to flow, not through an orifice in its base, but through a long cylindrical tube fixed in its side (Fig. 220), the velocity of efflux

v will be less than that deducible from Torricelli's law, as a portion of the work is consumed by resistances due to viscosity and perhaps to friction. We find, in fact, that $v = \sqrt{2 g h_1}$, where $h_1 < h$. Expressing by h_1 the *velocity*-head, and by h_2 the *resistance*-head, we may put $h = h_1 + h_2$. If to the main cylindrical tube we affix vertical lateral tubes, the liquid will rise in the latter tubes to the heights at which it equilibrates the pressures in the main tube, and will thus indicate at all points the pressures of the main tube. The noticeable fact here is, that the liquid-height at the point of influx of the tube is $= h_2$, and that it diminishes in the direction of the point of outflow, by the law of a straight line, to zero. The elucidation of this phenomenon is the question now presented.

Gravity here does not act *directly* on the liquid in the horizontal tube, but all effects are transmitted to it by the *pressure* of the surrounding parts. If we imagine a prismatic liquid element of basal area α and length β to be displaced in the direction of its length a distance dz, the work done, as in the previous case, is

$$- \alpha \frac{dp}{dz} \cdot \beta \, dz = - \alpha \beta \frac{dp}{dz} \, dz.$$

For a finite displacement we have

$$- \alpha \beta \int_{p_2}^{p_1} \frac{dp}{dz} \, dz = - \alpha \beta (p_2 - p_1) \quad \cdots \cdots (1)$$

Work is *done* when the element of volume is displaced from a place of *higher* to a place of *lower* pressure. The amount of the work done depends on the size of the element of volume and on the *difference* of pressure at the initial and terminal points of the motion, and not on the length and the form of the path traversed.

If the diminution of pressure were twice as rapid in one case as in another, the difference of the pressures on the front and rear surfaces, or the *force* of the work, would be doubled, but the *space* through which the work was done would be halved. The work done would remain the same, whether done through the space ab or ac of Fig. 221.

Through every cross-section q of the horizontal tube the liquid flows with the same velocity v. If, neglecting the differences of velocity in the *same* cross-section, we consider a liquid element which exactly fills the section q and has the length β, the *vis viva* $q\,\beta\,\rho(v^2/2)$ of such an element will persist unchanged throughout

Fig. 221.

its entire course in the tube. This is possible only provided the *vis viva consumed by friction* is replaced by the *work of the liquid's forces of pressure.* Hence, in the direction of the motion of the element the pressure must diminish, and for equal distances, to which the same work of friction corresponds, by equal amounts. The total work of gravity on a liquid element $q\,\beta\,\rho$ issuing from the vessel, is $q\,\beta\,\rho g h$. Of this the portion $q\,\beta\,\rho\,(v^2/2)$ is the *vis viva* of the element discharged with the velocity v into the mouth of the tube, or, as $v = \sqrt{2\,g\,h_1}$, the portion $q\,\beta\,\rho g h_1$. The remainder of the work, therefore, $q\,\beta\,\rho g h_2$, is consumed in the tube, if owing to the slowness of the motion we neglect the losses within the vessel.
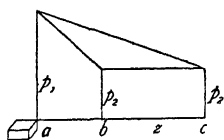
If the pressure-heads respectively obtaining in the vessel, at the mouth, and at the extremity of the tube, are h, h_2, 0, or the pressures are $p = h g \rho$, $p_2 = h_2 g \rho$, 0, then by equation (1) of page 417 the work requisite to

generate the *vis viva* of the element discharged into the mouth of the tube is

$$q\,\beta\,\rho\,\frac{v^2}{2} = q\,\beta\,(p-p_2) = q\,\beta\,g\,\rho\,(h-h_2) = q\,\beta\,g\,\rho\,h_1,$$

and the work transmitted by the pressure of the liquid to the element traversing the length of the tube, is

$$q\,\beta\,p_2 = q\,\beta\,g\,\rho\,h_2,$$

or the exact amount consumed in the tube.

Let us assume, for the sake of argument, that the pressure does not decrease from p_2 at the mouth to zero at the extremity of the tube by the law of a straight line, but that the distribution of the pressure is different, say, constant throughout the entire tube. The parts in advance then will at once suffer a loss of velocity from the friction, the parts which follow will crowd upon them, and there will thus be produced at the mouth of the tube an augmentation of pressure conditioning a constant velocity throughout its entire length. The pressure at the end of the tube can only be $= 0$ because the liquid at that point is not prevented from yielding to any pressure impressed upon it. Indirect demonstration of these consequences.

If we imagine the liquid to be a mass of smooth elastic balls, the balls will be most compressed at the bottom of the vessel, they will enter the tube in a state of compression, and will gradually lose that state in the course of their motion. We leave the further development of this simile to the reader. A simile under which these phenomena may be easily conceived.

It is evident, from a previous remark, that the work stored up in the compression of the liquid itself, is very small. The motion of the liquid is due to the work of gravity in the vessel, which by means of the pressure of the compressed liquid is transmitted to the parts in the tube.

* An interesting modification of the case just dis-
cussed is obtained by causing the liquid to flow through
a tube composed of a number of shorter cylindrical
tubes of varying widths. The pressure in the direction
of outflow then diminishes (Fig. 222) more rapidly in
the narrower tubes, in which a greater consumption of
work by friction takes place, than in the wider ones.
We further note, in every passage of the liquid into a
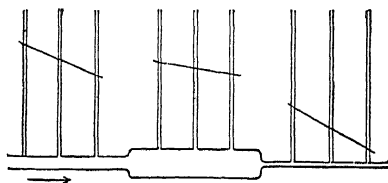
Fig. 222.

wider tube, that is to a *smaller* velocity of flow, an *in-
crease* of pressure (a positive congestion) ; in every
passage into a narrower tube, that is to a *greater* velo-
city of flow, an abrupt *diminution* of pressure (a nega-
tive congestion).   The velocity of a liquid element on
which no direct forces act can be diminished or in-
creased only by its passing to points of higher or lower
pressure.

CHAPTER IV.

THE FORMAL DEVELOPMENT OF MECHANICS.

I.

THE ISOPERIMETRICAL PROBLEMS.

1. When the chief facts of a physical science have once been fixed by observation, a new period of its development begins—the *deductive*, which we treated in the previous chapter. In this period, the facts are reproducible in the mind without constant recourse to observation. Facts of a more general and complex character are mimicked in thought on the theory that they are made up of simpler and more familiar observational elements. But even after we have deduced from our expressions for the most elementary facts (the principles) expressions for more common and more complex facts (the theorems) and have discovered in all phenomena the same elements, the developmental process of the science is not yet completed. The deductive development of the science is followed by its *formal* development. Here it is sought to put in a clear compendious form, or *system*, the facts to be reproduced, so that each can be reached and mentally pictured with the *least intellectual effort*. Into our rules for the mental reconstruction of facts we strive to incorporate the greatest possible *uniformity*, so that these rules shall be easy of acquisition. It is to be remarked, that the three periods distinguished are not sharply

separated from one another, but that the processes of
development referred to frequently go hand in hand,
although on the whole the order designated is unmis-
takable.

2. A powerful influence was exerted on the formal
development of mechanics by a particular class of
mathematical problems, which, at the close of the
seventeenth and the beginning of the eighteenth cen-
turies, engaged the deepest attention of inquirers.
These problems, the so-called *isoperimetrical problems*,
will now form the subject of our remarks. Certain
questions of the greatest and least values of quanti-
ties, questions of maxima and minima, were treated by
the Greek mathemati-
cians. Pythagoras is
said to have taught that
the circle, of all plane
figures of a given peri-
meter, has the greatest
area. The idea, too, of a
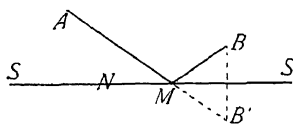
Fig. 223.

certain economy in the processes of nature was not
foreign to the ancients. Hero deduced the law of the
reflection of light from the theory that light emitted
from a point A (Fig. 223) and reflected at M will travel
to B by the shortest route. Making the plane of the
paper the plane of reflection, SS the intersection of
the reflecting surface, A the point of departure, B the
point of arrival, and M the point of reflection of the
ray of light, it will be seen at once that the line AMB',
where B' is the reflection of B, is a straight line. The
line AMB' is shorter than the line ANB', and there-
fore also AMB is shorter than ANB. Pappus held
similar notions concerning organic nature; he ex-

plained, for example, the form of the cells of the honey-comb by the bees' efforts to economise in materials.

These ideas fell, at the time of the revival of the sciences, on not unfruitful soil. They were first taken up by FERMAT and ROBERVAL, who developed a method applicable to such problems. These inquirers observed,—as Kepler had already done,—that a magnitude y which depends on another magnitude x, generally possesses in the vicinity of its greatest and least values a peculiar property. Let x (Fig. 224) denote abscissas and y ordinates. If, while x increases, y pass through a maximum value, its increase, or rise, will be changed into a decrease, or fall; and if it pass through a minimum value its fall will be changed into a rise. The neighboring values of the maximum or minimum value, consequently, will lie very *near* each other, and
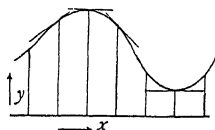
Fig. 224.

the tangents to the curve at the points in question will generally be parallel to the axis of abscissas. Hence, to find the maximum or minimum values of a quantity, we seek the parallel tangents of its curve.

The *method of tangents* may be put in analytical form. For example, it is required to cut off from a given line a a portion x such that the product of the two segments x and $a - x$ shall be as great as possible. Here, the product $x(a - x)$ must be regarded as the quantity y dependent on x. At the maximum value of y any infinitely small variation of x, say a variation ξ, will produce no change in y. Accordingly, the required value of x will be found, by putting

$$x(a - x) = (x + \xi)(a - x - \xi)$$

or

$$a\,x - x^2 = a\,x + a\,\xi - x^2 - x\,\xi - x\,\xi - \xi^2$$

or

$$0 = a - 2\,x - \xi.$$

As ξ may be made as small as we please, we also get

$$0 = a - 2\,x\,;$$

whence $x = a/2$.

In this way, the concrete idea of the method of tangents may be translated into the language of algebra; the procedure also contains, as we see, the germ of the *differential calculus.*

The refraction of light as a minimal effect. Fermat sought to find for the law of the refraction of light an expression analogous to that of Hero for law of reflection. He remarked

that light, proceeding from a point A, and refracted at a point M, travels to B, not by the shortest route, but in the shortest time. If the path AMB is performed in the shortest time, then a neighboring path ANB, infinitely near the real path, will be described in the
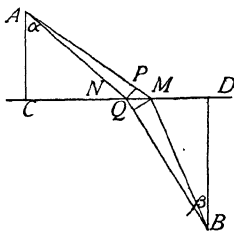
Fig. 225.

same time. If we draw from N on AM and from M on NB the perpendiculars NP and MQ, then the second route, before refraction, is less than the first route by a distance $MP = NM \sin \alpha$, but is larger than it after refraction by the distance $NQ = NM \sin \beta$. On the supposition, therefore, that the velocities in the first and second media are respectively v_1 and v_2, the time required for the path AMB will be a minimum when

$$\frac{NM \sin \alpha}{v_1} - \frac{NM \sin \beta}{v_2} = 0$$

or

$$\frac{v_1}{v_2} = \frac{\sin \alpha}{\sin \beta} = n,$$

where n stands for the index of refraction. Hero's law of reflection, remarks Leibnitz, is thus a special case of the law of refraction. For equal velocities ($v_1 = v_2$), the condition of a minimum of *time* is identical with the condition of a minimum of *space*.

Huygens, in his optical investigations, applied and further perfected the ideas of Fermat, considering, not only rectilinear, but also curvilinear motions of light, in media in which the velocity of the light varied continuously from place to place. For these, also, he found that Fermat's law obtained. Accordingly, in all motions of light, an endeavor, so to speak, to produce results in a *minimum* of *time* appeared to be the fundamental tendency.

Huygens's completion of Fermat's researches.

3. Similar maximal or minimal properties were brought out in the study of mechanical phenomena. As we have already noticed, John Bernoulli knew that a freely suspended chain assumes the form for which its centre of gravity lies *lowest*. This idea was, of course, a simple one for the investigator who first recognised the general import of the principle of virtual velocities. Stimulated by these observations, inquirers now began generally to investigate. maximal and minimal characters. The movement received its most powerful impulse from a problem propounded by John Bernoulli, in June, 1696*—the problem of the *brachistochrone*. In a vertical plane two points are situated, A and B. It is required to assign in this plane the curve by which a falling body will travel from A to B in the *shortest* time. The problem was very ingeniously

The problem of the brachistochrone.

---

* *Acta Eruditorum*, Leipsic.

solved by John Bernoulli himself; and solutions were also supplied by Leibnitz, L'Hôpital, Newton, and James Bernoulli.

The most remarkable solution was JOHN BER-NOULLI's own. This inquirer remarks that problems of this class have already been solved, not for the motion of falling bodies, but for the motion of light. He accordingly imagines the motion of a falling body re-

placed by the motion of a ray of light. (Comp. p. 379.) The two points *A* and *B* are supposed to be fixed in a medium in which the velocity of light increases in the
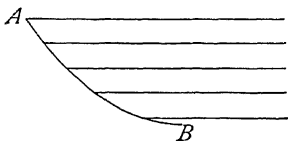
Fig. 226.

vertical downward direction by the same law as the velocity of a falling body. The medium is supposed to be constructed of horizontal layers of downwardly decreasing density, such that $v = \sqrt{2gh}$ denotes the velocity of the light in any layer at the distance h below *A*. A ray of light which travels from *A* to *B* under such conditions will describe this distance in the shortest time, and simultaneously trace out the curve of *quickest descent*.

Calling the angles made by the element of the curve with the perpendicular, or the normal of the layers, $\alpha, \alpha', \alpha''\ldots$, and the respective velocities $v, v', v''\ldots$, we have

$$\frac{\sin \alpha}{v} = \frac{\sin \alpha'}{v'} = \frac{\sin \alpha''}{v''} = \ldots = k = const.$$

or, designating the perpendicular distances below *A* by x, the horizontal distances from *A* by y, and the arc of the curve by s,

$$\frac{\left(\dfrac{dy}{ds}\right)}{v} = k.$$

whence follows

$$dy^2 = k^2\, v^2\, ds^2 = k^2\, v^2\, (dx^2 + dy^2)$$

and because $v = \sqrt{2\,g\,x}$ also

$$dy = dx\sqrt{\frac{x}{a - x}}, \text{ where } a = \frac{1}{2\,g\,k^2}.$$

This is the differential equation of a cycloid, or curve described by a point in the circumference of a circle of radius $r = a/2 = 1/4gk^2$, rolling on a straight line.

To find the cycloid that passes through A and B, The con-
struction of
the cycloid
between
two given
points. it is to be noted that *all* cycloids, inasmuch as they are produced by similar con-
structions, are *similar*, and that if generated by the rolling of circles on AD from the point A as origin, are also *similarly situated* with respect to
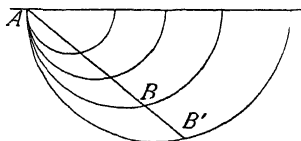
Fig. 227.

the point A. Accordingly, we draw through AB a straight line, and construct any cycloid, cutting the straight line in B'. The radius of the generating circle is, say, r'. Then the radius of the generating circle of the cycloid sought is $r = r'(AB/AB')$.

This solution of John Bernoulli's, achieved entirely without a method, the outcome of pure geometrical fancy and a skilful use of such knowledge as happened to be at his command, is one of the most remarkable and beautiful performances in the history of physical science. John Bernoulli was an æsthetic genius in this field. His brother James's character was entirely differ-
ent. James was the superior of John in critical power,

but in originality and imagination was surpassed by the latter. James Bernoulli likewise solved this problem, though in less felicitous form. But, on the other hand, he did not fail to develop, with great thoroughness, a *general* method applicable to such problems. Thus, in these two brothers we find the two fundamental traits of high scientific talent separated from one another,—traits, which in the very greatest natural inquirers, in Newton, for example, are combined together. We shall soon see those two tendencies, which within one bosom might have fought their battles unnoticed, clashing in open conflict, in the persons of these two brothers.

Vignette to *Leibnitzii et Johannis Bernoullii comercium epistolicum*.
Lausanne and Geneva, Bousquet, 1745.

4. James Bernoulli finds that the chief object of research hitherto had been to find the *values* of a variable quantity, for which a second variable quantity, which is a function of the first, assumes its greatest or its least value. The present problem, however, is to find

from among an *infinite number of curves* one which possesses a certain maximal or minimal property. This, as he correctly remarks, is a problem of an entirely different character from the other and demands a new method.

The principles that James Bernoulli employed in the solution of this problem (*Acta Eruditorum*, May, 1697)* are as follows :

(1) If a curve has a certain property of maximum or minimum, every portion or element of the curve has the same property.

(2) Just as the infinitely adjacent values of the maxima or minima of a quantity in the ordinary problems, for infinitely small changes of the independent variables, are constant, so also is the quantity here to be made a maximum or minimum for the curve sought, for infinitely contiguous *curves*, constant.

(3) It is finally assumed, for the case of the brachistochrone, that the velocity is $v = \sqrt{2\,g\,h}$, where h denotes the height fallen through.

If we picture to ourselves a very small portion ABC of the curve (Fig. 228), and, imagining a horizontal line drawn through B, cause the portion taken to pass into the infinitely contiguous portion ADC, we shall obtain, by considerations exactly similar to those employed in the treatment of Fermat's law, the well-known relation between the sines of the angles made by the curve-elements with the perpendicular and the velocities of descent. In this deduction the following assumptions are made,
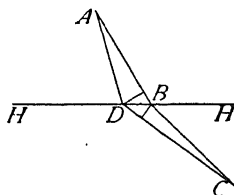
Fig. 228.

* See also his works, Vol. II, p. 768.

(1), that the *part*, or element, ABC is brachistochronous, and (2), that ADC is described in the same time as ABC. Bernoulli's calculation is very prolix ; but its essential features are obvious, and the problem is solved * by the above-stated principles.

With the solution of the problem of the brachistochrone, James Bernoulli, in accordance with the practice then prevailing among mathematicians, proposed the following more general "isoperimetrical problem": "Of all isoperimetrical curves (that is, curves of equal "perimeters or equal lengths) between the same two "fixed points, to find the curve such that the space "included (1) by a second curve, each of whose ordi- "nates is a given function of the corresponding ordi- "nate or the corresponding arc of the one sought, (2) "by the ordinates of its extreme points, and (3) by the "part of the axis of abscissæ lying between those ordi- "nates, shall be a maximum or minimum."

For example. It is required to find the curve BFN, described on the base BN such, that of all curves of
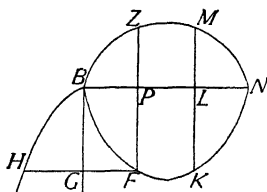
Fig. 229.

the same length on BN, this particular one shall make the area BZN a minimum, where $PZ = (PF)^n$, $LM = (LK)^n$, and so on. Let the relation between the ordinates of BZN and the corresponding ordinates of BFN be given by the curve BH. To obtain PZ from PF, draw FGH at right angles to BG, where BG is at right angles to BN. By hypothesis, then, $PZ = GH$, and

---

* For the details of this solution and for information generally on the history of this subject, see Woodhouse's *Treatise on Isoperimetrical Problems and the Calculus of Variations*, Cambridge, 1810.—*Trans.*

so for the other ordinates. Further, we put $BP = y$, $PF = x$, $PZ = x^n$.

John Bernoulli gave, forthwith, a solution of this problem, in the form

$$y = \int \frac{x^n\, dx}{\sqrt{a^{2n} - x^{2n}}},$$

where a is an arbitrary constant. For $n = 1$,

$$y = \int \frac{x\, dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}} = a - \sqrt{a^2 - x^2},$$

that is, BFN is a semicircle on BN as diameter, and the area BZN is equal to the area BFN. For this particular case, the solution, in fact, is correct. But the general formula is not universally valid.

On the publication of John Bernoulli's solution, James Bernoulli openly engaged to do three things: first, to discover his brother's method; second, to point out its contradictions and errors; and, third, to give the true solution. The jealousy and animosity of the two brothers culminated, on this occasion, in a violent and acrimonious controversy, which lasted till James's death. After James's death, John virtually confessed his error and adopted the correct method of his brother.

James Bernoulli surmised, and in all probability correctly, that John, misled by the results of his researches on the catenary and the curve of a sail filled with wind, had again attempted an *indirect* solution, imagining BFN filled with a liquid of variable density and taking the lowest position of the centre of gravity as determinative of the curve required. Making the ordinate $PZ = p$, the specific gravity of the liquid in the ordinate $PF = x$ must be p/x, and similarly in every other ordinate. The weight of a vertical fila-

ment is then $p \cdot dy/x$, and its moment with respect to BN is

$$\frac{1}{2} x \frac{p\,dy}{x} = \frac{1}{2} p\,dy.$$

Hence, for the lowest position of the centre of gravity, $\frac{1}{2}\int p\,dy$, or $\int p\,dy = BZN$, is a maximum. But the fact is here overlooked, remarks James Bernoulli, that with the variation of the *curve BFN* the *weight* of the liquid also is varied. Consequently, in this simple form the deduction is not admissible.

In the solution which he himself gives, James Bernoulli once more assumes that the small portion $FF_{,,,}$ of the curve possesses the property which the whole curve possesses. And then taking the four successive points $F\ F,\ F_{,,}\ F_{,,,}$, of which the two extreme ones are fixed, he so varies $F,$ and $F_{,,}$ that the length of the arc F $F,\ F_{,,}\ F_{,,,}$ remains *unchanged,*
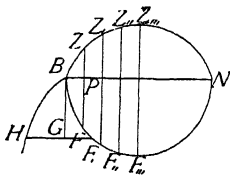
Fig. 230.

which is possible, of course, only by a displacement of *two* points. We shall not follow his involved and unwieldy calculations. The principle of the process is clearly indicated in our remarks. Retaining the designations above employed, James Bernoulli, in substance, states that when

$$dy = \frac{p\,dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - p^2}},$$

$\int p\,dy$ is a maximum, and when

$$dy = \frac{(a - p)\,dx}{\sqrt{2\,ap - p^2}}$$

$\int p\,dy$ is a minimum.

The dissensions between the two brothers were, we may admit, greatly to be deplored. Yet the genius of the one and the profundity of the other have borne, in the stimulus which Euler and Lagrange received from their several investigations, splendid fruits.

5. Euler (*Problematis Isoperimetrici Solutio Generalis, Com. Acad. Petr.* T. VI, for 1733, published in 1738)* was the first to give a more general method of treating these questions of maxima and minima, or isoperimetrical problems. But even his results were based on prolix geometrical considerations, and not possessed of analytical generality. Euler divides problems of this category, with a clear perception and grasp of their differences, into the following classes :

Euler's general classification of the isoperimetrical problems.

(1) Required, of *all* curves, that for which a property *A* is a maximum or minimum.

(2) Required, of all curves, equally possessing a property *A*, that for which *B* is a maximum or minimum.

(3) Required, of all curves, equally possessing two properties, *A* and *B*, that for which *C* is a maximum or minimum. And so on.

A problem of the first class is (Fig. 231) the finding of the *shortest* curve through *M* and *N*. A problem of the second class is the finding of a curve through *M* and *N*, which, having the given length *A*, makes the area *MPN* a maximum. A problem of the third class would be : of all curves of the given length *A*, which pass through *M*, *N* and contain the same area *MPN* = *B*, to find one which describes when rotated about *MN* the least surface of revolution. And so on.

Examples

* Euler's principal contributions to this subject are contained in three memoirs, published in the *Commentaries of Petersburg* for the years 1733, 1736, and 1766, and in the tract *Methodus inveniendi Lineas Curvas Proprietate Maximi Minimive gaudentes*, Lausanne and Geneva, 1744.—*Trans.*

We may observe here, that the finding of an absolute maximum or minimum, without collateral conditions, is meaningless. Thus, all the curves of which in the first example the shortest is sought possess the common property of passing through the points *M* and *N*.
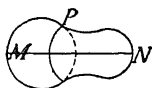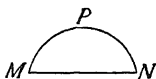
The solution of problems of the first class requires the variation of *two* elements of the curve or of *one* point. This is also sufficient. In problems of the second class *three* elements or *two* points must be varied; the reason being, that the varied portion must possess in common with the unvaried portion the property *A*, and, as *B* is to be made a maximum or minimum, also the property *B*, that is, must satisfy *two* conditions. Similarly, the solution of problems of the third class requires the variation of *four* elements. And so on.

Fig. 231.

The commutability of the isoperimetrical properties, with Euler's inferences.

The solution of a problem of a higher class involves, by implication, the solution of its converse, in all its forms. Thus, in the third class, we vary four elements of the curve, so, that the varied portion of the curve shall share equally with the original portion the values *A* and *B* and, as *C* is to be made a maximum or a minimum, also the value *C*. But the same conditions must be satisfied, if of all curves possessing equally *B* and *C* that for which *A* is a maximum or minimum is sought, or of all curves possessing *A* and *C* that for which *B* is a maximum or minimum is sought. Thus a circle, to take an example from the second class, contains, of all lines of the same length *A*, the greatest area *B*, and the circle, also, of all curves containing the same area *B*, has the shortest length *A*. As the

condition that the property A shall be possessed in common or shall be a maximum, is expressed in the same manner, Euler saw the possibility of reducing the problems of the higher classes to problems of the first class. If, for example, it is required to find, of all curves having the common property A, that which makes B a maximum, the curve is sought for which $A + mB$ is a maximum, where m is an arbitrary constant. If on any change of the curve, $A + mB$, for any value of m, does not change, this is generally possible only provided the change of A, considered by itself, and that of B, considered by itself, are $= 0$.

6. Euler was the originator of still another important advance. In treating the problem of finding the brachistochrone in a resisting medium, which was investigated by Herrmann and him, the existing methods proved incompetent. For the brachistochrone in a vacuum, the velocity depends solely on the vertical height fallen through. The velocity in one portion of the curve is in no wise dependent on the other portions. In this case, then, we can indeed say, that if the whole curve is brachistochronous, every element of it is also brachistochronous. But in a resisting medium the case is different. The entire length and form of the preceding path enters into the determination of the velocity in the element. The whole curve can be brachistochronous without the separate elements necessarily exhibiting this property. By considerations of this character, Euler perceived, that the principle introduced by James Bernoulli did not hold universally good, but that in cases of the kind referred to, a more detailed treatment was required.

The fundamental principle of James Bernoulli's method shown not to be universally true.

7. The methodical arrangement and the great number of the problems solved, gradually led Euler to sub-

stantially the same methods that Lagrange afterwards
developed in a somewhat different form, and which
now go by the name of the *Calculus of Variations.* First,
John Bernoulli lighted on an *accidental* solution of a
problem, by analogy. James Bernoulli developed, for
the solution of such problems, a geometrical method.
Euler generalised the problems and the geometrical
method. And finally, Lagrange, entirely emancipating
himself from the consideration of geometrical figures,
gave an analytical method. Lagrange remarked, that
the increments which functions receive in consequence
of a change in their *form* are quite analogous to the in-
crements they receive in consequence of a change of
their independent variables. To distinguish the two
species of increments, Lagrange denoted the former
by δ, the latter by d. By the observation of this anal-
ogy Lagrange was enabled to write down at once the
equations which solve problems of maxima and minima.
Of this idea, which has proved itself a very fertile one,
Lagrange never gave a verification ; in fact, did not
even attempt it. His achievement is in every respect
a peculiar one. He saw, with great economical in-
sight, the foundations which in his judgment were suf-
ficiently secure and serviceable to build upon. But
the acceptance of these fundamental principles them-
selves was vindicated only by its results. Instead of
employing himself on the demonstration of these prin-
ciples, he showed with what success they could be em-
ployed. (*Essai d'une nouvelle méthode pour déterminer
les maxima et minima des formules intégrales indéfinies.
Misc. Taur.* 1762.)

The difficulty which Lagrange's contemporaries and
successors experienced in clearly grasping his idea, is
quite intelligible. Euler sought in vain to clear up the

difference between a variation and a differential by
imagining constants contained in the function, with
the change of which the form of the function changed.
The increments of the value of the function arising
from the increments of these constants were regarded
by him as the variations, while the increments of the
function springing from the increments of the indepen-
dent variables were the differentials. The conception
of the Calculus of Variations that springs from such a
view is singularly timid, narrow, and illogical, and does
not compare with that of Lagrange. Even Lindelöf's
modern work, so excellent in other respects, is marred
by this defect. The first really competent presenta-
tion of Lagrange's idea is, in our opinion, that of JEL-
LETT.* Jellett appears to have said what Lagrange per-
haps was unable fully to say, perhaps did not deem it
necessary to say.

8. Jellett's view is, in substance, this. Quantities
generally are divisible into *constant* and *variable* quan-
tities; the latter being subdivided into independent
and dependent variables, or such as may be arbitrarily
changed, and such whose change depends on the
change of other, independent, variables, in some way
connected with them. The latter are called functions
of the former, and the nature of the relation that con-
nects them is termed the *form* of the function. Now,
quite analogous to this division of quantities into con-
stant and variable, is the division of the *forms of func-
tions* into *determinate* (constant) and *indeterminate* (vari-
able). If the form of a function, $y = \varphi(x)$, is inde-
terminate, or variable; the value of the function y can
change in two ways: (1) by an increment dx of the

* *An Elementary Treatise on the Calculus of Variations.* By the Rev.
John Hewitt Jellett. Dublin, 1850.

independent variable x, or (2) by a change of *form*, by a passage from φ to φ_1. The first change is the differential dy, the second, the variation δy. Accordingly,

$$dy = \varphi(x + dx) - \varphi(x), \text{ and}$$
$$\delta y = \varphi_1(x) - \varphi(x).$$

The change of value of an indeterminate function due to a mere change of form involves no problem, just as the change of value of an independent variable involves none. We may assume any change of form we please, and so produce any change of value we please. A problem is not presented till the change in value of a determinate function (F) of an indeterminate function φ, due to a *change of form* of the included indeterminate function, is required. For example, if we have a plane curve of the *indeterminate* form $y = \varphi(x)$, the length of its arc between the abscissæ x_0 and x_1 is

$$S = \int_{x_0}^{x_1} \sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{d\varphi(x)}{dx}\right)^2} \cdot dx = \int_{x_0}^{x_1} \sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right)^2} \cdot dx,$$

a *determinate* function of an indeterminate function. The moment a definite form of curve is fixed upon, the value of S can be given. For any change of form of the curve, the change in value of the length of the arc, δS, is determinable. In the example given, the function S does not contain the function y directly, but through its first differential coefficient dy/dx, which is itself dependent on y. Let $u = F(y)$ be a determinate function of an indeterminate function $y = \varphi(x)$; then

$$\delta u = F(y + \delta y) - F(y) = \frac{dF(y)}{dy}\delta y.$$

Again, let $u = F(y, dy/dx)$ be a determinate function

of an indeterminate function, $y = \varphi(x)$. For a change of form of φ, the value of y changes by δy and the value of dy/dx by $\delta(dy/dx)$. The corresponding change in the value of u is

$$\delta u = \frac{d F\left(y, \dfrac{dy}{dx}\right)}{dy} \delta y + \frac{d F\left(y, \dfrac{dy}{dx}\right)}{d \dfrac{dy}{dx}} \delta \frac{dy}{dx}.$$

The expression $\delta \dfrac{dy}{dx}$ is obtained by our definition from

$$\delta \frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{d(y + \delta y)}{dx} - \frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{d\,\delta y}{dx}.$$

Similarly, the following results are found :

$$\delta \frac{d^2 y}{dx^2} = \frac{d^2\,\delta y}{dx^2}, \quad \delta \frac{d^3 y}{dx^3} = \frac{d^3\,\delta y}{dx^3},$$

and so forth.

We now proceed to a problem, namely, the determination of the form of the function $y = \varphi(x)$ that will render

$$U = \int_{x_0}^{x_1} V\,dx$$

where

$$V = F\left(x, y, \frac{dy}{dx}, \frac{d^2 y}{dx^2}, \ldots\right),$$

a maximum or minimum ; φ denoting an indeterminate, and F a determinate function. The value of U may be varied (1) by a change of the limits, x_0, x_1. Outside of the limits, the change of the independent variables x, as such, does not affect U; accordingly, if we regard the limits as fixed, this is the only respect in which we need attend to x. The only other way (2) in which the value of U is susceptible of variation

is by a change of the *form* of $y = \varphi(x)$. This produces a change of *value* in

$$y, \frac{dy}{dx}, \frac{d^2 y}{dz^2}, \ldots$$

amounting to

$$\delta y, \ \delta \frac{dy}{dx}, \ \delta \frac{d^2 y}{dx^2} \ldots,$$

and so forth. The total change in U, which we shall call DU, and to express the maximum-minimum condition put $= 0$, consists of the differential dU and the variation δU. Accordingly,

$$DU = dU + \delta U = 0.$$

Denoting by $V_1 dx_1$ and $- V_0 dx_0$ the increments of U due to the change of the limits, we then have

$$DU = V_1 dx_1 - V_0 dx_0 + \delta \int_{x_0}^{x_1} V dx =$$

$$V_1 dx_1 - V_0 dx_0 + \int_{x_0}^{x_1} \delta V . dx = 0.$$

But by the principles stated on page 439 we further get

$$\delta V = \frac{dV}{dy} \delta y + \frac{dV}{d\frac{dy}{dx}} \delta \frac{dy}{dx} + \frac{dV}{d\frac{d^2 y}{dx^2}} \delta \frac{d^2 y}{dx^2} + \ldots =$$

$$\frac{dV}{dy} \delta y + \frac{dV}{d\frac{dy}{dx}} \frac{d\delta y}{dx} + \frac{dV}{d\frac{d^2 y}{dx^2}} \frac{d^2 \delta y}{dx^2} + \ldots$$

For the sake of brevity we put

$$\frac{dV}{dy} = N, \frac{dV}{d\frac{dy}{dx}} = P_1, \frac{dV}{d\frac{d^2 y}{dx^2}} = P_2, \ldots$$

Then

$$\delta \int_{x_0}^{x_1} V dx =$$

$$\int_{x_0}^{x_1} \left(N\delta y + P_1 \frac{d\,\delta y}{d\,x} + P_2 \frac{d^2\,\delta y}{d\,x^2} + P_3 \frac{d^3\,\delta y}{d\,x^3} + \ldots \right) d\,x.$$ The in gratio the thi term o expres for the variati

One difficulty here is, that not only δy, but also the terms $d\,\delta y/dx$, $d^2\,\delta y/dx^2$ .... occur in this equation, —terms which are dependent on one another, but not in a directly obvious manner. This drawback can be removed by successive integration by parts, by means of the formula

$$\int u\,dv = uv - \int v\,du.$$

By this method

$$\int P_1 \frac{d\,\delta y}{d\,x}\,dx = P_1\,\delta y - \int \frac{dP_1}{d\,x}\,\delta y\,dx,$$

$$\int P_2 \frac{d^2\,\delta y}{d\,x^2}\,dx = P_2 \frac{d\,\delta y}{d\,x} - \int \frac{dP_2}{d\,x}\frac{d\,\delta y}{d\,x}\,dx =$$

$$P_2 \frac{d\,\delta y}{d\,x} - \frac{dP_2}{d\,x}\,\delta y + \int \frac{d^2 P_2}{d\,x^2}\,\delta y\,dx, \text{ and so on.}$$

Performing all these integrations between the limits, we obtain for the condition $DU = 0$ the expression

$$0 = V_1\,dx_1 - V_0\,dx_0$$

$$+ \left(P_1 - \frac{dP_2}{dx} + \cdots \right)_1 \delta y_1 - \left(P_1 - \frac{dP_2}{dx} + \cdots \right)_0 \delta y_0$$

$$+ \left(P_2 - \frac{dP_3}{dx} + \cdots \right)_1 \left(\frac{d\delta y}{dx} \right)_1 - \left(P_2 - \frac{dP_3}{dx} + \cdots \right)_0 \left(\frac{d\delta y}{dx} \right)_0$$

$$+ \quad \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots$$

$$+ \int_{x_0}^{x_1} \left(N - \frac{dP_1}{dx} + \frac{d^2 P_2}{dx^2} - \frac{d^3 P_3}{dx^3} + \ldots \right) \delta y\,.\,dx,$$

which now contains only δy under the integral sign.

The terms in the first line of this expression are independent of any change in the form of the function and depend solely upon the variation of the limits.

The terms of the two following lines depend on the
change in the form of the function, for the limiting
values of x only; and the indices 1 and 2 state that
the actual limiting values are to be put in the place of
the general expressions.   The terms of the last line,
finally, depend on the *general* change in the form of
the function.   Collecting all the terms, except those in
the last line, under one designation $\alpha_1 - \alpha_0$, and calling
the expression in parentheses in the last line β, we
have

$$0 = \alpha_1 - \alpha_0 + \int_{x_0}^{x_1} \beta \cdot \delta y \cdot dx.$$

But this equation can be satisfied only if

$$\alpha_1 - \alpha_0 = 0 \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ (1)$$

and

$$\int_{x_0}^{x_1} \beta \, \delta y \, dx = 0 . \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ \cdot \ (2)$$

For if each of the members were not equal to zero,
each would be determined by the other.   But the in-
tegral of an indeterminate function cannot be expressed
in terms of its limiting values only.   Assuming, there-
fore, that the equation

$$\int_{x_0}^{x_1} \beta \, \delta y \, dx = 0,$$

holds generally good, its conditions can be satisfied,
since δy is throughout arbitrary and its generality of
form cannot be restricted, only by making $\beta = 0$.   By
the equation

$$N - \frac{dP_1}{dx} + \frac{d^2 P_2}{dx^2} - \frac{d^3 P_3}{dx^3} + \ldots = 0. \ \cdot \ \cdot \ (3),$$

therefore, the form of the function $y = \varphi(x)$ that makes
the expression U a maximum or minimum is defined.

Equation (3) was found by Euler. But Lagrange first showed the application of equation (1), for the determination of a function by the conditions at its limits. By equation (3), which it must satisfy, the *form* of the function $y = \varphi(x)$ is *generally* determined; but this equation contains a number of *arbitrary* constants, whose values are determined solely by the conditions at the limits. With respect to notation, Jellett rightly remarks, that the employment of the symbol δ in the first two terms $V_1 \delta x_1 = V_0 \delta x_0$ of equation (1), (the form used by Lagrange,) is illogical, and he correctly puts for the increments of the independent variables the usual symbols dx_1, dx_0.

9. To illustrate the use to which these equations may be put, let us seek the form of the function that makes

$$\int_{x_0}^{x_1} \sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right)^2}\, dx$$

a minimum—the shortest line. Here

$$V = F\left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right).$$

All expressions except

$$P_1 = \frac{dV}{d\frac{dy}{dx}} = \frac{\frac{dy}{dx}}{\sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right)^2}}$$

vanish in equation (3), and that equation becomes $dP_1/dx = 0$; which means that P_1, and consequently its only variable, dy/dx, is independent of x. Hence, $dy/dx = a$, and $y = ax + b$, where a and b are constants.

The constants a, b are determined by the values of

the limits. If the straight line passes through the points x_0, y_0 and x_1, y_1, then

$$\left.\begin{array}{l} y_0 = a x_0 + b \\ y_1 = a x_1 + b \end{array}\right\} \quad \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots (m)$$

and as $dx_0 = dx_1 = 0$, $\delta y_0 = \delta y_1 = 0$, equation (1) vanishes. The coefficients $\delta(dy/dx)$, $\delta(d^2y/dx^2)$, ... independently vanish. Hence, the values of a and b are determined by the equations (m) alone.

If the limits x_0, x_1 only are given, but y_0, y_1 are indeterminate, we have $dx_0 = dx_1 = 0$, and equation (1) takes the form

$$\frac{a}{\sqrt{1+a^2}} (\delta y_1 - \delta y_0) = 0,$$

which, since δy_0 and δy_1 are arbitrary, can only be satisfied if $a = 0$. The straight line is in this case $y = b$, parallel to the axis of abscissæ, and as b is indeterminate, at any distance from it.

It will be noticed, that equation (1) and the subsidiary conditions expressed in equation (m), with respect to the determination of the constants, generally complement each other.

If

$$Z = \int_{x_1}^{x_2} y \sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right)^2} \, dx$$

is to be made a minimum, the integration of the appropriate form of (3) will give

$$y = \frac{c}{2} \left[e^{\frac{x-c'}{c}} + e^{-\frac{x-c'}{c}} \right].$$

If Z is a minimum, then $2\pi Z$ also is a minimum, and the curve found will give, by rotation about the axis of abscissæ, the least surface of revolution. Further,

to a minimum of Z the lowest position of the centre of gravity of a homogeneously heavy curve of this kind corresponds ; the curve is therefore a catenary. The determination of the constants c, c' is effected by means of the limiting conditions, as above.

In the treatment of mechanical problems, a dis- tinction is made between the increments of coördinates that *actually* take place in time, namely, dx, dy, dz, and the *possible* displacements δx, δy, δz, considered, for instance, in the application of the principle of virtual velocities. The latter, as a rule, are not variations ; that is, are not changes of value that spring from changes in the form of a function. Only when we consider a mechanical system that is a continuum, as for example a string, a flexible surface, an elastic body, or a liquid, are we at liberty to regard δx, δy, δz as indeterminate functions of the coördinates x, y, z, and are we concerned with variations. Variations and virtual displacements distinguished.

It is not our purpose in this work, to develop math- ematical theories, but simply to treat the purely phys- ical part of mechanics. But the history of the isoperi- metrical problems and of the calculus of variations had to be touched upon, because these researches have ex- ercised a very considerable influence on the develop- ment of mechanics. Our sense of the general prop- erties of systems, and of properties of maxima and minima in particular, was much sharpened by these investigations, and properties of the kind referred to were subsequently discovered in mechanical systems with great facility. As a fact, physicists, since La- grange's time, usually express mechanical principles in a maximal or minimal form. This predilection would be unintelligible without a knowledge of the historical development. Importance of the calculus of variations for mechanics.

THEOLOGICAL, ANIMISTIC, AND MYSTICAL POINTS OF VIEW IN MECHANICS.

1. If, in entering a parlor in Germany, we happen to hear something said about some man being very pious, without having caught the name, we may fancy that Privy Counsellor X was spoken of,—or Herr *von* Y; we should hardly think of a scientific man of our acquaintance. It would, however, be a mistake to suppose that the want of cordiality, occasionally rising to embittered controversy, which has existed in our day between the scientific and the theological faculties, always separated them. A glance at the history of science suffices to prove the contrary.

The conflict of science and the church. People talk of the "conflict" of science and theology, or better of science and the church. It is in truth a prolific theme. On the one hand, we have the long catalogue of the sins of the church against progress, on the other side a "noble army of martyrs," among them no less distinguished figures than Galileo and Giordano Bruno. It was only by good luck that Descartes, pious as he was, escaped the same fate. These things are the commonplaces of history; but it would be a great mistake to suppose that the phrase "warfare of science" is a correct description of its general historic attitude toward religion, that the only repression of intellectual development has come from priests, and that if their hands had been held off, growing science would have shot up with stupendous velocity. No doubt, external opposition did have to be fought; and the battle with it was no child's play.

Nor was any engine too base for the church to handle in this struggle. She considered nothing but how to conquer ; and no temporal policy ever was conducted so selfishly, so unscrupulously, or so cruelly. But investigators have had another struggle on their hands, and by no means an easy one, the struggle with their own preconceived ideas, and especially with the notion that philosophy and science must be founded on theology. It was but slowly that this prejudice little by little was erased.

2. But let the facts speak for themselves, while we introduce the reader to a few historical personages.

Napier, the inventor of logarithms, an austere Puritan, who lived in the sixteenth century, was, in addition to his scientific avocations, a zealous theologian. Napier applied himself to some extremely curious speculations. He wrote an exegetical commentary on the Book of Revelation, with propositions and mathematical demonstrations. Proposition XXVI, for example, maintains that the pope is the Antichrist ; proposition XXXVI declares that the locusts are the Turks and Mohammedans ; and so forth.

Blaise Pascal (1623–1662), one of the most rounded geniuses to be found among mathematicians and physicists, was extremely orthodox and ascetical. So deep were the convictions of his heart, that despite the gentleness of his character, he once openly denounced at Rouen an instructor in philosophy as a heretic. The healing of his sister by contact with a relic most seriously impressed him, and he regarded her cure as a miracle. On these facts taken by themselves it might be wrong to lay great stress ; for his whole family were much inclined to religious fanaticism. But there are plenty of other instances of his religiosity. Such was

Pascal.   his resolve,—which was carried out, too,—to abandon
altogether the pursuits of science and to devote his life
solely to the cause of Christianity.   Consolation, he
used to say, he could find nowhere but in the teachings
of Christianity ; and all the wisdom of the world availed
him not a whit.   The sincerity of his desire for the
conversion of heretics is shown in his *Lettres provin-
ciales*, where he vigorously declaims against the dread
ful subtleties that the doctors of the Sorbonne had
devised, expressly to persecute the Jansenists.   Very
remarkable is Pascal's correspondence with the theo-
logians of his time ; and a modern reader is not a little
surprised at finding this great " scientist " seriously
discussing in one of his letters whether or not the Devil
was able to work miracles.

Otto von   Otto von Guericke, the inventor of the air-pump,
Guericke. occupies himself, at the beginning of his book, now
little over two hundred years old, with the miracle of
Joshua, which he seeks to harmonise with the ideas
of Copernicus.   In like manner, we find his researches
on the vacuum and the nature of the atmosphere in-
troduced by disquisitions concerning the location of
heaven, the location of hell, and so forth.   Although
Guericke really strives to answer these questions as ra-
tionally as he can, still we notice that they give him
considerable trouble,—questions, be it remembered,
that to-day the theologians themselves would consider
absurd.   Yet Guericke was a man who lived after the
Reformation !

The giant mind of Newton did not disdain to employ
itself on the interpretation of the Apocalypse.   On such
subjects it was difficult for a sceptic to converse with
him.   When Halley once indulged in a jest concerning
theological questions, he is said to have curtly repulsed

him with the remark : "I have studied these things ; Newton and Leibnitz. you have not !"

We need not tarry by Leibnitz, the inventor of the best of all possible worlds and of pre-established harmony—inventions which Voltaire disposed of in *Candide*, a humorous novel with a deeply philosophical purpose. But everybody knows that Leibnitz was almost if not quite as much a theologian, as a man of science.

Let us turn, however, to the last century. Euler, in Euler. his *Letters to a German Princess*, deals with theologico-philosophical problems in the midst of scientific questions. He speaks of the difficulty involved in explaining the interaction of body and mind, due to the total diversity of these two phenomena,—a diversity to his mind undoubted. The system of occasionalism, developed by Descartes and his followers, agreeably to which God executes for every purpose of the soul, (the soul itself not being able to do so,) a corresponding movement of the body, does not quite satisfy him. He derides, also, and not without humor, the doctrine of pre-established harmony, according to which perfect agreement was established from the beginning between the movements of the body and the volitions of the soul,—although neither is in any way connected with the other,—just as there is harmony between two different but like-constructed clocks. He remarks, that in this view his own body is as foreign to him as that of a rhinoceros in the midst of Africa, which might just as well be in pre-established harmony with his soul as its own. Let us hear his own words. In his day, Latin was almost universally written. When a German scholar wished to be especially condescending, he wrote in French : "Si dans le cas d'un dérèglement "de mon corps Dieu ajustait celui d'un rhinoceros,

" en sorte que ses mouvements fussent tellement d'ac
" cord avec les ordres de mon âme, qu'il levât la patte
" au moment que je voudrais lever la main, et ains
" des autres opérations, ce serait alors mon corps. Je
" me trouverais subitement dans la forme d'un rhino-
" ceros au milieu de l'Afrique, mais non obstant cela
" mon âme continuerait les même opérations. J'aurais
" également l'honneur d'écrire à V. A., mais je ne sais
" pas comment elle recevrait mes lettres."

Euler's theological proclivities
One would almost imagine that Euler, here, had been tempted to play Voltaire. And yet, apposite as was his criticism in this vital point, the mutual action of body and soul remained a miracle to him, still. But he extricates himself, however, from the question of the freedom of the will, very sophistically. To give some idea of the kind of questions which a scientist was permitted to treat in those days, it may be remarked that Euler institutes in his physical "Letters" investigations concerning the nature of spirits, the connection between body and soul, the freedom of the will, the influence of that freedom on physical occurrences, prayer, physical and moral evils, the conversion of sinners, and such like topics;—and this in a treatise full of clear physical ideas and not devoid of philosophical ones, where the well-known circle-diagrams of logic have their birth-place.

Character of the theological leanings of the great inquirers.
3. Let these examples of religious physicists suffice. We have selected them intentionally from among the foremost of scientific discoverers. The theological proclivities which these men followed, belong wholly to their innermost private life. They tell us openly things which they are not compelled to tell us, things about which they might have remained silent. What they utter are not opinions forced upon them from without;

they are their own sincere views. They were not conscious of any theological constraint. In a court which harbored a Lamettrie and a Voltaire, Euler had no reason to conceal his real convictions.

According to the modern notion, these men should at least have seen that the questions they discussed did not belong under the heads where they put them, that they were not questions of science. Still, odd as this contradiction between inherited theological beliefs and independently created scientific convictions seems to us, it is no reason for a diminished admiration of those leaders of scientific thought. Nay, this very fact is a proof of their stupendous mental power : they were able, in spite of the contracted horizon of their age, to which even their own *aperçus* were chiefly limited, to point out the path to an elevation, where our generation has attained a freer point of view.

Every unbiassed mind must admit that the age in which the chief development of the science of mechanics took place, was an age of predominantly theological cast. Theological questions were excited by everything, and modified everything. No wonder, then, that mechanics took the contagion. But the thoroughness with which theological thought thus permeated scientific inquiry, will best be seen by an examination of details.

4. The impulse imparted in antiquity to this direc- tion of thought by Hero and Pappus has been alluded to in the preceding chapter. At the beginning of the seventeenth century we find Galileo occupied with problems concerning the strength of materials. He shows that hollow tubes offer a greater resistance to flexure than solid rods of the same length and the same quantity of material, and at once applies this discovery to the explanation of the forms of the bones of animals, which

are usually hollow and cylindrical in shape. The phenomenon is easily illustrated by the comparison of a flatly folded and a rolled sheet of paper. A horizontal beam fastened at one extremity and loaded at the other may be remodelled so as to be thinner at the loaded end without any loss of stiffness and with a considerable saving of material. Galileo determined the form of a beam of equal resistance at each cross-section. He also remarked that animals of similar geometrical construction but of considerable difference of size would comply in very unequal proportions with the laws of resistance.

Evidences of design in nature. The forms of bones, feathers, stalks, and other organic structures, adapted, as they are, in their minutest details to the purposes they serve, are highly calculated to make a profound impression on the thinking beholder, and this fact has again and again been adduced in proof of a supreme wisdom ruling in nature. Let us examine, for instance, the pinion-feather of a bird. The quill is a hollow tube diminishing in thickness as we go towards the end, that is, is a body of equal resistance. Each little blade of the vane repeats in miniature the same construction. It would require considerable technical knowledge even to imitate a feather of this kind, let alone invent it. We should not forget, however, that investigation, and not mere admiration, is the office of science. We know how Darwin sought to solve these problems, by the theory of natural selection. That Darwin's solution is a complete one, may fairly be doubted ; Darwin himself questioned it. All external conditions would be powerless if something were not present that *admitted* of variation. But there can be no question that his theory is the first serious attempt to replace mere ad-

miration of the adaptations of organic nature by seri-
ous inquiry into the mode of their origin.

Pappus's ideas concerning the cells of honeycombs The cells c
were the subject of animated discussion as late as the the honey-comb.
eighteenth century. In a treatise, published in 1865,
entitled *Homes Without Hands* (p. 428), Wood substan-
tially relates the following : "Maraldi had been struck
with the great regularity of the cells of the honey-
comb. He measured the angles of the lozenge-shaped
plates, or rhombs, that form the terminal walls of the
cells, and found them to be respectively 109° 28' and
70° 32'. Réaumur, convinced that these angles were in
some way connected with the economy of the cells,
requested the mathematician König to calculate the
form of a hexagonal prism terminated by a pyramid
composed of three equal and similar rhombs, which
would give the greatest amount of space with a given
amount of material. The answer was, that the angles
should be 109° 26' and 70° 34'. The difference, accord-
ingly, was two minutes. Maclaurin,* dissatisfied with
this agreement, repeated Maraldi's measurements, found
them correct, and discovered, in going over the calcu-
lation, an error in the logarithmic table employed by
König. Not the bees, but the mathematicians were
wrong, and the bees had helped to detect the error !"

Any one who is acquainted with the methods of meas-
uring crystals and has seen the cell of a honeycomb,
with its rough and non-reflective surfaces, will question
whether the measurement of such cells can be executed
with a probable error of only two minutes.† So, we
must take this story as a sort of pious mathematical

* *Philosophical Transactions* for 1743.—*Trans.*

† But see G. F. Maraldi in the *Mémoires de l'académie* for 1712. It is, how-
ever, now well known the cells vary considerably. See Chauncey Wright,
Philosophical Discussions, 1877, p. 311.—*Trans.*

fairy-tale, quite apart from the consideration that noth-
ing would follow from it even were it true. Besides,
from a mathematical point of view, the problem is too
imperfectly formulated to enable us to decide the ex-
tent to which the bees have solved it.

Other
instances.
The ideas of Hero and Fermat, referred to in the
previous chapter, concerning the motion of light, at
once received from the hands of Leibnitz a theolog-
ical coloring, and played, as has been before mentioned,
a predominant rôle in the development of the calculus
of variations. In Leibnitz's correspondence with John
Bernoulli, theological questions are repeatedly dis-
cussed in the very midst of mathematical disquisitions.
Their language is not unfrequently couched in biblical
pictures. Leibnitz, for example, says that the problem
of the brachistochrone lured him as the apple had lured
Eve.

The theo-
logical ker-
nel of the
principle of
least ac-
tion.
Maupertuis, the famous president of the Berlin
Academy, and a friend of Frederick the Great, gave
a new impulse to the theologising bent of physics by
the enunciation of his principle of least action. In the
treatise which formulated this obscure principle, and
which betrayed in Maupertuis a woeful lack of mathe-
matical accuracy, the author declared his principle to be
the one which best accorded with the wisdom of the
Creator. Maupertuis was an ingenious man, but not a
man of strong, practical sense. This is evidenced by
the schemes he was incessantly devising: his bold prop-
ositions to found a city in which only Latin should be
spoken, to dig a deep hole in the earth to find new
substances, to institute psychological investigations by
means of opium and by the dissection of monkeys, to
explain the formation of the embryo by gravitation, and
so forth. He was sharply satirised by Voltaire in the

Histoire du docteur Akakia, a work which led, as we know, to the rupture between Frederick and Voltaire.

Maupertuis's principle would in all probability soon have been forgotten, had Euler not taken up the suggestion. Euler magnanimously left the principle its name, Maupertuis the glory of the invention, and converted it into something new and really serviceable. What Maupertuis meant to convey is very difficult to ascertain. What Euler meant may be easily shown by simple examples. If a body is constrained to move on a rigid surface, for instance, on the surface of the earth, it will describe when an impulse is imparted to it, the shortest path between its initial and terminal positions. Any other path that might be prescribed it, would be longer or would require a greater time. This principle finds an application in the theory of atmospheric and oceanic currents. The theological point of view, Euler retained. He claims it is possible to explain phenomena, not only from their physical *causes,* but also from their *purposes.* "As the construction of the universe is the "most perfect possible, being the handiwork of an "all-wise Maker, nothing can be met with in the world "in which some maximal or minimal property is not "displayed. There is, consequently, no doubt but "that all the effects of the world can be derived by "the method of maxima and minima from their final "causes as well as from their efficient ones." *

Euler's retention of the theological basis of this principle.

5. Similarly, the notions of the constancy of the quantity of matter, of the constancy of the quantity of

---

* "Quum enim mundi universi fabrica sit perfectissima, atque a creatore sapientissimo absoluta, nihil omnino in mundo contingit, in quo non maximi minimive ratio quaepiam eluceat; quam ob rem dubium prorsus est nullum, quin omnes mundi effectus ex causis finalibus, ope methodi maximorum et minimorum, aeque feliciter determinari quaeant, atque ex ipsis causis efficientibus." (*Methodus inveniendi lineas curvas maximi minimive proprietate gaudentes.* Lausanne, 1744.)

The central motion, of the indestructibility of work or energy, con-
notions of
modern   ceptions which completely dominate modern physics,
physics
mainly of   all arose under the influence of theological ideas. The
theological
origin.   notions in question had their origin in an utterance of
Descartes, before mentioned, in the *Principles of Philos-
ophy*, agreeably to which the quantity of matter and mo-
tion originally created in the world,—such being the
only course compatible with the constancy of the Crea-
tor,—is always preserved unchanged. The conception
of the manner in which this quantity of motion should
be calculated was very considerably modified in the
progress of the idea from Descartes to Leibnitz, and to
their successors, and as the outcome of these modifi-
cations the doctrine gradually and slowly arose which
is now called the "law of the conservation of energy."
But the theological background of these ideas only
slowly vanished. In fact, at the present day, we still
meet with scientists who indulge in self-created mys-
ticisms concerning this law.

Gradual   During the entire sixteenth and seventeenth centu-
transition
from the   ries, down to the close of the eighteenth, the prevail-
theological
point of   ing inclination of inquirers was, to find in all physical
view.
laws some particular disposition of the Creator. But
a gradual transformation of these views must strike
the attentive observer. Whereas with Descartes and
Leibnitz physics and theology were still greatly inter-
mingled, in the subsequent period a distinct endeavor
is noticeable, not indeed wholly to discard theology,
yet to separate it from purely physical questions. Theo-
logical disquisitions were put at the beginning or rele-
gated to the end of physical treatises. Theological
speculations were restricted, as much as possible, to
the question of creation, that, from this point onward,
the way might be cleared for physics.

Towards the close of the eighteenth century a re- markable change took place,—a change which was apparently an abrupt departure from the current trend of thought, but in reality was the logical outcome of the development indicated. After an attempt in a youthful work to found mechanics on Euler's principle of least action, Lagrange, in a subsequent treatment of the subject, declared his intention of utterly disregarding theological and metaphysical speculations, as in their nature precarious and foreign to science. He erected a new mechanical system on entirely different foundations, and no one conversant with the subject will dispute its excellencies. All subsequent scientists of eminence accepted Lagrange's view, and the present attitude of physics to theology was thus substantially determined.

6. The idea that theology and physics are two dis- tinct branches of knowledge, thus took, from its first germination in Copernicus till its final promulgation by Lagrange, almost two centuries to attain clearness in the minds of investigators. At the same time it cannot be denied that this truth was always clear to the greatest minds, like Newton. Newton never, despite his profound religiosity, mingled theology with the questions of science. True, even he concludes his *Optics*, whilst on its last pages his clear and luminous intellect still shines, with an exclamation of humble contrition at the vanity of all earthly things. But his optical researches proper, in contrast to those of Leibnitz, contain not a trace of theology. The same may be said of Galileo and Huygens. Their writings conform almost absolutely to the point of view of Lagrange, and may be accepted in this respect as classical. But the general views and tendencies of an age

must not be judged by its greatest, but by its average, minds.

To comprehend the process here portrayed, the general condition of affairs in these times must be considered. It stands to reason that in a stage of civilisation in which religion is almost the sole education, and the only theory of the world, people would naturally look at things in a theological point of view, and that they would believe that this view was possessed of competency in all fields of research. If we transport ourselves back to the time when people played the organ with their fists, when they had to have the multiplication table visibly before them to calculate, when they did so much with their hands that people now-a-days do with their heads, we shall not demand of such a time that it should *critically* put to the test its own views and theories. With the widening of the intellectual horizon through the great geographical, technical, and scientific discoveries and inventions of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, with the opening up of provinces in which it was impossible to make any progress with the old conception of things, simply because it had been formed prior to the knowledge of these provinces, this bias of the mind gradually and slowly vanished. The great freedom of thought which appears in isolated cases in the early middle ages, first in poets and then in scientists, will always be hard to understand. The enlightenment of those days must have been the work of a few very extraordinary minds, and can have been bound to the views of the people at large by but very slender threads, more fitted to disturb those views than to reform them. Rationalism does not seem to have gained a broad theatre of action till the literature of the eighteenth century. Humanistic, philosophical, historical,

and physical science here met and gave each other mutual encouragement. All who have experienced, in part, in its literature, this wonderful emancipation of the human intellect, will feel during their whole lives a deep, elegiacal regret for the eighteenth century.

7. The old point of view, then, is abandoned. Its history is now detectible only in the form of the mechanical principles. And this form will remain strange to us as long as we neglect its origin. The theological conception of things gradually gave way to a more rigid conception ; and this was accompanied with a considerable gain in enlightenment, as we shall now briefly indicate.

When we say light travels by the paths of shortest time, we grasp by such an expression many things. But we do not know as yet *why* light prefers paths of shortest time. We forego all further knowledge of the phenomenon, if we find the reason in the Creator's wisdom. We of to-day know, that light travels by *all* paths, but that only on the paths of shortest time do the waves of light so intensify each other that a perceptible result is produced. Light, accordingly, only *appears* to travel by the paths of shortest time. After the prejudice which prevailed on these questions had been removed, cases were immediately discovered in which by the side of the supposed economy of nature the most striking extravagance was displayed. Cases of this kind have, for example, been pointed out by Jacobi in connection with Euler's principle of least action. A great many natural phenomena accordingly produce the impression of economy, simply because they visibly appear only when by accident an economical accumulation of effects take place. This is the same idea in the province of inorganic nature that Dar-

win worked out in the domain of organic nature. We facilitate instinctively our comprehension of nature by applying to it the economical ideas with which we are familiar.

Often the phenomena of nature exhibit maximal or minimal properties because when these greatest or least properties have been established the causes of all further alteration are removed. The catenary gives the lowest point of the centre of gravity for the simple reason that when that point has been reached all further descent of the system's parts is impossible. Liquids exclusively subjected to the action of molecular forces exhibit a minimum of superficial area, because stable equilibrium can only subsist when the molecular forces are able to effect no further diminution of superficial area. The important thing, therefore, is not the maximum or minimum, but the removal of *work*; work being the factor determinative of the alteration. It sounds much less imposing but is much more elucidatory, much more correct and comprehensive, instead of speaking of the economical tendencies of nature, to say : "So much and so much only occurs as in virtue of the forces and circumstances involved can occur."

The question may now justly be asked, If the point of view of theology which led to the enunciation of the principles of mechanics was utterly wrong, how comes it that the principles themselves are in all substantial points correct? The answer is easy. In the first place, the theological view did not supply the *contents* of the principles, but simply determined their *guise*; their matter was derived from experience. A similar influence would have been exercised by any other dominant type of thought, by a commercial attitude, for instance, such as presumably had its effect on Stevinus's thinking. In

the second place, the theological conception of nature itself owes its origin to an endeavor to obtain a more comprehensive view of the world ;—the very same endeavor that is at the bottom of physical science. Hence, even admitting that the physical philosophy of theology is a fruitless achievement, a reversion to a lower state of scientific culture, we still need not repudiate the *sound root* from which it has sprung and which is not different from that of true physical inquiry.

In fact, science can accomplish nothing by the consideration of *individual* facts ; from time to time it must cast its glance at the world *as a whole*. Galileo's laws of falling bodies, Huygens's principle of *vis viva*, the principle of virtual velocities, nay, even the concept of mass, could not, as we saw, be obtained, except by the alternate consideration of individual facts and of nature as a totality. We may, in our mental reconstruction of mechanical processes, start from the properties of isolated masses (from the elementary or differential laws), and so compose our pictures of the processes ; or, we may hold fast to the properties of the system as a whole (abide by the integral laws). Since, however, the properties of one mass always include relations to other masses, (for instance, in velocity and acceleration a relation of time is involved, that is, a connection with the whole world,) it is manifest that *purely* differential, or elementary, laws do not exist. It would be illogical, accordingly, to exclude as less certain this necessary view of the All, or of the more general properties of nature, from our studies. The more general a new principle is and the wider its scope, the *more perfect tests* will, in view of the possibility of error, be demanded of it.

The conception of a will and intelligence active in

Pagan ideas and practices rife in the modern world. nature is by no means the exclusive property of Christian monotheism. On the contrary, this idea is a quite familiar one to paganism and fetishism. Paganism, however, finds this will and intelligence entirely in individual phenomena, while monotheism seeks it in the All. Moreover, a pure monotheism does not exist. The Jewish monotheism of the Bible is by no means free from belief in demons, sorcerers, and witches ; and the Christian monotheism of mediæval times is even richer in these pagan conceptions. We shall not speak of the brutal amusement in which church and state indulged in the torture and burning of witches, and which was undoubtedly provoked, in the majority of cases, not by avarice but by the prevalence of the ideas mentioned. In his instructive work on *Primitive Culture* Tylor has studied the sorcery, superstitions, and miracle-belief of savage peoples, and compared them with the opinions current in mediæval times concerning witchcraft. The similarity is indeed striking. The burning of witches, which was so frequent in Europe in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, is to-day vigorously conducted in Central Africa. Even now and in civilised countries and among cultivated people traces of these conditions, as Tylor shows, still exist in a multitude of usages, the sense of which, with our altered point of view, has been forever lost.

8. Physical science rid itself only very slowly of these conceptions. The celebrated work of Giambatista della Porta, *Magia naturalis*, which appeared in 1558, though it announces important physical discoveries, is yet filled with stuff about magic practices and demonological arts of all kinds little better than those of a redskin medicine-man. Not till the appearance of Gilbert's work, *De magnete* (in 1600), was any kind of re-

striction placed on this tendency of thought. When we Animistic notions in science.
reflect that even Luther is said to have had personal
encounters with the Devil, that Kepler, whose aunt had
been burned as a witch and whose mother came near
meeting the same fate, said that witchcraft could not
be denied, and dreaded to express his real opinion of
astrology, we can vividly picture to ourselves the
thought of less enlightened minds of those ages.

Modern physical science also shows traces of fetish-
ism, as Tylor well remarks, in its "forces." And the
hobgoblin practices of modern spiritualism are ample
evidence that the conceptions of paganism have not
been overcome even by the cultured society of to-day.

It is natural that these ideas so obstinately assert
themselves. Of the many impulses that rule man
with demoniacal power, that nourish, preserve, and
propagate him, without his knowledge or supervision,
of these impulses of which the middle ages present
such great pathological excesses, only the smallest
part is accessible to scientific analysis and conceptual
knowledge. The fundamental character of all these
instincts is the feeling of our oneness and sameness
with nature ; a feeling that at times can be silenced
but never eradicated by absorbing intellectual occupa-
tions, and which certainly has a *sound basis*, no matter
to what religious absurdities it may have given rise.

9. The French encyclopædists of the eighteenth
century imagined they were not far from a final ex-
planation of the world by physical and mechanical prin-
ciples ; Laplace even conceived a mind competent to
foretell the progress of nature for all eternity, if but the
masses, their positions, and initial velocities were given.
In the eighteenth century, this joyful overestimation of
the scope of the new physico-mechanical ideas is par-

donable. Indeed, it is a refreshing, noble, and ele-
vating spectacle ; and we can deeply sympathise with
this expression of intellectual joy, so unique in history.
But now, after a century has elapsed, after our judg-
ment has grown more sober, the world-conception of the
encyclopædists appears to us as a *mechanical mythology*
in contrast to the *animistic* of the old religions. Both
views contain undue and fantastical exaggerations of
an incomplete perception. Careful physical research
will lead, however, to an analysis of our sensations.
We shall then discover that our hunger is not so essen-
tially different from the tendency of sulphuric acid for
zinc, and our will not so greatly different from the
pressure of a stone, as now appears. We shall again
feel ourselves nearer nature, without its being neces-
sary that we should resolve ourselves into a nebulous
and mystical mass of molecules, or make nature a
haunt of hobgoblins. The direction in which this en-
lightenment is to be looked for, as the result of long
and painstaking research, can of course only be sur-
mised. To *anticipate* the result, or even to attempt to
introduce it into any scientific investigation of to-day,
would be mythology, not science.

Physical science does not pretend to be a *complete*
view of the world ; it simply claims that it is working
toward such a complete view in the future. The high-
est philosophy of the scientific investigator is precisely
this *toleration* of an incomplete conception of the world
and the preference for it rather than an apparently per-
fect, but inadequate conception. Our religious opin-
ions are always our own private affair, as long as we do
not obtrude them upon others and do not apply them
to things which come under the jurisdiction of a differ-
ent tribunal. Physical inquirers themselves entertain

the most diverse opinions on this subject, according to the range of their intellects and their estimation of the consequences.

Physical science makes no investigation at all into things that are absolutely inaccessible to exact investigation, or as yet inaccessible to it. But should provinces ever be thrown open to exact research which are now closed to it, no well-organised man, no one who cherishes honest intentions towards himself and others, will any longer then hesitate to countenance inquiry with a view to exchanging his *opinion* regarding such provinces for positive *knowledge* of them.

When, to-day, we see society waver, see it change its views on the same question according to its mood and the events of the week, like the register of an organ, when we behold the profound mental anguish which is thus produced, we should know that this is the natural and necessary outcome of the incompleteness and transitional character of our philosophy. A competent view of the world can never be got as a gift; we must acquire it by hard work. And only by granting free sway to reason and experience in the provinces in which they alone are determinative, shall we, to the weal of mankind, approach, slowly, gradually, but surely, to that ideal of a *monistic* view of the world which is alone compatible with the economy of a sound mind.

Results of the incompleteness of our view of the world.

III.

ANALYTICAL MECHANICS.

1. The mechanics of Newton are purely *geometrical.* He deduces his theorems from his initial assumptions entirely by means of geometrical constructions. His procedure is frequently so artificial that, as Laplace

The geometrical mechanics of Newton.

remarked, it is unlikely that the propositions were discovered in that way. We notice, moreover, that the expositions of Newton are not as candid as those of Galileo and Huygens. Newton's is the so-called *synthetic* method of the ancient geometers.

Analytic mechanics. When we deduce results from given suppositions, the procedure is called *synthetic*. When we seek the *conditions* of a proposition or of the properties of a figure, the procedure is *analytic*. The practice of the latter method became usual largely in consequence of the application of algebra to geometry. It has become customary, therefore, to call the algebraical method generally, the analytical. The term "analytical mechanics," which is contrasted with the synthetical, or geometrical, mechanics of Newton, is the exact equivalent of the phrase "algebraical mechanics."

Euler and Maclaurin's contributions. 2. The foundations of analytical mechanics were laid by EULER (*Mechanica, sive Motus Scientia Analytice Exposita*, St. Petersburg, 1736). But while Euler's method, in its resolution of curvilinear forces into tangential and normal components, still bears a trace of the old geometrical modes, the procedure of MACLAURIN (*A Complete System of Fluxions*, Edinburgh, 1742) marks a very important advance. This author resolves all forces in three fixed directions, and thus invests the computations of this subject with a high degree of symmetry and perspicuity.

Lagrange's perfection of the science. 3. Analytical mechanics, however, was brought to its highest degree of perfection by LAGRANGE. Lagrange's aim is (*Mécanique analytique*, Paris, 1788) to dispose *once for all* of the reasoning necessary to resolve mechanical problems, by embodying as much as possible of it in a single formula. This he did. Every case that presents itself can now be dealt with by a very

simple, highly symmetrical and perspicuous schema; and whatever reasoning is left is performed by purely mechanical methods. The mechanics of Lagrange is a stupendous contribution to the economy of thought.

In statics, Lagrange starts from the principle of virtual velocities. On a number of material points $m_1, m_2, m_3. \ldots$, definitely connected with one another, are impressed the forces $P_1, P_2, P_3. \ldots$ If these points receive any infinitely small displacements $p_1, p_2, p_3. \ldots$ compatible with the connections of the system, then for equilibrium $\Sigma Pp = 0$; where the well-known exception in which the equality passes into an inequality is left out of account. Statics founded on the principles of virtual velocities.

Now refer the whole system to a set of rectangular coördinates. Let the coördinates of the material points be $x_1, y_1, z_1, x_2, y_2, z_2. \ldots$ Resolve the forces into the components $X_1, Y_1, Z_1, X_2, Y_2, Z_2. \ldots$ parallel to the axes of coördinates, and the displacements into the displacements $\delta x_1, \delta y_1, \delta z_1, \delta x_2, \delta y_2, \delta z_2. \ldots$, also parallel to the axes. In the determination of the work done only the displacements of the point of application in the direction of each force-component need be considered for that component, and the expression of the principle accordingly is

$$\Sigma(X \delta x + Y \delta y + Z \delta z) = 0 \ . \ . \ . \ . \ . \ . \ . \ (1)$$

where the appropriate indices are to be inserted for the points, and the final expressions summed.

The fundamental formula of dynamics is derived from D'Alembert's principle. On the material points $m_1, m_2, m_3. \ldots$, having the coördinates $x_1, y_1, z_1, x_2, y_2, z_2. \ldots$ the force-components $X_1, Y_1, Z_1, X_2, Y_2, Z_2. \ldots$ act. But, owing to the connections of the Dynamics on the principle of D'Alembert.

system's parts, the masses undergo accelerations, which are those of the forces.

$$m_1 \frac{d^2 x_1}{d t^2}, \ \ m_1 \frac{d^2 y_1}{d t^2}, \ \ m_1 \frac{d^2 z_1}{d t^2} \cdots$$

These are called the *effective forces.* But the *impressed forces*, that is, the forces which exist by virtue of the laws of physics, $X, Y, Z \ldots$ and the negative of these effective forces are, owing to the connections of the system, in equilibrium. Applying, accordingly, the principle of virtual velocities, we get

$$\Sigma \left\{ \left(X - m \frac{d^2 x}{d t^2} \right) \delta x + \left(Y - m \frac{d^2 y}{d t^2} \right) \delta y + \right.$$
$$\left. \left(Z - m \frac{d^2 z}{d t^2} \right) \delta z \right\} = 0 \quad \ldots \ldots \ldots (2)$$

Discussion of Lagrange's method.

4. Thus, Lagrange conforms to tradition in making statics precede dynamics. He was by no means compelled to do so. On the contrary, he might, with equal propriety, have started from the proposition that the connections, neglecting their straining, perform no work, or that all the possible work of the system is due to the impressed forces. In the latter case he would have begun with equation (2), which expresses this fact, and which, for equilibrium (or non-accelerated motion) reduces itself to (1) as a particular case. This would have made analytical mechanics, as a system, even more logical.

Equation (1), which for the case of equilibrium makes the element of the work corresponding to the assumed displacement $= 0$, gives readily the results discussed in page 69. If

$$X = \frac{dV}{d x}, \ \ Y = \frac{dV}{dy}, \ \ Z = \frac{dV}{d z},$$

that is to say, if X, Y, Z are the partial differential coefficients of one and the same function of the coördinates of position, the whole expression under the sign of summation is the total variation, δV, of V. If the latter is $= 0$, V is in general a maximum or a minimum.

5. We will now illustrate the use of equation (1) by a simple example. If all the points of application of the forces are independent of each other, no problem is presented. Each point is then in equilibrium only when the forces impressed on it, and consequently their components, are $= 0$. All the displacements δx, δy, $\delta z \ldots$ are then wholly arbitrary, and equation (1) can subsist only provided the coefficients of all the displacements δx, δy, $\delta z \ldots$ are equal to zero. Indication of the general steps for the solution of statical problems.

But if equations obtain between the coördinates of the several points, that is to say, if the points are subject to mutual constraints, the equations so obtaining will be of the form $F(x_1, y_1, z_1, x_2, y_2, z_2 \ldots) = 0$, or, more briefly, of the form $F = 0$. Then equations also obtain between the displacements, of the form

$$\frac{dF}{dx_1} \delta x_1 + \frac{dF}{dy_1} \delta y_1 + \frac{dF}{dz_1} \delta z_1 + \frac{dF}{dx_2} \delta x_2 + \ldots = 0,$$

which we shall briefly designate as $DF = 0$. If the system consist of n points, we shall have $3n$ coördinates, and equation (1) will contain $3n$ magnitudes δx, δy, $\delta z \ldots$ If, further, between the coördinates m equations of the form $F = 0$ subsist, then m equations of the form $DF = 0$ will be simultaneously given between the variations δx, δy, $\delta z \ldots$ By these equations m variations can be expressed in terms of the remainder, and so inserted in equation (1). In (1), therefore, there are left $3n - m$ arbitrary displacements, whose coefficients are put $= 0$. There are thus

obtained between the forces and the coördinates $3n - m$ equations, to which the m equations $(F = 0)$ must be added. We have, accordingly, in all, $3n$ equations, which are sufficient to determine the $3n$ coördinates of the position of equilibrium, provided the forces are given and only the *form* of the system's equilibrium is sought.

But if the form of the system is given and the *forces* are sought that maintain equilibrium, the question is indeterminate. We have then, to determine $3n$ force-components, only $3n - m$ equations; the m equations $(F = 0)$ not containing the force-components.

As an example of this manner of treatment we shall select a lever $OM = a$, free to rotate about the origin of coördinates in the plane XY, and having at its end a second, similar lever $MN = b$. At M and N, the coördinates of which we shall call x, y and x_1, y_1, the forces X, Y and X_1, Y_1 are applied. Equation (1), then, has the form
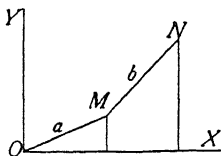
A statical example.

Fig. 232.

$$X\delta x + X_1 \delta x_1 + Y\delta y + Y_1 \delta y_1 = 0 \ \ldots \ (3)$$

Of the form $F = 0$ two equations here exist; namely,

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} x^2 + y^2 - a^2 = 0 \\ (x_1 - x)^2 + (y_1 - y)^2 - b^2 = 0 \end{array} \right\} \ \cdots \cdots \cdots \ (4)$$

The equations $DF = 0$, accordingly, are

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} x\,\delta x + y\,\delta y = 0 \\ (x_1 - x)\,\delta x_1 - (x_1 - x)\,\delta x + (y_1 - y)\,\delta y_1 - \\ \qquad (y_1 - y)\,\delta y = 0 \end{array} \right\} \ . \ (5)$$

Here, two of the variations in (5) can be expressed in terms of the others and introduced in (3). Also for

purposes of elimination Lagrange employed a per-
fectly uniform and systematic procedure, which may
be pursued quite mechanically, without reflection. We
shall use it here. It consists in multiplying each of the
equations (5) by an indeterminate coefficient λ, μ, and
adding each in this form to (3). So doing, we obtain

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} [X+\lambda x-\mu(x_1-x)]\delta x +[X_1+\mu(x_1-x)]\delta x_1 \\ [Y+\lambda y-\mu(y_1-y)]\delta y +[Y_1+\mu(y_1-y)]\delta y_1 \end{array} \right\} = 0.$$

The coefficients of the four displacements may now
be put directly $= 0$. For two displacements are ar-
bitrary, and the two remaining coefficients may be
made equal to zero by the appropriate choice of λ and
μ—which is tantamount to an elimination of the two
remaining displacements.

We have, therefore, the four equations

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} X + \lambda x - \mu(x_1 - x) = 0 \\ X_1 + \mu(x_1 - x) = 0 \\ Y + \lambda y - \mu(y_1 - y) = 0 \\ Y_1 + \mu(y_1 - y) = 0 \end{array} \right\} \quad \cdots \cdots \cdots (6)$$

We shall first assume that the coördinates are given,
and seek the *forces* that maintain equilibrium. The
values of λ and μ are each determined by equating to
zero two coefficients. We get from the second and
fourth equations,

$$\mu = \frac{-X_1}{x_1 - x}, \text{ and } \mu = \frac{-Y_1}{y_1 - y},$$

whence

$$\frac{X_1}{Y_1} = \frac{x_1 - x}{y_1 - y} \quad \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots (7)$$

that is to say, the total component force impressed at
N has the direction MN. From the first and third
equations we get

$$\lambda = \frac{-X + \mu(x_1 - x)}{x}, \quad \lambda = \frac{-Y + \mu(y_1 - y)}{y},$$

and from these by simple reduction

$$\frac{X + X_1}{Y + Y_1} = \frac{x}{y} \quad \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \quad (8)$$

that is to say, the resultant of the forces applied at M and N acts in the direction OM.*

The *four* force-components are accordingly subject to only *two* conditions, (7) and (8). The problem, consequently, is an indeterminate one ; as it must be from the nature of the case ; for equilibrium does not depend upon the absolute magnitudes of the forces, but upon their directions and relations.

If we assume that the forces are given and seek the four *coördinates*, we treat equations (6) in exactly the same manner. Only, we can now make use, in addition, of equations (4). Accordingly, we have, upon the elimination of λ and μ, equations (7) and (8) and two equations (4). From these the following, which fully solve the problem, are readily deduced ·

$$x = \frac{a(X + X_1)}{\sqrt{(X + X_1)^2 + (Y + Y_1)^2}}$$

$$y = \frac{a(Y + Y_1)}{\sqrt{(X + X_1)^2 + (Y + Y_1)^2}}$$

---

*The mechanical interpretation of the indeterminate coefficients λ, μ may be shown as follows. Equations (6) express the equilibrium of two *free* points on which in addition to X, Y, X_1, Y_1 other forces act which answer to the remaining expressions and just destroy X, Y, X_1, Y_1. The point N, for example, is in equilibrium if X_1 is destroyed by a force $\mu(x_1 - x)$, undetermined as yet in magnitude, and Y_1 by a force $\mu(y_1 - y)$. This supplementary force is due to the constraints. Its direction is determined ; though its magnitude is not. If we call the angle which it makes with the axis of abscissas α, we shall have

$$\tan \alpha = \frac{\mu(y_1 - y)}{\mu(x_1 - x)} = \frac{y_1 - y}{x_1 - x}$$

that is to say, the force due to the connections acts in the direction of t.

$$x_1 = \frac{a(X + X_1)}{\sqrt{(X + X_1)^2 + (Y + Y_1)^2}} + \frac{bX_1}{\sqrt{X_1^2 + Y_1^2}}$$

$$y_1 = \frac{a(Y + Y_1)}{\sqrt{(X + X_1)^2 + (Y + Y_1)^2}} + \frac{bY_1}{\sqrt{X_1^2 + Y_1^2}}.$$

Simple as this example is, it is yet sufficient to give us a distinct idea of the character and significance of Lagrange's method. The mechanism of this method is excogitated once for all, and in its application to particular cases scarcely any additional thinking is required. The simplicity of the example here selected being such that it can be solved by a mere glance at the figure, we have, in our study of the method, the advantage of a ready verification at every step.

6. We will now illustrate the application of equation (2), which is Lagrange's form of statement of D'Alembert's principle. There is no problem when the masses move quite independently of one another. Each mass yields to the forces applied to it; the variations δx, δy, δz .... are wholly arbitrary, and each coefficient may be singly put $= 0$. For the motion of n masses we thus obtain $3n$ simultaneous differential equations.

But if equations of condition ($F = 0$) obtain between the coördinates, these equations will lead to others ($DF = 0$) between the displacements or variations. With the latter we proceed exactly as in the application of equation (1). Only it must be noted here that the equations $F = 0$ must eventually be employed in their undifferentiated as well as in their differentiated form, as will best be seen from the following example.
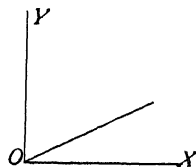
Fig. 233.

A heavy material point m, lying in a vertical plane XY, is free to move on a straight line, $y = ax$, inclined at an angle to the horizon. (Fig. 233.) Here equation (2) becomes

$$\left(X - m\,\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} \right) \delta x + \left(Y - m\,\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} \right) \delta y = 0,$$

and, since $X = 0$, and $Y = -mg$, also

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\,\delta x + \left(g + \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} \right) \delta y = 0 \quad \cdots \cdots \quad (9)$$

The place of $F = 0$ is taken by

$$y = ax \cdot \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots \quad (10)$$

and for $DF = 0$ we have

$$\delta y = a\,\delta x.$$

Equation (9), accordingly, since δy drops out and δx is arbitrary, passes into the form

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \left(g + \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} \right) a = 0.$$

By the differentiation of (10), or ($F = 0$), we have

$$\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = a\,\frac{d^2x}{dt^2},$$

and, consequently,

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + a\left(g + a\,\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} \right) = 0 \quad \cdots \cdots \cdots \quad (11)$$

Then, by the integration of (11), we obtain

$$x = \frac{-a}{1 + a^2}\,g\,\frac{t^2}{2} + bt + c$$

and

$$y = \frac{-a^2}{1 + a^2}\,g\,\frac{t^2}{2} + abt + ac,$$

where b and c are constants of integration, determined by the initial position and velocity of m. This result can also be easily found by the direct method.

Some care is necessary in the application of equa- tion (1) if $F = 0$ contains the time. The procedure in such cases may be illustrated by the following example. Imagine in the preceding case the straight line on which m descends to move vertically upwards with the acceleration γ. We start again from equation (9)

$$\frac{d^2 x}{d t^2} \delta x + \left(g + \frac{d^2 y}{d t^2}\right) \delta y = 0.$$

$F = 0$ is here replaced by

$$y = a x + \gamma \frac{t^2}{2} \quad \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots (12)$$

To form $DF = 0$, we vary (12) only with respect to x and y, for we are concerned here only with the *possible* displacement of the system in its position *at any given instant*, and not with the displacement that *actually* takes place in time. We put, therefore, as in the previous case,

$$\delta y = a \delta x,$$

and obtain, as before,

$$\frac{d^2 x}{d t^2} + \left(g + \frac{d^2 y}{d t^2}\right) a = 0 \quad \ldots \ldots \ldots (13)$$

But to get an equation in x alone, we have, since x and y are connected in (13) by the *actual* motion, to differentiate (12) with respect to t and employ the resulting equation

$$\frac{d^2 y}{d t^2} = a \frac{d^2 x}{d t^2} + \gamma$$

for substitution in (13). In this way the equation

$$\frac{d^2 x}{d t^2} + \left(g + \gamma + a \frac{d^2 x}{d t^2}\right) a = 0$$

is obtained, which, integrated, gives

$$x = \frac{-a}{1+a^2}(g+\gamma)\frac{t^2}{2} + bt + c$$

$$y = \left[\gamma - \frac{a^2}{1+a^2}(g+\gamma)\right]\frac{t^2}{2} + abt + ac.$$

If a *weightless* body m lie on the moving straight line, we obtain these equations

$$x = \frac{-a}{1+a^2}\gamma\frac{t^2}{2} + bt + c$$

$$y = \frac{\gamma}{1+a^2}\frac{t^2}{2} + abt + ac,$$

—results which are readily understood, when we reflect that, on a straight line moving upwards with the acceleration γ, m behaves as if it were affected with a downward acceleration γ on the straight line at rest.

Discussion of the modified example.

7. The procedure with equation (12) in the preceding example may be rendered somewhat clearer by the following consideration. Equation (2), D'Alembert's principle, asserts, that all the work that *can* be done in the displacement of a system is done by the impressed forces and not by the connections. This is evident, since the rigidity of the connections allows no changes in the relative positions which would be necessary for any alteration in the potentials of the elastic

Fig. 234.

forces. But this ceases to be true when the connections undergo changes in *time*. In this case, the *changes* of the connections perform work, and we can then apply equation (2) to the displacements that *actually* take place only provided we add to the impressed forces the forces that produce the changes of the connections.

A heavy mass m is free to move on a straight line parallel to OY (Fig. 234.) Let this line be subject to
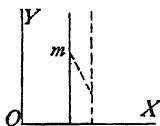
a forced acceleration in the direction of x, such that the equation $F = 0$ becomes

$$x = \gamma \frac{t^2}{2}, \quad \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \quad (14)$$

D'Alembert's principle again gives equation (9). But since from $DF = 0$ it follows here that $\delta x = 0$, this equation reduces itself to

$$\left(g + \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} \right) \delta y = 0 \quad \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \quad (15)$$

in which δy is wholly arbitrary. Wherefore,

$$g + \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} = 0$$

and

$$y = \frac{-g\, t^2}{2} + a\, t + b,$$

to which must be supplied (14) or

$$x = \gamma \frac{t^2}{2}.$$

It is patent that (15) does not assign the total work of the displacement that *actually* takes place, but only that of some *possible* displacement on the straight line conceived, for the moment, as fixed.

If we imagine the straight line massless, and cause it to travel parallel to itself in some guiding mechanism moved by a force $m\gamma$, equation (2) will be replaced by

$$\left(m\gamma - m \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} \right) \delta x + \left(- mg - m \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} \right) \delta y = 0,$$

and since δx, δy are wholly arbitrary here, we obtain the two equations

$$\gamma - \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} = 0$$

$$g + \frac{d^2 y}{d t^2} = 0,$$

which give the same results as before. The apparently different mode of treatment of these cases is simply the result of a slight inconsistency, springing from the fact that *all* the forces involved are, for reasons facilitating calculation, not included in the consideration at the outset, but a portion is left to be dealt with subsequently.

Deduction of the principle of *vis viva* from Lagrange's fundamental dynamical equation. 8. As the different mechanical principles only express different aspects of the same fact, any one of them is easily deducible from any other; as we shall now illustrate by developing the principle of *vis viva* from equation (2) of page 468. Equation (2) refers to instantaneously possible displacements, that is, to "virtual" displacements. But when the connections of a system are independent of the time, the motions *that actually take place* are "virtual" displacements. Consequently the principle may be applied to actual motions. For δx, δy, δz, we may, accordingly, write dx, dy, dz, the displacements which take place in time, and put

$$\Sigma (X dx + Y dy + Z dz) =$$
$$\Sigma m \left(\frac{d^2 x}{d t^2} dx + \frac{d^2 y}{d t^2} dy + \frac{d^2 z}{d t^2} dz \right).$$

The expression to the right may, by introducing for dx, $(dx/dt) \, dt$ and so forth, and by denoting the velocity by v, also be written

$$\Sigma m \left(\frac{d^2 x}{d t^2} \frac{dx}{d t} dt + \frac{d^2 y}{d t^2} \frac{dy}{d t} dt + \frac{d^2 z}{d t^2} \frac{dz}{d t} dt \right) =$$
$$\tfrac{1}{2} d \Sigma m \left[\left(\frac{dx}{d t} \right)^2 + \left(\frac{dy}{d t} \right)^2 + \left(\frac{dz}{d t} \right)^2 \right] = \tfrac{1}{2} d \Sigma m v^2.$$

Also in the expression to the left, $(dx/dt)\, dt$ may be written for dx. But this gives

$$\int \Sigma\, (X dx + Y dy + Z dz) = \Sigma \tfrac{1}{2}\, m\, (v^2 - v_0^2),$$

where v_0 denotes the velocity at the beginning and v the velocity at the end of the motion. The integral to the left can always be found if we can reduce it to a single variable, that is to say, if we know the course of the motion in time or the paths which the movable points describe. If, however, X, Y, Z are the partial differential coefficients of the same function U of coördinates, if, that is to say,

$$X = \frac{dU}{dx}, \quad Y = \frac{dU}{dy}, \quad Z = \frac{dU}{dz},$$

as is always the case when only central forces are involved, this reduction is unnecessary. The entire expression to the left is then a complete differential. And we have

$$\Sigma\, (U - U_0) = \Sigma \tfrac{1}{2}\, m\, (v^2 - v_0^2),$$

which is to say, the difference of the force-functions (or work) at the beginning and the end of the motion is equal to the difference of the *vires vivæ* at the beginning and the end of the motion. The *vires vivæ* are in such case also functions of the coördinates.

In the case of a body movable in the plane of X and Y suppose, for example, $X = -y$, $Y = -x$; we then have

$$\int (-y\, dx - x\, dy) = -\int d\, (xy) =$$
$$x_0 y_0 - xy = \tfrac{1}{2}\, m\, (v^2 - v_0^2).$$

But if $X = -a$, $Y = -x$, the integral to the left is $-\int (a\, dx + x\, dy)$. This integral can be assigned the moment we know the path the body has traversed, that

is, if y is determined a function of x.   If, for example,
$y = p x^2$, the integral would become

$$-\int (a + 2 p x^2)\, dx = a\,(x_0 - x) + \frac{2\,p\,(x_0 - x)^3}{3}.$$

The difference of these two cases is, that in the first
the work is simply a function of coördinates, that a
force-function exists, that the element of the work is a
complete differential, and the work consequently is de-
termined by the initial and final values of the coördi-
nates, while in the second case it is dependent on the
entire path described.

Essential character of analytical mechanics.   9. These simple examples, in themselves present-
ing no difficulties, will doubtless suffice to illustrate the
general nature of the operations of analytical mechan-
ics.   No fundamental light can be expected from this
branch of mechanics.   On the contrary, the discovery
of matters of principle must be substantially completed
before we can think of framing analytical mechanics ;
the sole aim of which is a perfect practical *mastery* of
problems.   Whosoever mistakes this situation, will
never comprehend Lagrange's great performance, which
here too is essentially of an *economical* character.   Poin-
sot did not altogether escape this error.

It remains to be mentioned that as the result of the
labors of Möbius, Hamilton, Grassmann, and others, a
new transformation of mechanics is preparing.   These
inquirers have developed mathematical conceptions
that conform more exactly and directly to our geomet-
rical ideas than do the conceptions of common analyt-
ical geometry ; and the advantages of analytical gene-
rality and direct geometrical insight are thus united.
But this transformation, of course, lies, as yet, beyond
the limits of an historical exposition.

IV.

THE ECONOMY OF SCIENCE.

1. It is the object of science to replace, or *save*, experiences, by the reproduction and anticipation of facts in thought. Memory is handier than experience, and often answers the same purpose. This economical office of science, which fills its whole life, is apparent at first glance ; and with its full recognition all mysticism in science disappears. The basis of science. economy of thought.

Science is communicated by instruction, in order that one man may profit by the experience of another and be spared the trouble of accumulating it for himself ; and thus, to spare posterity, the experiences of whole generations are stored up in libraries.

Language, the instrument of this communication, is itself an economical contrivance. Experiences are analysed, or broken up, into simpler and more familiar experiences, and then symbolised at some sacrifice of precision. The symbols of speech are as yet restricted in their use within national boundaries, and doubtless will long remain so. But written language is gradually being metamorphosed into an ideal universal character. It is certainly no longer a mere transcript of speech. Numerals, algebraic signs, chemical symbols, musical notes, phonetic alphabets, may be regarded as parts already formed of this universal character of the future ; they are, to some extent, decidedly conceptual, and of almost general international use. The analysis of colors, physical and physiological, is already far enough advanced to render an international system of color-signs perfectly practical. In Chinese writing, The economical character of language.

Possibility of a universal language.

we have an actual example of a true ideographic lan guage, pronounced diversely in different provinces, yet everywhere carrying the same meaning. Were the system and its signs only of a simpler character, the use of Chinese writing might become universal. The dropping of unmeaning and needless accidents of gram- mar, as English mostly drops them, would be quite requisite to the adoption of such a system. But uni- versality would not be the sole merit of such a char- acter; since to read it would be to understand it. Our children often read what they do not understand; but that which a Chinaman cannot understand, he is pre- cluded from reading.

Economical charac- ter of all our repre- sentations of the worl.

2. In the reproduction of facts in thought, we never reproduce the facts in full, but only that side of them which is important to us, moved to this directly or indirectly by a practical interest. Our reproductions are invariably abstractions. Here again is an econom- ical tendency.

Nature is composed of sensations as its elements. Primitive man, however, first picks out certain com- pounds of these elements—those namely that are re- latively permanent and of greater importance to him. The first and oldest words are names of "things." Even here, there is an abstractive process, an abstrac- tion from the surroundings of the things, and from the continual small changes which these compound sensa- tions undergo, which being practically unimportant are not noticed. No inalterable thing exists. The thing is an abstraction, the name a symbol, for a compound of elements from whose changes we abstract. The reason we assign a single word to a whole compound is that we need to suggest all the constituent sensations at once. When, later, we come to remark the change-

ableness, we cannot at the same time hold fast to the idea of the thing's permanence, unless we have recourse to the conception of a thing-in-itself, or other such like absurdity. Sensations are not signs of things; but, on the contrary, a thing is a thought-symbol for a compound sensation of relative fixedness. Properly speaking the world is not composed of "things" as its elements, but of colors, tones, pressures, spaces, times, in short what we ordinarily call individual sensations.

The whole operation is a mere affair of economy. In the reproduction of facts, we begin with the more durable and familiar compounds, and supplement these later with the unusual by way of corrections. Thus, we speak of a perforated cylinder, of a cube with beveled edges, expressions involving contradictions, unless we accept the view here taken. All judgments are such amplifications and corrections of ideas already admitted.

3. In speaking of cause and effect we arbitrarily The ideas give relief to those elements to whose connection we cause and effect. have to attend in the reproduction of a fact in the respect in which it is important to us. There is no cause nor effect in nature; nature has but an individual existence; nature simply *is*. Recurrences of like cases in which A is always connected with B, that is, like results under like circumstances, that is again, the essence of the connection of cause and effect, exist but in the abstraction which we perform for the purpose of mentally reproducing the facts. Let a fact become familiar, and we no longer require this putting into relief of its connecting marks, our attention is no longer attracted to the new and surprising, and we cease to speak of cause and effect. Heat is said to be the cause of the tension of steam; but when the phenomenon becomes familiar .

we think of the steam at once with the tension proper to its temperature. Acid is said to be the cause of the reddening of tincture of litmus; but later we think of the reddening as a property of the acid.

Hume first propounded the question, How can a thing *A* act on another thing *B*? Hume, in fact, rejects causality and recognises only a wonted succession in time. Kant correctly remarked that a *necessary* connection between *A* and *B* could not be disclosed by simple observation. He assumes an innate idea or category of the mind, a *Verstandesbegriff*, under which the cases of experience are subsumed. Schopenhauer, who adopts substantially the same position, distinguishes four forms of the "principle of sufficient reason"—the logical, physical, and mathematical form, and the law of motivation. But these forms differ only as regards the matter to which they are applied, which may belong either to outward or inward experience.

The natural and common-sense explanation is apparently this. The ideas of cause and effect originally sprang from an endeavor to reproduce facts in thought. At first, the connection of *A* and *B*, of *C* and *D*, of *E* and *F*, and so forth, is regarded as familiar. But after a greater range of experience is acquired and a connection between *M* and *N* is observed, it often turns out that we recognise *M* as *made up of A, C, E*, and *N* of *B, D, F*, the connection of which was before a *familiar* fact and accordingly possesses with us a higher authority. This explains why a person of experience regards a new event with different eyes than the novice. The new experience is illuminated by the mass of old experience. As a fact, then, there really does exist in the mind an "idea" under which fresh experiences are subsumed; but that idea has itself been de-

veloped from experience. The notion of the *necessity* of the causal connection is probably created by our voluntary movements in the world and by the changes which these indirectly produce, as Hume supposed but Schopenhauer contested. Much of the authority of the ideas of cause and effect is due to the fact that they are developed *instinctively* and involuntarily, and that we are distinctly sensible of having personally contributed nothing to their formation. We may, indeed, say, that our sense of causality is not acquired by the individual, but has been perfected in the development of the race. Cause and effect, therefore, are things of thought, having an economical office. It cannot be said *why* they arise. For it is precisely by the abstraction of uniformities that we know the question "why." (See Appendix, XXVI, p. 579.)

4. In the details of science, its economical character is still more apparent. The so-called descriptive sciences must chiefly remain content with reconstructing individual facts. Where it is possible, the common features of many facts are once for all placed in relief. But in sciences that are more highly developed, rules for the reconstruction of great numbers of facts may be embodied in a *single* expression. Thus, instead of noting individual cases of light-refraction, we can mentally reconstruct all present and future cases, if we know that the incident ray, the refracted ray, and the perpendicular lie in the same plane and that $\sin \alpha / \sin \beta = n$. Here, instead of the numberless cases of refraction in different combinations of matter and under all different angles of incidence, we have simply to note the rule above stated and the values of n,—which is much easier. The economical purpose is here unmistakable. In nature there is no *law* of refraction, only different cases of re-

fraction. The law of refraction is a concise compen-dious rule, devised by us for the mental reconstruction of a fact, and only for its reconstruction in part, that is, on its geometrical side.

5. The sciences most highly developed economically are those whose facts are reducible to a few numerable elements of like nature. Such is the science of mechan-ics, in which we deal exclusively with spaces, times, and masses. The whole previously established eccn-omy of mathematics stands these sciences in stead. Mathematics may be defined as the economy of count-ing. Numbers are arrangement-signs which, for the sake of perspicuity and economy, are themselves ar-ranged in a simple system. Numerical operations, it is found, are independent of the kind of objects operated on, and are consequently mastered once for all. When, for the first time, I have occasion to add five objects to seven others, I count the whole collection through, at once ; but when I afterwards discover that I can start counting from 5, I save myself part of the trouble ; and still later, remembering that 5 and 7 always count up to 12, I dispense with the numeration entirely.

The object of all arithmetical operations is to *save* direct numeration, by utilising the results of our old operations of counting. Our endeavor is, having done a sum once, to preserve the answer for future use. The first four rules of arithmetic well illustrate this view. Such, too, is the purpose of algebra, which, substitut-ing ·relations for values, symbolises and definitively fixes all numerical operations that follow the same rule. For example, we learn from the equation

$$\frac{x^2 - y^2}{x + y} = x - y,$$

that the more complicated numerical operation at the left may always be replaced by the simpler one at the right, whatever numbers x and y stand for. We thus save ourselves the labor of performing in future cases the more complicated operation. Mathematics is the method of replacing in the most comprehensive and *economical* manner possible, *new* numerical operations by old ones done already with known results. It may happen in this procedure that the results of operations are employed which were originally performed centuries ago.

Often operations involving intense mental effort may be replaced by the action of semi-mechanical routine, with great saving of time and avoidance of fatigue. For example, the theory of determinants owes its origin to the remark, that it is not necessary to solve each time anew equations of the form

$$a_1 x + b_1 y + c_1 = 0$$
$$a_2 x + b_2 y + c_2 = 0,$$

from which result

$$x = - \frac{c_1 b_2 - c_2 b_1}{a_1 b_2 - a_2 b_1} = - \frac{P}{N}$$
$$y = - \frac{a_1 c_2 - a_2 c_1}{a_1 b_2 - a_2 b_1} = - \frac{Q}{N},$$

but that the solution may be effected by means of the coefficients, by writing down the coefficients according to a prescribed scheme and operating with them *mechanically*. Thus,

$$\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 \end{vmatrix} = a_1 b_2 - a_2 b_1 = N$$

and similarly

$$\begin{vmatrix} c_1 & b_1 \\ c_2 & b_2 \end{vmatrix} = P, \text{ and } \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & c_2 \end{vmatrix} = Q.$$

The theory of determinants.

Calculating
machines.

Even a *total* disburdening of the mind can be effected in mathematical operations. This happens where operations of counting hitherto performed are symbolised by mechanical operations with signs, and our brain energy, instead of being wasted on the repetition of old operations, is spared for more important tasks. The merchant pursues a like economy, when, instead of directly handling his bales of goods, he operates with bills of lading or assignments of them. The drudgery of computation may even be relegated to a machine. Several different types of calculating machines are actually in practical use. The earliest of these (of any complexity) was the difference-engine of Babbage, who was familiar with the ideas here presented.

Other abbreviated methods of attaining results.

A numerical result is not always reached by the *actual* solution of the problem ; it may also be reached indirectly. It is easy to ascertain, for example, that a curve whose quadrature for the abscissa x has the value x^m, gives an increment $m x^{m-1} dx$ of the quadrature for the increment dx of the abscissa. But we then also know that $\int m x^{m-1} dx = x^m$; that is, we recognise the quantity x^m from the increment $m x^{m-1} dx$ as unmistakably as we recognise a fruit by its rind. Results of this kind, accidentally found by simple inversion, or by processes more or less analogous, are very extensively employed in mathematics.

That scientific work should be more useful the more it has been used, while mechanical work is expended in use, may seem strange to us. When a person who daily takes the same walk accidentally finds a shorter cut, and thereafter, remembering that it is shorter, always goes that way, he undoubtedly saves himself the difference of the work. But memory is really not work.

It only places at our disposal energy within our present or future possession, which the circumstance of ignorance prevented us from availing ourselves of. This is precisely the case with the application of scientific ideas.

The mathematician who pursues his studies without clear views of this matter, must often have the uncomfortable feeling that his paper and pencil surpass him in intelligence. Mathematics, thus pursued as an object of instruction, is scarcely of more educational value than busying oneself with the Cabala. On the contrary, it induces a tendency toward mystery, which is pretty sure to bear its fruits. *Necessity of clear views on this subject.*

6. The science of physics also furnishes examples of this economy of thought, altogether similar to those we have just examined. A brief reference here will suffice. The moment of inertia saves us the separate consideration of the individual particles of masses. By the force-function we dispense with the separate investigation of individual force-components. The simplicity of reasonings involving force-functions springs from the fact that a great amount of mental work had to be performed before the discovery of the properties of the force-functions was possible. Gauss's dioptrics dispenses us from the separate consideration of the single refracting surfaces of a dioptrical system and substitutes for it the principal and nodal points. But a careful consideration of the single surfaces had to precede the discovery of the principal and nodal points. Gauss's dioptrics simply *saves* us the necessity of often repeating this consideration. *Examples of the economy of thought in physics.*

We must admit, therefore, that there is no result of science which in point of principle could not have been arrived at wholly without methods. But, as a matter

of fact, within the short span of a human life and with man's limited powers of memory, any stock of knowledge worthy of the name is unattainable except by the *greatest* mental economy. Science itself, therefore, may be regarded as a minimal problem, consisting of the completest possible presentment of facts with the *least possible expenditure of thought.*

7. The function of science, as we take it, is to replace experience. Thus, on the one hand, science must remain in the province of experience, but, on the other, must hasten beyond it, constantly expecting confirmation, constantly expecting the reverse. Where neither confirmation nor refutation is possible, science is not concerned. Science acts and only acts in the domain of *uncompleted* experience. Exemplars of such branches of science are the theories of elasticity and of the conduction of heat, both of which ascribe to the smallest particles of matter only such properties as observation supplies in the study of the larger portions. The comparison of theory and experience may be farther and farther extended, as our means of observation increase in refinement.

Experience alone, without the ideas that are associated with it, would forever remain strange to us. Those ideas that hold good throughout the widest domains of research and that supplement the greatest amount of experience, are the *most scientific.* The principle of continuity, the use of which everywhere pervades modern inquiry, simply prescribes a mode of conception which conduces in the highest degree to the economy of thought.

8. If a long elastic rod be fastened in a vise, the rod may be made to execute slow vibrations. These are directly observable, can be seen, touched, and

graphically recorded. If the rod be shortened, the Example illustrative vibrations will increase in rapidity and cannot be di- of the method of rectly seen; the rod will present to the sight a blurred science. image. This is a new phenomenon. But the sensation of touch is still like that of the previous case; we can still make the rod record its movements; and if we mentally retain the *conception* of vibrations, we can still anticipate the results of experiments. On further shortening the rod the sensation of touch is altered; the rod begins to sound; again a new phenomenon is presented. But the phenomena do not all change at once; only this or that phenomenon changes; consequently the accompanying notion of vibration, which is not confined to any single one, is still serviceable, still economical. Even when the sound has reached so high a pitch and the vibrations have become so small that the previous means of observation are not of avail, we still *advantageously* imagine the sounding rod to perform vibrations, and can predict the vibrations of the dark lines in the spectrum of the polarised light of a rod of glass. If on the rod being further shortened *all* the phenomena suddenly passed into *new* phenomena, the conception of vibration would no longer be serviceable because it would no longer afford us a means of supplementing the new experiences by the previcus ones.

When we mentally add to those actions of a human being which we can perceive, sensations and ideas like our own which we cannot perceive, the object of the idea we so form is economical. The idea makes experience intelligible to us; it supplements and supplants experience. This idea is not regarded as a great scientific discovery, only because its formation is so natural that every child conceives it. Now, this is

exactly what we do when we imagine a moving body which has just disappeared behind a pillar, or a comet at the moment invisible, as continuing its motion and retaining its previously observed properties. We do this that we may not be surprised by its reappearance. We fill out the gaps in experience by the ideas that experience suggests.

9. Yet not all the prevalent scientific theories originated so naturally and artlessly. Thus, chemical, electrical, and optical phenomena are explained by atoms. But the mental artifice atom was not formed by the principle of continuity; on the contrary, it is a product especially devised for the purpose in view. Atoms cannot be perceived by the senses; like all substances, they are things of thought. Furthermore, the atoms are invested with properties that absolutely contradict the attributes hitherto observed in bodies. However well fitted atomic theories may be to reproduce certain groups of facts, the physical inquirer who has laid to heart Newton's rules will only admit those theories as *provisional* helps, and will strive to attain, in some more natural way, a satisfactory substitute.

The atomic theory plays a part in physics similar to that of certain auxiliary concepts in mathematics; it is a mathematical *model* for facilitating the mental reproduction of facts. Although we represent vibrations by the harmonic formula, the phenomena of cooling by exponentials, falls by squares of times, etc., no one will fancy that vibrations *in themselves* have anything to do with the circular functions, or the motion of falling bodies with squares. It has simply been observed that the relations between the quantities investigated were similar to certain relations obtaining between familiar mathematical functions, and these *more*

familiar ideas are employed as an easy means of supplementing experience. Natural phenomena whose relations are not similar to those of functions with which we are familiar, are at present very difficult to reconstruct. But the progress of mathematics may facilitate the matter.

As mathematical helps of this kind, spaces of more than three dimensions may be used, as I have elsewhere shown. But it is not necessary to regard these, on this account, as anything more than mental artifices.* Multi-dimensioned spaces

* As the outcome of the labors of Lobatchévski, Bolyai, Gauss, and Riemann, the view has gradually obtained currency in the mathematical world, that that which we call *space* is a *particular*, *actual* case of a more *general*, conceivable case of multiple quantitative manifoldness. The space of sight and touch is a threefold manifoldness; it possesses three dimensions; and every point in it can be defined by three distinct and independent data. But it is possible to conceive of a quadruple or even multiple space-like manifoldness. And the character of the manifoldness may also be differently *conceived* from the manifoldness of actual space. We regard this discovery, which is chiefly due to the labors of Riemann, as a very important one. The properties of actual space are here directly exhibited as objects of *experience*, and the pseudo-theories of geometry that seek to excogitate these properties by metaphysical arguments are overthrown.

A thinking being is supposed to live in the surface of a sphere, with no other kind of space to institute comparisons with. His space will appear to him similarly constituted throughout. He might regard it as infinite, and could only be convinced of the contrary by experience. Starting from any two points of a great circle of the sphere and proceeding at right angles thereto on other great circles, he could hardly expect that the circles last mentioned would intersect. So, also, with respect to the space in which we live, only experience can decide whether it is finite, whether parallel lines intersect in it, or the like. The significance of this elucidation can scarcely be overrated. An enlightenment similar to that which Riemann inaugurated in science was produced in the mind of humanity at large, as regards the surface of the earth, by the discoveries of the first circumnavigators.

The theoretical investigation of the mathematical possibilities above referred to, has, primarily, nothing to do with the question whether things really exist which correspond to these possibilities; and we must not hold mathematicians responsible for the popular absurdities which their investigations have given rise to. The space of sight and touch is *three*-dimensional; that, no one ever yet doubted. If, now, it should be found that bodies vanish from this space, or new bodies get into it, the question might scientifically be discussed whether it would facilitate and promote our insight into things to conceive experiential space as part of a four-dimensional or multi-dimensional

This is the case, too, with *all* hypothesis formed for the explanation of new phenomena. Our conceptions of electricity fit in at once with the electrical phenomena, and take almost spontaneously the familiar course, the moment we note that things take place as if attracting and repelling fluids moved on the surface of the conductors. But these mental expedients have nothing whatever to do with the phenomenon *itself.* (See Appendix, XXVII, p. 579.)

space. Yet in such a case, this fourth dimension would, none the less, remain a pure thing of thought a mental fiction.

But this is not the way matters stand. The phenomena mentioned were not forthcoming until *after* the new views were published, and were then exhibited in the presence of certain persons at spiritualistic *séances.* The fourth dimension was a very opportune discovery for the spiritualists and for theologians who were in a quandary about the location of hell. The use the spiritualist makes of the fourth dimension is this. 'It is possible to move out of a finite straight line, without passing the extremities, through the second dimension; out of a finite closed surface through the third; and, analogously, out of a finite closed space, without passing through the enclosing boundaries, through the fourth dimension. Even the tricks that prestidigitateurs, in the old days, harmlessly executed in three dimensions, are now invested with a new halo by the fourth. But the tricks of the spiritualists, the tying or untying of knots in endless strings, the removing of bodies from closed spaces, are all performed in cases where there is absolutely nothing at stake. All is purposeless jugglery. We have not yet found an *accoucheur* who has accomplished parturition through the fourth dimension. If we should, the question would at once become a serious one. Professor Simony's beautiful tricks in ropetying, which, as the performance of a prestidigitateur, are very admirable, speak against, not for, the spiritualists.

Everyone is free to set up an opinion and to adduce proofs in support of it. Whether, though, a scientist shall find it worth his while to enter into serious investigations of opinions so advanced, is a question which his reason and instinct alone can decide. If these things, in the end, should turn out to be true, I shall not be ashamed of being the last to believe them. What I have seen of them was not calculated to make me less sceptical.

I myself regarded multi-dimensioned space as a mathematico-physical help even prior to the appearance of Riemann's memoir. But I trust that no one will employ what I have thought, said, and written on this subject as a basis for the fabrication of ghost stories. (Compare Mach, *Die Geschichte und die Wurzel des Satzes von der Erhaltung der Arbeit.*)

CHAPTER V.

THE RELATIONS OF MECHANICS TO OTHER DE-PARTMENTS OF KNOWLEDGE.

I.

THE RELATIONS OF MECHANICS TO PHYSICS.

1. Purely mechanical phenomena do not exist. The production of mutual accelerations in masses is, to all appearances, a purely dynamical phenomenon. But with these dynamical results are always associated thermal, magnetic, electrical, and chemical phenomena, and the former are always modified in proportion as the latter are asserted. On the other hand, thermal, magnetic, electrical, and chemical conditions also can produce motions. Purely mechanical phenomena, accordingly, are abstractions, made, either intentionally or from necessity, for facilitating our comprehension of things. The same thing is true of the other classes of physical phenomena. Every event belongs, in a strict sense, to all the departments of physics, the latter being separated only by an artificial classification, which is partly conventional, partly physiological, and partly historical. The events of nature do not exclusively belong to any science.

2. The view that makes mechanics the basis of the remaining branches of physics, and explains all physical phenomena by mechanical ideas, is in our judgment a prejudice. Knowledge which is historically first, is not necessarily the foundation of all that is subsequently

The me-
chanical
aspects of
nature not
necessarily
its funda-
mental
aspects.

gained. As more and more facts are discovered and classified, entirely new ideas of general scope can be formed. We have no means of knowing, as yet, which of the physical phenomena go *deepest*, whether the mechanical phenomena are perhaps not the most superficial of all, or whether all do not go *equally deep*. Even in mechanics we no longer regard the oldest law, the law of the lever, as the foundation of all the other principles.

Artificiality
of the me-
chanical
conception
of the
world.

The mechanical theory of nature, is, undoubtedly, in an historical view, both intelligible and pardonable; and it may also, for a time, have been of much value. But, upon the whole, it is an artificial conception. Faithful adherence to the method that led the greatest investigators of nature, Galileo, Newton, Sadi Carnot, Faraday, and J. R. Mayer, to their great results, restricts physics to the expression of *actual facts*, and forbids the construction of hypotheses behind the facts, where nothing tangible and verifiable is found. If this is done, only the simple connection of the motions of masses, of changes of temperature, of changes in the values of the potential function, of chemical changes, and so forth is to be ascertained, and nothing is to be imagined along with these elements except the physical attributes or characteristics directly or indirectly given by observation.

This idea was elsewhere * developed by the author with respect to the phenomena of heat, and indicated, in the same place, with respect to electricity. All hypotheses of fluids or media are eliminated from the theory of electricity as entirely superfluous, when we reflect that electrical conditions are all given by the

* Mach, *Die Geschichte und die Wurzel des Satzes von der Erhaltung der Arbeit.*

values of the potential function V and the dielectric Science should be constants. If we assume the differences of the values based on of V to be measured (on the electrometer) by the forces, on hypoth- and regard V and not the quantity of electricity Q as eses. the primary notion, or measurable physical attribute, we shall have, for any simple insulator, for our quantity of electricity

$$Q = \frac{-1}{4\pi} \int \left(\frac{d^2 V}{dx^2} + \frac{d^2 V}{dy^2} + \frac{d^2 V}{dz^2} \right) dv,$$

(where x, y, z denote the coördinates and dv the element of volume,) and for our potential *

$$W = \frac{-1}{8\pi} \int V \left(\frac{d^2 V}{dx^2} + \frac{d^2 V}{dy^2} + \frac{d^2 V}{dz^2} \right) dv.$$

Here Q and W appear as derived notions, in which no conception of fluid or medium is contained. If we work over in a similar manner the entire domain of physics, we shall restrict ourselves wholly to the quantitative conceptual expression of actual facts. All superfluous and futile notions are eliminated, and the imaginary problems to which they have given rise forestalled. (See Appendix XXVIII, p. 583.)

The removal of notions whose foundations are historical, conventional, or accidental, can best be furthered by a comparison of the conceptions obtaining in the different departments, and by finding for the conceptions of every department the corresponding conceptions of others. We discover, thus, that temperatures and potential functions correspond to the velocities of mass-motions. A single velocity-value, a single temperature-value, or a single value of potential function, never changes *alone.* But whilst in the case of velocities and potential functions, so far as we yet

---

* Using the terminology of Clausius.

know, only differences come into consideration, the
significance of temperature is not only contained in its
difference with respect to other temperatures. Thermal
capacities correspond to masses, the potential of an
electric charge to quantity of heat, quantity of elec-
tricity to entropy, and so on. The pursuit of such re-
semblances and differences lays the foundation of a
comparative physics, which shall ultimately render pos-
sible the concise expression of extensive groups of facts,
without *arbitrary* additions. We shall then possess a
homogeneous physics, unmingled with artificial atomic
theories.

It will also be perceived, that a real *economy* of
scientific thought cannot be attained by mechanical
hypotheses. Even if an hypothesis were fully com-
petent to reproduce a given department of natural phe-
nomena, say, the phenomena of heat, we should, by
accepting it, only substitute for the actual relations be-
tween the mechanical and thermal processes, the hy-
pothesis. The real fundamental facts are replaced by
an equally large number of hypotheses, which is cer-
tainly no gain. Once an hypothesis has facilitated,
as best it can, our view of new facts, by the substitu-
tion of more familiar ideas, its powers are exhausted.
We err when we expect more enlightenment from an
hypothesis than from the facts themselves.

3. The development of the mechanical view was
favored by many circumstances. In the first place, a
connection of all natural events with mechanical pro-
cesses is unmistakable, and it is natural, therefore, that
we should be led to explain less known phenomena by
better known mechanical events. Then again, it was
first in the department of mechanics that laws of gen-
eral and extensive scope were discovered. A law of

this kind is the principle of *vis viva* $\Sigma(U_1 - U_0) = \Sigma\frac{1}{2}m(v_1^2 - v_0^2)$, which states that the increase of the *vis viva* of a system in its passage from one position to another is equal to the increment of the force-function, or work, which is expressed as a function of the final and initial positions. If we fix our attention on the work a system can perform and call it with Helmholtz the *Spannkraft, S,** then the work *actually performed,* U, will appear as a diminution of the *Spannkraft, K*, initially present; accordingly, $S = K - U$, and the principle of *vis viva* takes the form

$$\Sigma S + \frac{1}{2}\Sigma m\,v^2 = const,$$

that is to say, every diminution of the *Spannkraft,* is compensated for by an increase of the *vis viva.* In this form the principle is also called the law of the *Conservation of Energy,* in that the sum of the *Spannkraft* (the potential energy) and the *vis viva* (the kinetic energy) remains constant in the system. But since, in nature, it is possible that *not only vis viva* should appear as the consequence of work performed, but also quantities of heat, or the potential of an electric charge, and so forth, scientists saw in this law the expression of a *mechanical* action as the basis of all natural actions. However, nothing is contained in the expression but the fact of an invariable quantitative *connection* between mechanical and other kinds of phenomena.

4. It would be a mistake to suppose that a wide and extensive view of things was first introduced into physical science by mechanics. On the contrary, this

---

* Helmholtz used this term in 1847; but it is not found in his subsequent papers; and in 1882 (*Wissenschaftliche Abhandlungen*, II, 965) he expressly discards it in favor of the English "potential energy." He even (p. 968) prefers Clausius's word *Ergal* to *Spannkraft*, which is quite out of agreement with modern terminology.—*Trans.*

Compre-
hensive-
ness of
view the
condition,
not the re-
sult. of me-
chanics.
insight was possessed at all times by the foremost inquirers and even entered into the construction of mechanics itself, and was, accordingly, not first created by the latter. Galileo and Huygens constantly alternated the consideration of particular details with the consideration of universal aspects, and reached their results only by a persistent effort after a simple and consistent view. The fact that the velocities of individual bodies and systems are dependent on the spaces descended through, was perceived by Galileo and Huygens only by a very detailed investigation of the motion of descent in particular cases, combined with the consideration of the circumstance that bodies generally, of their own accord, only sink. Huygens especially speaks, on the occasion of this inquiry, of the impossibility of a mechanical perpetual motion ; he possessed, therefore, the modern point of view. He felt the *incompatibility* of the idea of a perpetual motion with the notions of the natural mechanical processes with which he was familiar.

Exemplifi-
cation of
this in Ste-
vinus's re-
searches.
.
Take the fictions of Stevinus—say, that of the endless chain on the prism. Here, too, a deep, broad insight is displayed. We have here a mind, disciplined by a multitude of experiences, brought to bear on an individual case. The moving endless chain is to Stevinus a motion of descent that is not a descent, a motion without a purpose, an intentional act that does not answer to the intention, an endeavor for a change which does not produce the change. If motion, generally, is the result of descent, then in the particular case descent is the result of motion. It is a sense of the mutual interdependence of v and h in the equation $v = \sqrt{2gh}$ that is here displayed, though of course in not so definite a form. A contradiction exists in this

fiction for Stevinus's exquisite investigative sense that would escape less profound thinkers.

This same breadth of view, which alternates the individual with the universal, is also displayed, only in this instance not restricted to mechanics, in the performances of Sadi Carnot. When Carnot finds that the quantity of heat Q which, for a given amount of work L, has flowed from a higher temperature t to a lower temperature t', can only depend on the temperatures and not on the material constitution of the bodies, he reasons in exact conformity with the method of Galileo. Similarly does J. R. Mayer proceed in the enunciation of the principle of the equivalence of heat and work. In this achievement the mechanical view was quite remote from Mayer's mind ; nor had he need of it. They who require the crutch of the mechanical philosophy to understand the doctrine of the equivalence of heat and work, have only half comprehended the progress which it signalises. Yet, high as we may place Mayer's original achievement, it is not on that account necessary to depreciate the merits of the professional physicists Joule, Helmholtz, Clausius, and Thomson, who have done very much, perhaps all, towards the detailed *establishment* and *perfection* of the new view. The assumption of a plagiarism of Mayer's ideas is in our opinion gratuitous. They who advance it, are under the obligation to *prove* it. The repeated appearance of the same idea is not new in history. We shall not take up here the discussion of purely personal questions, which thirty years from now will no longer interest students. But it is unfair, from a pretense of justice, to insult men, who if they had accomplished but a third of their actual services, would have lived highly honored and unmolested lives.

Also, in the researches of Carnot and J. R. Mayer.

The inter-
depend-
ence of the
facts of na-
ture.   5. We shall now attempt to show that the broad view expressed in the principle of the conservation of energy, is not peculiar to mechanics, but is a condition of logical and sound scientific thought generally. The business of physical science is the reconstruction of facts in thought, or the abstract quantitative expression of facts. The rules which we form for these reconstructions are the laws of nature. In the conviction that such rules are possible lies the law of causality. The law of causality simply asserts that the phenomena of nature are *dependent* on one another. The special emphasis put on space and time in the expression of the law of causality is unnecessary, since the relations of space and time themselves implicitly express that phenomena are dependent on one another.

The laws of nature are equations between the measurable elements $\alpha \beta \gamma \delta \ldots \omega$ of phenomena. As nature is variable, the number of these equations is always less than the number of the elements.

If we know *all* the values of $\alpha \beta \gamma \delta \ldots$, by which, for example, the values of $\lambda \mu \nu \ldots$ are given, we may call the group $\alpha \beta \gamma \delta \ldots$ the cause and the group $\lambda \mu \nu \ldots$ the effect. In this sense we may say that the effect is *uniquely* determined by the cause. The principle of sufficient reason, in the form, for instance, in which Archimedes employed it in the development of the laws of the lever, consequently asserts nothing more than that the effect cannot by any given set of circumstances be at once determined and undetermined.

If two circumstances α and λ are connected, then, supposing all others are constant, a change of λ will be accompanied by a change of α, and as a general rule a change of α by a change of λ. The constant observance of this *mutual* interdependence is met with

in Stevinus, Galileo, Huygens, 'and other great inquir-
ers. The idea is also at the basis of the discovery of
counter-phenomena. Thus, a change in the volume of
a gas due to a change of temperature is supplemented
by the counter-phenomenon of a change of tempera-
ture on an alteration of volume ; Seebeck's phenome-
non by Peltier's effect, and so forth.

Care must, of course, be exercised, in
such inversions, respecting the *form*
of the dependence. Figure 235 will
render clear how a perceptible altera-
tion of α may always be produced by
an alteration of λ, but a change of λ
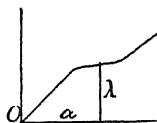
Fig. 235.

not necessarily by a change of α. The relations be-
tween electromagnetic and induction phenomena, dis-
covered by Faraday, are a good instance of this truth.

If a set of circumstances $\alpha \beta \gamma \delta \ldots$, by which a
second set $\lambda \mu \nu \ldots$ is determined, be made to pass
from its initial values to the terminal values $\alpha' \beta' \gamma'$
$\delta' \ldots$, then $\lambda \mu \nu \ldots$ also will pass into $\lambda' \mu' \nu' \ldots$
If the first set be brought back to its initial state, also
the second set will be brought back to its initial state.
This is the meaning of the "equivalence of cause and
effect," which Mayer again and again emphasizes.

If the first group suffer only *periodical* changes, the
second group also can suffer only periodical changes,
not continuous *permanent* ones. The fertile methods
of thought of Galileo, Huygens, S. Carnot, Mayer,
and their peers, are all reducible to the simple but sig-
nificant perception, *that purely periodical alterations of
one set of circumstances can only constitute the source of
similarly periodical alterations of a second set of circum-
stances, not of continuous and permanent alterations.* Such
maxims, as "the effect is equivalent to the cause,"

"work cannot be created out of nothing," "a per-
petual motion is impossible," are particular, less defi-
nite, and less evident forms of this perception, which
in itself is not especially concerned with mechanics, but
is a constituent of scientific thought generally.   With
the perception of this truth, any metaphysical mystic-
ism that may still adhere to the principle of the con-
servation of energy* is dissipated. (See p. 585.)

Purpose of
the ideas of
conserva-
tion.

All ideas of conservation, like the notion of sub-
stance, have a solid foundation in the economy of
thought. A mere unrelated change, without fixed point
of support, or reference, is not comprehensible, not
mentally reconstructible. We always inquire, accord-
ingly, what idea can be retained amid all variations as
permanent, what *law* prevails, what *equation* remains
fulfilled, what quantitative *values* remain constant ?
When we say the refractive index remains constant in
all cases of refraction, g remains $= 9 \cdot 810 \, m$ in all cases
of the motion of heavy bodies, the energy remains con-
stant in every isolated system, all our assertions have
one and the same economical function, namely that of
facilitating our mental reconstruction of facts.

II.

THE RELATIONS OF MECHANICS TO PHYSIOLOGY.

Conditions
of the true
develop-
ment of
science.

1. All science has its origin in the needs of life.
However minutely it may be subdivided by particular
vocations or by the restricted tempers and capacities of
those who foster it, each branch can attain its full and
best development only by a living connection with *the
whole*.   Through such a union alone can it approach

---

* When we reflect that the principles of science are all abstractions that
presuppose *repetitions* of *similar* cases, the absurd applications of the law of
the conservation of forces to the universe as a whole fall to the ground.

its true maturity, and be insured against lop-sided and monstrous growths.

The division of labor, the restriction of individual inquirers to limited provinces, the investigation of those provinces as a life-work, are the fundamental conditions of a fruitful development of science. Only by such specialisation and restriction of work can the economical instruments of thought requisite for the mastery of a special field be perfected. But just here lies a danger—the danger of our overestimating the instruments, with which we are so constantly employed, or even of regarding them as the objective point of science. Confusion of the means and aims of science.

2. Now, such a state of affairs has, in our opinion, actually been produced by the disproportionate formal development of physics. The majority of natural inquirers ascribe to the intellectual implements of physics, to the concepts mass, force, atom, and so forth, whose sole office is to revive economically arranged experiences, a reality beyond and independent of thought. Not only so, but it has even been held that these forces and masses are the real objects of inquiry, and, if once they were fully explored, all the rest would follow from the equilibrium and motion of these masses. A person who knew the world only through the theatre, if brought behind the scenes and permitted to view the mechanism of the stage's action, might possibly believe that the real world also was in need of a machine-room, and that if this were once thoroughly explored, we should know all. Similarly, we, too, should beware lest the *intellectual* machinery, employed in the representation of the world on *the stage of thought*, be regarded as the basis of the real world. Physics wrongly made the basis of physiology.

3. A philosophy is involved in any correct view of

The attempt to explain feelings by motions. the relations of special knowledge to the great body of knowledge at large,—a philosophy that must be demanded of every special investigator.   The lack of it is asserted in the formulation of imaginary problems, in the very enunciation of which, whether regarded as soluble or insoluble, flagrant absurdity is involved. Such an overestimation of physics, in contrast to physiology, such a mistaken conception of the true relations of the two sciences, is displayed in the inquiry whether it is possible to *explain* feelings by the motions of atoms?

Explication of this anomaly. Let us seek the conditions that could have impelled the mind to formulate so curious a question.   We find in the first place that greater *confidence* is placed in our experiences concerning relations of time and space ; that we attribute to them a more objective, a more *real* character than to our experiences of colors, sounds, temperatures, and so forth.   Yet, if we investigate the matter accurately, we must surely admit that our sensations of time and space are just as much *sensations* as are our sensations of colors, sounds, and odors, only that in our knowledge of the former we are surer and clearer than in that of the latter.   Space and time are well-ordered systems of sets of sensations.   The quantities stated in mechanical equations are simply ordinal symbols, representing those members of these sets that are to be mentally isolated and emphasised.   The equations express the form of interdependence of these ordinal symbols.

A body is a relatively constant sum of touch and sight sensations associated with the same space and time sensations.   Mechanical principles, like that, for instance, of the mutually induced accelerations of two masses, give, either directly or indirectly, only some

combination of touch, sight, light, and time sensations. They possess intelligible meaning only by virtue of the sensations they involve, the contents of which may of course be very complicated.

It would be equivalent, accordingly, to explaining the more simple and immediate by the more compli-cated and remote, if we were to attempt to derive sensations from the motions of masses, wholly aside from the consideration that the notions of mechanics are economical implements or expedients perfected to represent *mechanical* and not physiological or *psychological* facts. If the *means* and *aims* of research were properly distinguished, and our expositions were restricted to the presentation of *actual facts*, false problems of this kind could not arise.

Mode of avoiding errors.

4. All physical knowledge can only mentally represent and anticipate compounds of those elements we call sensations. It is concerned with the connection of these elements. Such an element, say the heat of a body *A*, is connected, not only with other elements, say with such whose aggregate makes up the flame *B*, but also with the aggregate of certain elements of our body, say with the aggregate of the elements of a nerve *N*. As simple object and element *N* is not essentially, but only conventionally, different from *A* and *B*. The connection of *A* and *B* is a problem of *physics*, that of *A* and *N* a problem of *physiology*. Neither is alone existent; both exist at once. Only provisionally can we neglect either. Processes, thus, that in appearance are purely mechanical, are, in addition to their evident mechanical features, always physiological, and, consequently, also electrical, chemical, and so forth. The science of mechanics does not comprise the foundations, no, nor even a part of the world, but only an *aspect* of it.

The principles of mechanics not the foundation but simply an aspect of the world.

APPENDIX.

Recent research has contributed greatly to our knowledge of the scientific literature of antiquity, and our opinion of the achievements of the ancient world in science has been correspondingly increased. Schiaparelli has done much to place the work of the Greeks in astronomy in its right light, and Govi has disclosed many precious treasures in his edition of the *Optics* of Ptolemy. The view that the Greeks were especially neglectful of experiment can no longer be maintained unqualifiedly. The most ancient experiments are doubtless those of the Pythagoreans, who employed a monochord with moveable bridge for determining the lengths of strings emitting harmonic notes. Anaxagoras's demonstration of the corporeality of the air by means of closed inflated tubes, and that of Empedocles by means of a vessel having its orifice inverted in water (Aristotle, *Physics*) are both primitive experiments. Ptolemy instituted systematic experiments on the refraction of light, while his observations in physiological optics are still full of interest to-day. Aristotle (*Meteorology*) describes phenomena that go to explain the rainbow. The absurd stories which tend to arouse our mistrust, like that of Pythagoras and the anvil which emitted harmonic

notes when struck by hammers of different weights, probably sprang from the fanciful brains of ignorant reporters. Pliny abounds in such vagaries. But they are not, as a matter of fact, a whit more incorrect or nonsensical than the stories of Newton's falling apple and of Watts's tea-kettle. The situation is, moreover, rendered quite intelligible when we consider the difficulties and the expense attending the production of ancient books and their consequent limited circulation. The conditions here involved are concisely discussed by J. Mueller in his paper, "Ueber das Experiment in den physikalischen Studien der Griechen," Naturwiss. Verein zu Innsbruck, XXIII., 1896–1897.

<div align="center">II.</div>

<div align="center">(See page 8.)</div>

Researches in mechanics were not begun by the Greeks until a late date, and in no wise keep pace with the rapid advancement of the race in the domain of mathematics, and notably in geometry. Reports of mechanical inventions, so far as they relate to the early inquirers, are extremely meager. Archytas, a distinguished citizen of Tarentum (*circa* 400 B. C.), famed as a geometer and for his employment with the problem of the duplication of the cube, devised mechanical instruments for the description of various curves. As an astronomer he taught that the earth was spherical and that it rotated upon its axis once a day. As a mechanician he founded the theory of pulleys. He is also said to have applied geometry to mechanics in a treatise on this latter science, but all information as to details is lacking. We are told, though, by Aulus Gellius (X. 12) that Archytas con·

structed an automaton consisting of a flying dove of wood and presumably operated by compressed air, which created a great sensation. It is, in fact, characteristic of the early history of mechanics that attention should have been first directed to its practical advantages and to the construction of automata designed to excite wonder in ignorant people.

Even in the days of Ctesibius (285–247 B. C.) and Hero (first century A. D.) the situation had not materially changed. So, too, during the decadence of civilisation in the Middle Ages, the same tendency asserts itself. The artificial automata and clocks of this period, the construction of which popular fancy ascribed to the machinations of the Devil, are well known. It was hoped, by imitating life outwardly, to apprehend it from its inward side also. In intimate connexion with the resultant misconception of life stands also the singular belief in the possibility of a perpetual motion. Only gradually and slowly, and in indistinct forms, did the genuine problems of mechanics loom up before the minds of inquirers. Aristotle's tract, *Mechanical Problems* (German trans. by Poselger, Hannover, 1881) is characteristic in this regard. Aristotle is quite adept in detecting and in formulating problems; he perceived the principle of the parallelogram of motions, and was on the verge of discovering centrifugal force; but in the actual solution of problems he was infelicitous. The entire tract partakes more of the character of a dialectic than of a scientific treatise, and rests content with enunciating the "apories," or contradictions, involved in the problems. But the tract upon the whole very well illustrates the intellectual situation that is characteristic of the beginnings of scientific investigation.

"If a thing take place whereof the cause be not apparent, even though it be in accordance with nature, it appears wonderful. . . . Such are the instances in which small things overcome great things, small weights heavy weights, and incidentally all the problems that go by the name of 'mechanical.' . . . To the apories (contradictions) of this character belong those that appertain to the lever. For it appears contrary to reason that a large weight should be set in motion by a small force, particularly when that weight is in addition combined with a larger weight. A weight that cannot be moved without the aid of a lever can be moved easily with that of a lever added. The primordial cause of all this is inherent in the nature of the circle,—which is as one should naturally expect: for it is not contrary to reason that something wonderful should proceed out of something else that is wonderful. The combination of contradictory properties, however, into a single unitary product is the most wonderful of all things. Now, the circle is actually composed of just such contradictory properties. For it is generated by a thing that is in motion and by a thing that is stationary at a fixed point."

In a subsequent passage of the same treatise there is a very dim presentiment of the principle of virtual velocities.

Considerations of the kind here adduced give evidence of a capacity for detecting and enunciating problems, but are far from conducting the investigator to their solution.

III.

It may be remarked in further substantiation of the criticisms advanced at pages 13–14, that it is very

obvious that if the arrangement is absolutely symmetrical in every respect, equilibrium obtains on the assumption of *any* form of dependence whatever of the disturbing factor on L, or, generally, on the assumption $P.f(L)$; and that consequently the *particular* form of dependence PL cannot possibly be inferred from the equilibrium. The fallacy of the deduction must accordingly be sought in the transformation to which the arrangement is subjected. Archimedes makes the action of two equal weights to be the same under all circumstances as that of the combined weights acting at the middle point of their line of junction. But, seeing that he both knows and assumes that distance from the fulcrum is determinative, this procedure is by the premises unpermissible, if the two weights are situated at unequal distances from the fulcrum. If a weight situated at a distance from the fulcrum is divided into two equal parts, and these parts are moved in contrary directions symmetrically to their original point of support ; one of the equal weights will be carried as near to the fulcrum as the other weight is carried from it. If it is assumed that the action remains constant during such procedure, then the particular form of dependence of the moment on L is implicitly determined by what has been done, inasmuch as the result is only possible provided the form be PL, or be *proportional* to L. But in such an event all further deduction is superfluous. The entire deduction contains the proposition to be demonstrated, by assumption if not explicitly.

Experiments are never absolutely exact, but they at least may lead the inquiring mind to *conjecture* that the key which will clear up the connexion of all the facts is contained in the exact metrical expression *PL*. On no other hypothesis are the deductions of Archimedes, Galileo, and the rest intelligible. The required transformations, extensions, and compressions of the prisms may now be carried out with perfect certainty.

A knife edge may be introduced at any point under a prism suspended from its center without disturbing the equilibrium (see Fig. 236), and several such arrangements may be rigidly combined together so as to form apparently new cases of equilibrium. The
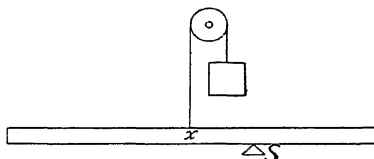
Fig. 236.

conversion and disintegration of the case of equilibrium into several other cases (Galileo)·is possible only by taking into account the value of *PL*. I cannot agree with O. Hölder who upholds the correctness of the Archimedean deductions against my criticisms in his essay *Denken und Anschauung in der Geometrie*, although I am greatly pleased with the extent of our agreement as to the nature of the exact sciences and their foundations. It would seem as if Archimedes (*De æquiponderantibus*) regarded it as a general experience that two equal weights may under all circumstances be replaced by one equal to their

combined weight at the center (Theorem 5, Corrol-
ary 2). In such an event, his long deduction (Theo-
rem 6) would be necessary, for the reason sought fol-
lows immediately (see pp. 14, 513). Archimedes's
mode of expression is not in favor of this view.
Nevertheless, a theorem of this kind cannot be re-
garded as *a priori* evident; and the views advanced
on pp. 14, 513 appear to me to be still uncontro-
verted.

<div style="text-align:center">v.</div>

Stevinus's procedure may be looked at from still
another point of view. If it is a fact, for our mechan-
ical instinct, that a heavy endless chain will not ro-
tate, then the individual simple cases of equilibrium
on an inclined plane which Stevinus devised and
which are readily controlled quantitatively, may be
regarded as so many special experiences. For it is
not essential that the experiments should have been
actually carried out, if the result is beyond question
of doubt. As a matter of fact, Stevinus experiments
in thought. Stevinus's result could actually have
been deduced from the corresponding physical exper-
iments, with friction reduced to a minimum. In an
analogous manner, Archimedes's considerations with
respect to the lever might be conceived after the
fashion of Galileo's procedure. If the various mental
experiments had been executed physically, the linear
dependence of the static moment on the distance of
the weight from the axis could be deduced with per-
fect rigor. We shall have still many instances to ad-
duce, among the foremost inquirers in the domain of
mechanics, of this tentative adaptation of special

quantitative conceptions to general instinctive im-
pressions. The same phenomena are presented in
other domains also. I may be permitted to refer in
this connexion to the expositions which I have given
in my *Principles of Heat*, page 151. It may be said
that the most significant and most important advances
in science have been made in this manner. The habit
which great inquirers have of bringing their single
conceptions into agreement with the general concep-
tion or ideal of an entire province of phenomena, their
constant consideration of the whole in their treatment
of parts, may be characterised as a genuinely philo-
sophical procedure. A truly philosophical treatment
of any special science will always consist in bringing
the results into relationship and harmony with the
established knowledge of the whole. The fanciful
extravagances of philosophy, as well as infelicitous
and abortive special theories, will be eliminated in
this manner.

It will be worth while to review again the points
of agreement and difference in the mental procedures
of Stevinus and Archimedes. Stevinus reached the
very general view that a mobile, heavy, endless chain
of any form stays at rest. He is able to deduce from
this general view, without difficulty, special cases,
which are quantitatively easily controlled. The case
from which Archimedes starts, on the other hand, is
the most special conceivable. He cannot possibly
deduce from his special case in an unassailable man-
ner the behavior which may be expected under more
general conditions. If he apparently succeeds in so
doing, the reason is that he already knows the result
which he is seeking, whilst Stevinus, although he too
doubtless knows, approximately at least, what he is

in search of, nevertheless could have found it directly
by his manner of procedure, even if he had not known
it. When the static relationship is rediscovered in
such a manner it has a higher value than the result of
a metrical experiment would have, which always de-
viates somewhat from the theoretical truth. The de-
viation increases with the disturbing circumstances,
as with friction, and decreases with the diminution of
these difficulties. The exact static relationship is
reached by idealisation and disregard of these dis-
turbing elements. It appears in the Archimedean and
Stevinian procedures as an *hypothesis* without which
the individual facts of experience would at once be-
come involved in logical contradictions. Not until
we have possessed this hypothesis can we by operat-
ing with the exact concepts reconstruct the facts and
acquire a scientific and logical mastery of them. The
lever and the inclined plane are self-created ideal ob-
jects of mechanics. These objects alone completely
satisfy the logical demands which we make of them ;
the physical lever satisfies these conditions only in
measure in which it approaches the ideal lever. The
natural inquirer strives to *adapt* his *ideals* to reality.

VI.

(See page 110)

Our modern notions with regard to the nature of
air are a direct continuation of the ancient ideas. An-
axagoras proves the corporeality of air from its resist-
ance to compression in closed bags of skin, and from
the gathering up of the expelled air (in the form of
bubbles?) by water (Aristotle, *Physics*, IV., 9). Ac-
cording to Empedocles, the air prevents the water

from penetrating into the interior of a vessel immersed with its aperture downwards (Gomperz, *Griechische Denker*, I., p. 191). Philo of Byzantium employs for the same purpose an inverted vessel having in its bottom an orifice closed with wax. The water will not penetrate into the submerged vessel until the wax cork is removed, wherupon the air escapes in bubbles. An entire series of experiments of this kind is performed, in almost the precise form customary in the schools to-day (*Philonis lib. de ingeniis spiritualibus*, in V. Rose's *Anecdota græca et latina*). Hero describes in his *Pneumatics* many of the experiments of his predecessors, with additions of his own; in theory he is an adherent of Strato, who occupied an intermediate position between Aristotle and Democritus. An absolute and continuous vacuum, he says, can be produced only artificially, although numberless tiny vacua exist between the particles of bodies, including air, just as air does among grains of sand. This is proved, in quite the same ingenuous fashion as in our present elementary books, from the possibility of rarefying and compressing bodies, including air (inrushing and outrushing of the air in Hero's ball). An argument of Hero's for the existence of vacua (pores) between corporeal particles rests on the fact that rays of light penetrate water. The result of artificially increasing a vacuum, according to Hero and his predecessors, is always the attraction and solicitation of adjacent bodies. A light vessel with a narrow aperture remains hanging to the lips after the air has been exhausted. The orifice may be closed with the finger and the vessel submerged in water. "If the finger be released, the water will rise in the vacuum created, although the movement of the liquid upward is not

according to nature. The phenomenon of the cup-
ping-glass is the same; these glasses, when placed
on the body, not only do not fall off, although they
are heavy enough, but they also draw out adjacent
particles through the pores of the body." The bent
siphon is also treated at length. "The filling of the
siphon on exhaustion of the air is accomplished by
the liquid's closely following the exhausted air, for
the reason that a continuous vacuum is inconceiv-
able." If the two arms of the siphon are of the same
length, nothing flows out. "The water is held in
equilibrium as in a balance." Hero accordingly con-
ceives of the flow of water as analogous to the move-
ment of a chain hanging with unequal lengths over a
pulley. The union of the two columns, which for us
is preserved by the pressure of the atmosphere, is
cared for in his case by the "inconceivability of a
continuous vacuum." It is shown at length, not that
the smaller mass of water is attracted and drawn
along by the greater mass, and that conformably to
this principle water cannot flow upwards, but rather
that the phenomenon is in harmony with the principle
of communicating vessels. The many pretty and in-
genious tricks which Hero describes in his *Pneumatics*
and in his *Automata*, and which were designed partly
to entertain and partly to excite wonder, offer a
charming picture of the material civilisation of the day
rather than excite our scientific interest. The auto-
matic sounding of trumpets and the opening of tem-
ple doors, with the thunder simultaneously produced,
are not matters which interest science properly so
called. Yet Hero's writings and notions contributed
much toward the diffusion of physical knowledge
(compare W. Schmidt, *Hero's Werke*, Leipsic, 1899,

and Diels, *System des Strato, Sitzungsberichte der Berliner Akademie,* 1893).

VII.

(See page 129.)

It has often been asserted that Galileo had predecessors of great prominence in his method of thinking, and while it is far from our purpose to gainsay this, we have still to emphasise the fact that Galileo overtowered them all. The greatest predecessor of Galileo, to whom we have already referred in another place, was Leonardo da Vinci, 1452–1519; now, it was impossible for Leonardo's achievements to have influenced the development of science at the time, for the reason that they were not made known in their entirety until the publication of Venturi in 1797. Leonardo knew the ratio of the times of descent down the slope and the height of an inclined plane. Frequently also a knowledge of the law of inertia is attributed to him. Indeed, some sort of instinctive knowledge of the persistence of motion once begun will not be gainsaid to any normal man. But Leonardo seems to have gone much farther than this. He knows that from a column of checkers one of the pieces may be knocked out without disturbing the others; he knows that a body in motion will move longer according as the resistance is less, but he be-, lieves that the body will move a distance proportional to the impulse, and nowhere expressly speaks of the persistence of the motion when the resistance is altogether removed. (Compare Wohlwill, *Bibliotheca Mathematica,* Stockholm, 1888, p. 19). Benedetti (1530–1590) knows that falling bodies are accelerated, and explains the acceleration as due to the summation

of the impulses of gravity (*Divers. speculat. math. et physic. liber*, Taurini, 1585). He ascribes the progressive motion of a projectile, not as the Peripatetics did, to the agency of the medium, but to the *virtus impressa*, though without attaining perfect clearness with regard to these problems. Galileo seems actually to have proceeded from Benedetti's point of view, for his youthful productions are allied to those of Benedetti. Galileo also assumes a *virtus impressa*, which he conceives to decrease in efficiency, and according to Wohlwill it appears that it was not until 1604 that he came into full possession of the laws of falling bodies.

G. Vailati, who has devoted much attention to Benedetti's investigations (*Atti della R. Acad. di Torino*, Vol. XXXIII., 1898), finds the chief merit of Benedetti to be that he subjected the Aristotelian views to mathematical and critical scrutiny and correction, and endeavored to lay bare their inherent contradictions, thus preparing the way for further progress. He knows that the assumption of the Aristotelians, that the velocity of falling bodies is inversely proportional to the density of the surrounding medium, is untenable and possible only in special cases. Let the velocity of descent be proportional to $p - q$, where p is the weight of the body and q the upward impulsion due to the medium. If only half the velocity of descent is set up in a medium of double the density, the equation $p - q = 2(p - 2q)$ must exist,—a relation which is possible only in case $p = 3q$. Light bodies *per se* do not exist for Benedetti; he ascribes weight and upward impulsion even to air. Different-sized bodies of the same material fall, in his opinion, with the same velocity. Benedetti reaches this result by

conceiving equal bodies falling alongside each other first disconnected and then connected, where the connexion cannot alter the motion. In this he approaches to the conception of Galileo, with the exception that the latter takes a profounder view of the matter. Nevertheless, Benedetti also falls into many errors; he believes, for example, that the velocity of descent of bodies of the same size and of the same shape is proportional to their weight, that is, to their density. His reflexions on catapults, no less than his views on the oscillation of a body about the center of the earth in a canal bored through the earth, are interesting, and contain little to be criticised.   Bodies projected horizontally appear to approach the earth more slowly. Benedetti is accordingly of the opinion that the force of gravity is diminished also in the case of a top rotating with its axis in a vertical position.   He thus does not solve the riddle fully, but prepares the way for the solution.

VIII.

If we are to understand Galileo's train of thought, we must bear in mind that he was already in possession of instinctive experiences prior to his resorting to experiment.

Freely falling bodies are followed with more difficulty by the eye the longer and the farther they have fallen; their impact on the hand receiving them is in like measure sharper; the sound of their striking louder.   The velocity accordingly increases with the time elapsed and the space traversed.   But for scientific purposes our mental representations of the facts of sensual experience must be submitted to *conceptual*

formulation. Only thus may they be used for discovering by abstract mathematical rules unknown properties conceived to be dependent on certain initial properties having definite and assignable arithmetic values; or, for completing what has been only partly given. This formulation is effected by isolating and emphasising what is deemed of importance, by neglecting what is subsidiary, by *abstracting*, by *idealising*. The experiment determines whether the form chosen is adequate to the facts. Without some preconceived opinion the experiment is impossible, because its form is determined by the opinion. For how and on what could we experiment if we did not previously have some suspicion of what we were about? The *complemental* function which the experiment is to fulfil is determined entirely by our prior experience. The experiment confirms, modifies, or overthrows our suspicion. The modern inquirer would ask in a similar predicament: Of what is v a function? What function of t is v? Galileo asks, in his ingenuous and primitive way: is v proportional to s, is v proportional to t? Galileo, thus, *gropes* his way along synthetically, but reaches his goal nevertheless. Systematic, routine methods are the final outcome of research, and do not stand perfectly developed at the disposal of genius in the first steps it takes. (Compare the article "Ueber Gedankenexperimente," *Zeitschrift für den phys. und chem. Unterricht*, 1897, I.)

IX.

In an exhaustive study in the *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie*, 1884, Vol. XIV., pp. 365–410, and Vol.

XV., pp. 70–135, 337–387, entitled "Die Entdeckung des Beharrungsgesetzes," E. Wohlwill has shown that the predecessors and contemporaries of Galileo, nay, even Galileo himself, only *very gradually* abandoned the Aristotelian conceptions for the acceptance of the law of inertia. Even in Galileo's mind uniform circular motion and uniform horizontal motion occupy distinct places. Wohlwill's researches are very acceptable and show that Galileo had not attained perfect clearness in his own new ideas and was liable to frequent reversion to the old views, as might have been expected.

Indeed, from my own exposition the reader will have inferred that the law of inertia did not possess in Galileo's mind the degree of clearness and universality that it subsequently acquired. (See pp. 140 and 143.) With regard to my exposition at pages 140–141, however, I still believe, in spite of the opinions of Wohlwill and Poske, that I have indicated the point which both for Galileo and his successors must have placed in the most favorable light the *transition* from the old conception to the new. How much was wanting to absolute comprehension, may be gathered from the fact that Baliani was able without difficulty to infer from Galileo's statement that acquired velocity could not be destroyed,—a fact which Wohlwill himself points out (p. 112). It is not at all surprising that in treating of the motion of *heavy* bodies, Galileo applies his law of inertia almost exclusively to horizontal movements. Yet he knows that a musket-ball *possessing no weight* would continue rectilinearly on its path in the direction of the barrel. (*Dialogues on the two World Systems*, German translation, Leipsic, 1891, p. 184.) His hesitation in enunciating

in its most general terms a law that at first blush appears so startling, is not surprising.

X.

We cannot adequately appreciate the extent of Galileo's achievement in the analysis of the motion of projectiles until we examine his predecessors' endeavors in this field. Santbach (1561) is of opinion, that a cannon-ball speeds onward in a straight line until its velocity is exhausted and then drops to the ground in a vertical direction. Tartaglia (1537) compounds the path of a projectile out of a straight line, the arc of a circle, and lastly the vertical tangent to the arc. He is perfectly aware, as Rivius later (1582) more distinctly states, that accurately viewed the path is curved at all points, since the deflective action of gravity never ceases; but he is yet unable to arrive at a complete analysis. The initial portion of the path is well calculated to arouse the illusive impression that the action of gravity has been annulled by the velocity of the projection,—an illusion to which even Benedetti fell a victim. (See Appendix, VII., p. 129.) We fail to observe any *descent* in the initial part of the curve, and forget to take into account the shortness of the corresponding *time* of the descent. By a similar oversight a jet of water may assume the appearance of a solid body suspended in the air, if one is unmindful of the fact that it is made up of a mass of rapidly alternating minute particles. The same illusion is met with in the centrifugal pendulum, in the top, in Aitken's flexible chain rendered rigid by rapid rotation (*Philosophical Magazine*, 1878), in the locomotive which rushes safely across a defective

bridge, through which it would have crashed if at
rest, but which, owing to the insufficient time of des-
cent and of the period in which it can do work, leaves
the ·bridge intact.   On thorough analysis none of
these phenomena are more surprising than the most
ordinary events. As Vailati remarks, the rapid spread
of firearms in the fourteenth century gave a distinct
impulse to the study of the motion of projectiles, and
indirectly to that of mechanics generally. E∽sentially
the same conditions occur in the case of the ancient
catapults and in the hurling of missiles by the hand,
but the new and imposing form of the phenomenon
doubtless exercised a great fascination on the curios-
ity of people.

So much for history.   And now a word as to the
notion of "composition."   Galileo's conception of the
motion of a projectile as a process compounded of
two distinct and independent motions, is suggestive
of an entire group of similar important epistemologi-
cal processes.   We may say that it is as important to
perceive the *non dependence* of two circumstances *A*
and *B* on each other, as it is to perceive the *dependence*
of two circumstances *A* and *C* on each other.   For
the first perception alone enables us to pursue the
second relation with composure.   Think only of how
serious an obstacle the assumption of non-existing
causal relations constituted to the research of the
Middle Ages.   Similar to Galileo's discovery is that
of the parallelogram of forces by Newton, the compo-
sition of the vibrations of strings by Sauveur, the com-
position of thermal disturbances by Fourier. Through
this latter inquirer the method of compounding a phe-
nomenon out of mutually independent partial phe-
nomena by means of representing a general integral

as the sum of particular integrals has penetrated into every nook and corner of physics. The decomposition of phenomena into mutually independent parts has been aptly characterised by P. Volkmann as *isolation,* and the composition of a phenomenon out of such parts, *superposition.* The two processes combined enable us to comprehend, or reconstruct in thought, piecemeal, what, *as a whole,* it would be impossible for us to grasp.

"Nature with its myriad phenomena assumes a unified aspect only in the rarest cases; in the majority of instances it exhibits a thoroughly composite character . . . ; it is accordingly one of the duties of science to conceive phenomena as made up of sets of partial phenomena, and at first to study these partial phenomena in their purity. Not until we know to what extent each circumstance shares in the phenomenon as an entirety do we acquire a command over the whole. . . ." (Cf. P. Volkmann, *Erkenntnisstheoretische Grundzüge der Naturwissenschaft,* 1896, p. 70. Cf. also my *Principles of Heat,* German edition, pp. 123, 151, 452).

<div align="center">XI.</div>

The perspicuous deduction of the expression for centrifugal force based on the principle of Hamilton's hodograph may also be mentioned. If a body move uniformly in a circle of radius r (Fig. 237), the velocity v at the point A of the path is transformed by the traction of the string into the velocity v of like magnitude but different direction at the point B. If from O as centre (Fig. 238) we lay off as to magnitude and direction all the velocities the body succes-

sively acquires, these lines will represent the sum
of the radii v of the circle.   For OM to be trans-
formed into ON, the perpendicular component to it,
MN, must be added.   During the period of revolu-
tion T the velocity is uniformly increased in the direc-
tions of the radii r by an amount $2\pi v$.   The numeri-
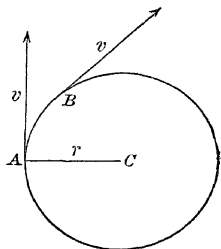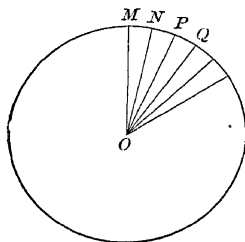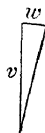
Fig. 237.   Fig. 238.   Fig. 239.

cal measure of the radial acceleration is therefore
$\varphi = \dfrac{2\pi v}{T}$, and since $vT = 2\pi r$, therefore also $\varphi = \dfrac{v^2}{r}$.

If to $OM = v$ the very small component w is added
(Fig. 239), the resultant will strictly be a greater
velocity $\sqrt{v^2 + w^2} = v + \dfrac{w^2}{2v}$, as the approximate ex-
traction of the square root will show.   But on *contin-
uous* deflection $\dfrac{w^2}{2v}$ vanishes with respect to v; hence,
only the direction, but not the magnitude, of the
velocity changes.

XII.

(See page 162.)

Even Descartes thought of explaining the centri-
petal impulsion of floating bodies in a vortical me-
dium, after this manner.   But Huygens correctly re-

marked that on this hypothesis we should have to assume that the *lightest* bodies received the *greatest* centripetal impulsion, and that all heavy bodies would without exception have to be lighter than the vortical medium. Huygens observes further that like phenomena are also necessarily presented in the case of bodies, be they what they may, that do *not* participate in the whirling movement, that is to say, such as might exist without centrifugal force in a vortical medium affected with centrifugal force. For example, a sphere composed of any material whatsoever but moveable only along a *stationary* axis, say a wire, is impelled toward the axis of rotation in a whirling medium.

In a closed vessel containing water Huygens placed small particles of sealing wax which are slightly *heavier* than water and hence touch the bottom of the vessel. If the vessel be rotated, the particles of sealing wax will flock toward the outer rim of the vessel. If the vessel be then suddenly brought to rest, the water will continue to rotate while the particles of sealing wax which touch the bottom and are therefore more rapidly arrested in their movement, will now be impelled toward the axis of the vessel. In this process Huygens saw an exact replica of gravity. An ether whirling in one direction only, did not appear to fulfil his requirements. Ultimately, he thought, it would sweep everything with it. He accordingly assumed ether-particles that sped rapidly about in all directions, it being his theory that in a closed space, circular, as contrasted with radial, motions would of themselves preponderate. This ether appeared to him adequate to explain gravity. The detailed exposition of this kinetic theory of gravity is

found in Huygens's tract *On the Cause of Gravitation*
(German trans. by Mewes, Berlin, 1893). See also
Lasswitz, *Geschichte der Atomistik,* 1890, Vol. II., p.
344.

XIII.

(See page 187)

It has been impossible for us to enter upon the
signal achievements of Huygens in physics proper.
But a few points may be briefly indicated. He is the
creator of the wave-theory of light, which ultimately
overthrew the emission theory of Newton. His at-
tention was drawn, in fact, to precisely those features
of luminous phenomena that had escaped Newton.
With respect to physics he took up with great enthu-
siasm the idea of Descartes that all things were to be
explained mechanically, though without being blind
to its errors, which he acutely and correctly criticised.
His predilection for mechanical explanations rendered
him also an opponent of Newton's action at a distance,
which he wished to replace by pressures and impacts,
that is, by action due to contact. In his endeavor to
do so he lighted upon some peculiar conceptions, like
that of magnetic currents, which at first could not
compete with the influential theory of Newton, but
has recently been reinstated in its full rights in the
unbiassed efforts of Faraday and Maxwell. As a
geometer and mathematician also Huygens is to be
ranked high, and in this connexion reference need be
made only to his theory of games of chance. His
astronomical observations, his achievements in theo-
retical and practical dioptrics advanced these depart-
ments very considerably. As a technicist he is the
inventor of the powder-machine, the idea of which

has found actualisation in the modern gas-machine. As a physiologist he surmised the accommodation of the eye by deformation of the lens. All these things can scarcely be mentioned here. Our opinion of Huygens grows as his labors are made better known by the complete edition of his works. A brief and reverential sketch of his scientific career in all its phases is given by J. Bosscha in a pamphlet entitled *Christian Huyghens, Rede am 200. Gedächtnisstage seines Lebensendes*, German trans. by Engelmann, Leipsic, 1895.

<div align="center">XIV.</div>

<div align="center">(See page 190.)</div>

Rosenberger is correct in his statement (*Newton und seine physikalischen Principien*, 1895) that the idea of universal gravitation did not originate with Newton, but that Newton had many highly deserving predecessors. But it may be safely asserted that it was, with all of them, a question of conjecture, of a groping and imperfect grasp of the problem, and that no one before Newton grappled with the notion so comprehensively and energetically; so that above and beyond the great mathematical problem, which Rosenberger concedes, there still remains to Newton the credit of a colossal feat of the imagination.

Among Newton's forerunners may first be mentioned Copernicus, who (in 1543) says: "I am at least of opinion that gravity is nothing more than a natural tendency implanted in particles by the divine providence of the Master of the Universe, by virtue of which, they, collecting together in the shape of a sphere, do form their own proper unity and integrity. And it is to be assumed that this propensity is inherent also in the sun, the moon, and the other plan-

ets." Similarly, Kepler (1609), like Gilbert before
him (1600), conceives of gravity as the analogue of
magnetic attraction. By this analogy, Hooke, it seems,
is led to the notion of a *diminution* of gravity with the
distance ; and in picturing its action as due to a kind
of radiation, he even hits upon the idea of its acting
inversely as the square of the distance. He even
sought to determine the diminution of its effect (1686)
by weighing bodies hung at different heights from the
top of Westminster Abbey (precisely after the more
modern method of Jolly), by means of spring-balances
and pendulum clocks, but of course ·without results.
The conical pendulum appeared to him admirably
adapted for illustrating the motion of the planets. .
Thus Hooke really approached nearest to Newton's
conception, though he never completely reached the
latter's altitude of view.

In two instructive writings (*Kepler's Lehre von der
Gravitation*, Halle, 1896 : *Die Gravitation bei Galileo
u. Borelli*, Berlin, 1897) E. Goldbeck investigates the
early history of the doctrine of gravitation with Kepler
on the one hand and Galileo and Borelli on the other.
Despite his adherence to scholastic, Aristotelian no-
tions, Kepler has sufficient insight to see that there is
a real physical problem presented by the phenomena
of the planetary system; the moon, in his view, is
swept along with the earth in its motion round the
sun, and in its turn drags the tidal wave along with
it, just as the earth attracts heavy bodies. Also, for
the planets the source of motion is sought in the sun,
from which immaterial levers extend that rotate with
the sun and carry the distant planets around more
slowly than the near ones. By this view, Kepler was
enabled to guess that the period of rotation of the sun

was less than eighty-eight days, the period of revolution of Mercury. At times, the sun is also conceived as a revolving magnet, over against which are placed the magnetic planets. In Galileo's conception of the universe, the formal, mathematical, and esthetical point of view predominates. He rejects each and every assumption of attraction, and even scouted the idea as childish in Kepler. The planetary system had not yet taken the shape of a genuine physical problem for him. Yet he assumed with Gilbert that an immaterial geometric point can exercise no physical action, and he did very much toward demonstrating the terrestrial nature of the heavenly bodies. Borelli (in his work on the satellites of the Jupiter) conceives the planets as floating between layers of ether of differing densities. They have a *natural* tendency to approach their central body, (the term attraction is avoided,) which is offset by the centrifugal force set up by the revolution. Borelli illustrates his theory by an experiment very similar to that described by us in Fig. 106, p. 162. As will be seen, he approaches very closely to Newton. His theory is, though, a combination of Descartes's and Newton's.

<div align="center">XV.</div>

<div align="center">(See page 191.)</div>

Newton illustrated the identity of terrestrial gravity with the universal gravitation that determined the motions of the celestial bodies, as follows. He conceived a stone to be hurled with successive increases of horizontal velocity from the top of a high mountain. Neglecting the resistance of the air, the parabolas successively described by the stone will increase in length until finally they will fall clear of the earth

altogether, and the stone will be converted into a
satellite circling round the earth. Newton begins with
the *fact* of universal gravity.   An explanation of the
phenomenon was not forthcoming, and it was not his
wont, he says, to frame hypotheses.   Nevertheless he
could not set his thoughts at rest so easily, as is ap-
parent from his well-known letter to Bentley.   That
gravity was immanent and innate in matter, so that
one body could act on another directly through empty
space, appeared to him absurd.   But he is unable to
decide whether the intermediary agency is material or
immaterial (spiritual?). Like all his predecessors and
successors, Newton felt the need of explaining gravi-
tation, by some such means as actions of contact. Yet
the great success which Newton achieved in astron-
omy with forces acting at a distance as the basis of
deduction, soon changed the situation very consider-
ably. Inquirers accustomed themselves to these forces
as points of departure for their explanations and the
impulse to inquire after their origin soon disappeared
almost completely.   The attempt was now made to
introduce these forces into all the departments of
physics, by conceiving bodies to be composed of par-
ticles separated by vacuous interstices and thus acting
on one another at a distance.   Finally even, the re-
sistance of bodies to pressure and impact, this is to
say, even forces of contact, were explained by forces
acting at a distance between particles.   As a fact, the
functions representing the former are more compli-
cated than those representing the latter.

The doctrine of forces acting at a distance doubt-
less stood in highest esteem with Laplace and his
contemporaries.   Faraday's unbiassed and ingenious
conceptions and Maxwell's mathematical formulation

of them again turned the tide in favor of the forces of contact. Divers difficulties had raised doubts in the minds of astronomers as to the exactitude of Newton's law, and slight quantitative variations of it were looked for. After it had been demonstrated, however, that electricity travelled with finite velocity, the question of a like state of affairs in connexion with the analogous action of gravitation again naturally arose. As a fact, gravitation bears a close resemblance to electrical forces acting at a distance, save in the single respect that so far as we know, attraction only and not repulsion takes place in the case of gravitation. Föppl ("Ueber eine Erweiterung des Gravitationsgesetzes," *Sitzungsber. d. Münch. Akad.*, 1897, p. 6 et seq.) is of opinion, that we may, without becoming involved in contradictions, assume also with respect to gravitation negative masses, which attract one another but repel positive masses, and assume therefore also *finite* fields of gravitation, similar to the electric fields. Drude (in his report on actions at a distance made for the German Naturforscherversammlung of 1897) enumerates many experiments for establishing a velocity of propagation for gravitation, which go back as far as Laplace. The result is to be regarded as a negative one, for the velocities which it is at all possible to consider as such, do not accord with one another, though they are all very large multiples of the velocity of light. Paul Gerber alone ("Ueber die räumliche u. zeitliche Ausbreitung der Gravitation," *Zeitschrift f. Math. u. Phys.*, 1898, II.), from the perihelial motion of Mercury, forty-one seconds in a century, finds the velocity of propagation of gravitation to be the same as that of light. This would speak in favor of the ether as the medium of gravitation. (Com-

pare W. Wien, "Ueber die Möglichkeit einer elektro-
magnetischen Begründung der Mechanik," *Archives
Néerlandaises,* The Hague, 1900, V., p. 96.)

XVI.

It should be observed that the notion of mass as
quantity of matter was *psychologically* a very natural
conception for Newton, with his peculiar develop-
ment. Critical inquiries as to the origin of the con-
cept of matter could not possibly be expected of a
scientist in Newton's day. The concept developed
quite instinctively; it is discovered as a datum per-
fectly complete, and is adopted with absolute ingenu-
ousness. The same is the case with the concept of
force. But force appears conjoined with matter. And,
inasmuch as Newton invested all material particles
with precisely identical gravitational forces, inasmuch
as he regarded the forces exerted by the heavenly
bodies on one another as the sum of the forces of the
individual particles composing them, naturally these
forces appear to be inseparably conjoined with the
quantity of matter. Rosenberger has called attention
to this fact in his book, *Newton und seine physikalischen
Principien* (Leipzig, 1895, especially page 192).

I have endeavored to show elsewhere (*Analysis of
the Sensations,* Chicago, 1897) how starting from the
constancy of the *connexion* between different sensa-
tions we have been led to the assumption of an *abso-
lute* constancy, which we call *substance,* the most ob-
vious and prominent example being that of a moveable
body distinguishable from its environment. And see-
ing that such bodies are divisible into homogeneous
parts, of which each presents a constant complexus

of properties, we are induced to form the notion of a substantial something that is quantitatively variable, which we call *matter*. But that which we take away from one body, makes its appearance again at some other place. The quantity of matter in its entirety, thus, proves to be *constant*. Strictly viewed, however, we are concerned with precisely as many substantial quantities as bodies have properties, and there is no other function left for *matter* save that of representing the constancy of connexion of the several properties of bodies, of which *man* is *one* only. (Compare my *Principles of Heat*, German edition, 1896, page 425.)

XVII.

(See page 216.)

Of the theories of the tides enunciated before Newton, that of Galileo alone may be briefly mentioned. Galileo explains the tides as due to the relative motion of the solid and liquid parts of the earth, and regards this fact as direct evidence of the motion of the earth and as a cardinal argument in favor of the Copernican system. If the earth (Fig. 240) rotates from the west to the east, and is affected at the same time with a progressional motion, the parts of

Fig. 240.

the earth at *a* will move with the sum, and the parts at *b* with the difference, of the two velocities. The water in the bed of the ocean, which is unable to follow this change in velocity quickly enough, behaves like the water in a plate swung rapidly back and forth, or like that in the bottom of a skiff which is rowed
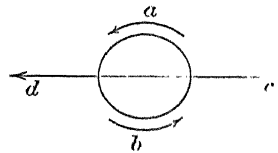
with rapid alterations of speed: it piles up now in the front and now at the back. This is substantially the view that Galileo set forth in the *Dialogue on the Two World Systems.* Kepler's view, which supposes attraction by the moon, appears to him mystical and childish. He is of the opinion that it should be relegated to the category of explanations by "sympathy" and "antipathy," and that it admits as easily of refutation as the doctrine according to which the tides are created by radiation and the consequent expansion of the water. That on his theory the tides rise only once a day, did not, of course, escape Galileo's attention. But he deceived himself with regard to the difficulties involved, believing himself able to explain the daily, monthly, and yearly periods by considering the natural oscillations of the water and the alterations to which its motions are subject. The principle of relative motion is a correct feature of this theory, but it is so infelicitously applied that only an extremely illusive theory could result. We will first convince ourselves that the conditions supposed to be involved would not have the effect ascribed to them. Conceive a homogeneous sphere of water; any other effect due to rotation than that of a corresponding oblateness we should not expect. Now, suppose the ball to acquire in addition a uniform motion of progression. Its various parts will now as before remain at relative rest with respect to one another. For the case in question does not differ, according to our view, in any essential respect from the preceding, inasmuch as the progressive motion of the sphere may be conceived to be replaced by a motion in the opposite direction of all surrounding bodies. Even for the person who is inclined to regard the motion

as an "absolute" motion, no change is produced in the relation of the parts to one another by uniform motion of progression. Now, let us cause the sphere, the parts of which have no tendency to move with respect to one another, to congeal at certain points, so that sea-beds with liquid water in them are produced. The undisturbed uniform rotation will continue, and consequently Galileo's theory is erroneous.

But Galileo's idea appears at first blush to be extremely plausible; how is the paradox explained? It is due entirely to a *negative* conception of the law of inertia. If we ask what acceleration the water experiences, everything is clear. Water having no weight would be hurled off at the beginning of rotation; water having weight, on the other hand, would describe a central motion around the center of the earth With its slight velocity of rotation it would be forced more and more toward the center of the earth, with just enough of its centripetal acceleration counteracted by the resistance of the mass lying beneath, as to make the remainder, conjointly with the given tangential velocity, sufficient for motion in a circle. Looking at it from this point of view, all doubt and obscurity vanishes. But it must in justice be added that it was almost impossible for Galileo, unless his genius were supernatural, to have gone to the bottom of the matter. He would have been obliged to anticipate the great intellectual achievements of Huygens and Newton.

XVIII.

H. Streintz's objection (*Die physikalischen Grundlagen der Mechanik*, Leipsic, 1883, p. 117), that a com-

parison of masses satisfying my definition can be effected only by astronomical means, I am unable to admit. The expositions on pages 202, 218–221 amply refute this. Masses produce in each other accelerations in impact, as well as when subject to electric and magnetic forces, and when connected by a string on Atwood's machine. In my *Elements of Physics* (second German edition, 1891, page 27) I have shown how mass-ratios can be experimentally determined on a centrifugal machine, in a very elementary and popular manner. The criticism in question, therefore, may be regarded as refuted.

My definition is the outcome of an endeavor to establish *the interdependence of phenomena* and to remove all metaphysical obscurity, without accomplishing on this account less than other definitions have done. I have pursued exactly the same course with respect to the ideas, "quantity of electricity" ("On the Fundamental Concepts of Electrostatics," 1883, *Popular Scientific Lectures*, Open Court Pub. Co., Chicago, 1898), "temperature," "quantity of heat" (*Zeitschrift für den physikalischen und chemischen Unterricht*, Berlin, 1888, No. 1), and so forth. With the view here taken of the concept of mass is associated, however, another difficulty, which must also be carefully noted, if we would be rigorously critical in our analysis of other concepts of physics, as for example the concepts of the theory of heat. Maxwell made reference to this point in his investigations of the concept of temperature, about the same time as I did with respect to the concept of heat. I would refer here to the discussions on this subject in my *Principles of Heat* (German edition, Leipsic, 1896), particularly page 41 and page 190.

XIX.

My views concerning physiological time, the sensation of time, and partly also concerning physical time, I have expressed elsewhere (see *Analysis of the Sensations,* 1886, Chicago, Open Court Pub. Co., 1897, pp. 109–118, 179–181). As in the study of thermal phenomena we take as our measure of temperature an *arbitrarily chosen indicator of volume,* which varies in almost parallel correspondence with our sensation of heat, and which is not liable to the uncontrollable disturbances of our organs of sensation, so, for similar reasons, we select as our measure of time an *arbitrarily chosen motion,* (the angle of the earth's rotation, or path of a free body,) which proceeds in almost parallel correspondence with our sensation of time. If we have once made clear to ourselves that we are concerned only with the ascertainment of the *interdependence* of phenomena, as I pointed out as early as 1865 (*Ueber den Zeitsinn des Ohres, Sitzungsberichte der Wiener Akademie*) and 1866 (Fichte's *Zeitschrift für Philosophie*), all metaphysical obscurities disappear. (Compare J Epstein, *Die logischen Principien der Zeitmessung,* Berlin, 1887.)

I have endeavored also (*Principles of Heat,* German edition, page 51) to point out the reason for the natural tendency of man to hypostatise the concepts which have great value for him, particularly those at which he arrives instinctively, without a knowledge of their development. The considerations which I there adduced for the concept of temperature may be easily applied to the concept of time, and render the origin

of Newton's concept of "absolute" time intelligible.
Mention is also made there (page 338) of the connexion obtaining between the concept of energy and the
irreversibility of time, and the view is advanced that
the entropy of the universe, if it could ever possibly
be determined, would actually represent a species of
absolute measure of time. I have finally to refer here
also to the discussions of Petzoldt ("Das Gesetz der
Eindeutigkeit," *Vierteljahrsschrift für wissenschaftliche
Philosophie*, 1894, page 146), to which I shall reply in
another place.

XX.

(See page 238.)

Of the treatises which have appeared since 1883
on the law of inertia, all of which furnish welcome
evidence of a heightened interest in this question, I
can here only briefly mention that of Streintz (*Physikalische Grundlagen der Mechanik*, Leipsic, 1883) and
that of L. Lange (*Die geschichtliche Entwicklung des
Bewegungsbegriffes*, Leipsic, 1886).

The expression "absolute motion of translation"
Streintz correctly pronounces as devoid of meaning
and consequently declares certain analytical deductions, to which he refers, superfluous. On the other
hand, with respect to *rotation*, Streintz accepts Newton's position, that absolute rotation can be distinguished from relative rotation. In this point of view,
therefore, one can select every body not affected with
absolute rotation as a body of reference for the expression of the law of inertia.

I cannot share this view. For me, only relative
motions exist (*Erhaltung der Arbeit*, p. 48; *Science of
Mechanics*, p. 229), and I can see, in this regard, no

distinction between rotation and translation. When a body moves relatively to the fixed stars, centrifugal forces are produced; when it moves relatively to some different body, and not relatively to the fixed stars, no centrifugal forces are produced. I have no objection to calling the first rotation "absolute" rotation, if it be remembered that nothing is meant by such a designation except *relative rotation with respect to the fixed stars.* Can we fix Newton's bucket of water, rotate the fixed stars, and *then* prove the absence of centrifugal forces?

The experiment is impossible, the idea is meaningless, for the two cases are not, in sense-perception, distinguishable from each other. I accordingly regard these two cases as the *same* case and Newton's distinction as an illusion (*Science of Mechanics*, page 232).

But the statement is correct that it is possible to find one's bearings in a balloon shrouded in fog, by means of a body which does not rotate with respect to the fixed stars. But this is nothing more than an *indirect* orientation with respect to the fixed stars; it is a mechanical, substituted for an optical, orientation.

I wish to add the following remarks in answer to Streintz's criticism of my view. My opinion is not to be confounded with that of Euler (Streintz, pp. 7, 50), who, as Lange has clearly shown, never arrived at any settled and intelligible opinion on the subject. Again, I never assumed that remote masses *only*, and not near ones, determine the velocity of a body (Streintz, p. 7); I simply spoke of an influence *independent* of distance. In the light of my expositions at pages 222–245, the unprejudiced and careful reader

will scarcely maintain with Streintz (p. 50), that after so long a period of time, without a knowledge of Newton and Euler, I have only been led to views which these inquirers so long ago held, but were afterwards, partly by them and partly by others, rejected. Even my remarks of 1872, which were all that Streintz knew, cannot justify this criticism. These were, for good reasons, concisely stated, but they are by no means so meagre as they must appear to one who knows them only from Streintz's criticism. The point of view which Streintz occupies, I at that time expressly rejected.

Lange's treatise is, in my opinion, one of the best that have been written on this subject. Its methodical movement wins at once the reader's sympathy. Its careful analysis and study, from historical and critical points of view, of the concept of motion, have produced, it seems to me, results of permanent value. I also regard its clear emphasis and apt designation of the principle of "particular determination" as a point of much merit, although the principle itself, as well as its application, is not new. The principle is really at the basis of all measurement. The choice of the unit of measurement is convention; the number of measurement is a result of inquiry. Every natural inquirer who is clearly conscious that his business is simply the investigation of the interdependence of phenomena, as I formulated the point at issue a long time ago (1865–1866), employs this principle. When, for example (*Mechanics*, p. 218 et seq.), the negative inverse ratio of the mutually induced accelerations of two bodies is called the mass-ratio of these bodies, this is a *convention*, expressly acknowledged as arbitrary; but that these ratios are independent of the

kind and of the order of combination of the bodies is a *result of inquiry.* I might adduce numerous similar nstances from the theories of heat and electricity as well as from other provinces. Compare Appendix II.

Taking it in its simplest and most perspicuous form, the law of inertia, in Lange's view, would read as follows:

Three material points, P_1, P_2, P_3, are simultaneously hurled from the same point in space and then left to themselves. The moment we are certain that the points are not situated in the same straight line, we join each separately with *any* fourth point in space, Q. These lines of junction, which we may respectively call G_1, G_2, G_3, form, at their point of meeting, a three-faced solid angle. If now we make this solid angle preserve, with unaltered rigidity, its form, and constantly determine in such a manner its position, that P_1 shall always move on the line G_1, P_2 on the line G_2, P_3 on the line G_3, these lines may be regarded as the axis of a coördinate or inertial system, with respect to which every other material point, left to itself, will move in a straight line. The spaces described by the free points in the paths so determined will be proportional to one another.

A system of coördinates with respect to which three material points move in a straight line is, according to Lange, under the assumed limitations, a simple *convention.* That with respect to such a system also a fourth or other free material point will move in a straight line, and that the paths of the different points will all be proportional to one another, are *results of inquiry.*

In the first place, we shall not dispute the fact that the law of inertia can be referred to such a system

of time and space coördinates and expressed in this form. Such an expression is less fit than Streintz's for practical purposes, but, on the other hand, is, for its methodical advantages, more attractive. It especially appeals to my mind, as a number of years ago I was engaged with similar attempts, of which not the beginnings but only a few remnants (*Mechanics*, pp. 234–235) are left. I abandoned these attempts, because I was convinced that we only *apparently* evade by such expressions references to the fixed stars and the angular rotation of the earth. This, in my opinion, is also true of the forms in which Streintz and Lange express the law.

In point of fact, it was precisely by the consideration of the fixed stars and the rotation of the earth that we arrived at a knowledge of the law of inertia as it at present stands, and *without these foundations* we should never have thought of the explanations here discussed (*Mechanics*, 232–233). The consideration of a small number of isolated points, to the exclusion of the rest of the world, is in my judgment inadmissible (*Mechanics*, pp. 229–235).

It is quite questionable, whether a *fourth* material point, left to itself, would, with respect to Lange's "inertial system," uniformly describe a straight line, if the fixed stars were absent, or not invariable, or could not be regarded with sufficient approximation as invariable.

The most natural point of view for the candid inquirer must still be, to regard the law of inertia primarily as a tolerably accurate approximation, to refer it, with respect to space, to the fixed stars, and, with respect to time, to the rotation of the earth, and to await the correction, or more precise definition, of

our knowledge from future experience, as I have ex-
plained on page 237 of this book.

I have still to mention the discussions of the law
of inertia which have appeared since 1889. Reference
may first be made to the expositions of Karl Pearson
(*Grammar of Science*, 1892, page 477), which agree
with my own, save in terminology. P. and J. Fried-
lander (*Absolute und relative Bewegung*, Berlin, 1896)
have endeavored to determine the question by means
of an experiment based on the suggestions made by
me at pages 217–218; I have grave doubts, however,
whether the experiment will be successful from the
quantitative side. I can quite freely give my assent
to the discussions of Johannesson (*Das Beharrungs-
gesetz*, Berlin, 1896), although the question remains
unsettled as to the means by which the motion of a
body not perceptibly accelerated by other bodies is to
be determined. For the sake of completeness, the
predominantly dialectic treatment by M. E. Vicaire,
Société scientifique de Bruxelles, *1895*, as well as the in-
vestigations of J. G. MacGregor, *Royal Society of Can-
ada*, *1895*, which are only remotely connected with
the question at issue; remain to be mentioned. I have
no objections to Budde's conception of space as a sort
of medium (compare page 230), although I think that
the properties of this medium should be demonstrable
physically in some other manner, and that they should
not be assumed *ad hoc.* If all apparent actions at a
distance, all accelerations, turned out to be effected
through the agency of a medium, then the question
would appear in a different light, and the solution is
to be sought perhaps in the view set forth on page
230.

XXI.

Section VIII., "Retrospect of the Development of Dynamics," was written in the year 1883. It contains, especially in paragraph 7, on pages 254 and 255, an extremely general programme of a future system of mechanics, and it is to be remarked that the *Mechanics* of Hertz, which appeared in the year 1894,* marks a distinct advance in the direction indicated. It is impossible in the limited space at our disposal to give any adequate conception of the copious material contained in this book, and besides it is not our purpose to expound new systems of mechanics, but merely to trace the development of ideas relating to mechanics. Hertz's book must, in fact, be read by every one interested in mechanical problems.

Hertz's criticisms of prior systems of mechanics, with which he opens his work, contains some very noteworthy epistemological considerations, which from our point of view (not to be confounded either with the Kantian or with the atomistic mechanical concepts of the majority of physicists), stand in need of certain modifications. The constructive images† (or better, perhaps, the concepts), which we consciously and purposely form of objects, are to be so chosen that the "consequences which necessarily follow from them in thought" agree with the "consequences which necessarily follow from them in nature." It is demanded of these images or concepts that they shall be logically

---

* H. Hertz, *Die Principien der Mechanik in neuem Zusammenhange dargestellt.* Leipzig, 1894.

† Hertz uses the term *Bild* (image or picture) in the sense of the old English philosophical use of *idea*, and applies it to systems of ideas or concepts relating to any province.

admissible, that is to say, free from all self-contradictions; that they shall be correct, that is, shall conform to the relations obtaining between objects; and finally that they shall be appropriate, and contain the least possible superfluous features. Our concepts, it is true, are formed consciously and purposely by us, but they are nevertheless not formed altogether arbitrarily, but are the outcome of an endeavor on our part to adapt our ideas to our sensuous environment. The agreement of the concepts with one another is a requirement which is logically necessary, and this logical necessity, furthermore, is the only necessity that *we* have knowledge of. The belief in a necessity obtaining in nature arises only in cases where our concepts are closely enough adapted to nature to ensure a correspondence between the logical inference and the fact. But the assumption of an adequate adaptation of our ideas can be refuted at any moment by experience. Hertz's criterion of appropriateness coincides with our criterion of economy.

Hertz's criticism that the Galileo-Newtonian system of mechanics, particularly the notion of force, lacks clearness (pages 7, 14, 15) appears to us justified only in the case of logically defective expositions, such as Hertz doubtless had in mind from his student days. He himself partly retracts his criticism in another place (pages 9, 47); or at any rate, he qualifies it. But the logical defects of some individual interpretation cannot be imputed to systems as such. To be sure, it is not permissible to-day (page 7) "to speak of a force acting in one aspect only, or, in the case of centripetal force, to take account of the action of inertia twice, once as a mass and again as a force." But neither is this necessary, since Huygens and Newton

were perfectly clear on this point. To characterise forces as being frequently "empty-running wheels," as being frequently not demonstrable to the senses, can scarcely be permissible. In any event, "forces" are decidedly in the advantage on this score as compared with "hidden masses" and "hidden motions." In the case of a piece of iron lying at rest on a table, both the forces in equilibrium, the weight of the iron and the elasticity of the table, are very easily demonstrable.

Neither is the case with energic mechanics so bad as Hertz would have it, and as to his criticism against the employment of minimum principles, that it involves the assumption of purpose and presupposes tendencies directed to the future, the present work shows in another passage quite distinctly that the simple import of minimum principles is contained in an entirely different property from that of purpose. Every system of mechanics contains references to the future, since all must employ the concepts of time, velocity, etc.

Nevertheless, though Hertz's criticism of existing systems of mechanics cannot be accepted in all their severity, his own novel views must be regarded as a great step in advance. Hertz, after eliminating the concept of force, starts from the concepts of time, space, and mass alone, with the idea in view of giving expression only to that which can actually be observed. The sole principle which he employs may be conceived as a combination of the law of inertia and Gauss's principle of least constraint. Free masses move uniformly in straight lines. If they are put in connexion in any manner they deviate, in accordance with Gauss's principle, as little as possible from this

motion; their *actual* motion is more nearly that of *free* motion than any other *conceivable* motion. Hertz says the masses move as a result of their connexion in a *straightest* path. Every deviation of the motion of a mass from uniformity and rectilinearity is due, in his system, not to a force but to rigid connexion with other masses. And where such matters are not visible, he conceives hidden masses with hidden motions. All physical forces are conceived as the effect of such actions. Force, force-function, energy, in his system, are secondary and auxiliary concepts only. Let us now look at the most important points singly, and ask to what extent was the way prepared for them. The notion of eliminating force may be reached in the following manner. It is part of the general idea of the Galileo-Newtonian system of mechanics to conceive of all connexions as replaced by forces which determine the motions required by the connexions; conversely, everything that appears as force may be conceived to be due to a connexion. If the first idea frequently appears in the older systems, as being historically simpler and more immediate, in the case of Hertz the latter is the more prominent. If we reflect that in both cases, whether forces or connexions be presupposed, the actual dependence of the motions of the masses on one another is given for every instantaneous conformation of the system by linear differential equations between the co-ordinates of the masses, then the existence of these equations may be considered the essential thing,—the thing established by experience. Physics indeed gradually accustoms itself to look upon the description of the facts by differential equations as its proper aim,—a point of view which was taken also in Chapter V. of the present

work (1883). But with these the general applicability of Hertz's mathematical formulations is recognised without our being obliged to enter upon any further interpretation of the forces or connexions.

Hertz's fundamental law may be described as a sort of generalised law of inertia, modified by connexions of the masses. For the simpler cases, this view was a natural one, and doubtless often forced itself upon the attention. In fact, the principle of the conservation of the center of gravity and of the conservation of areas was actually described in the present work (Chapter III.) as a generalised law of inertia. If we reflect that by Gauss's principle the *connexion* of the masses determines a minimum of deviation from those motions which it would describe for itself, we shall arrive at Hertz's fundamental law the moment we consider all the forces as due to the connexions. For on severing all connexions, only isolated masses moving by the law of inertia are left as ultimate elements.

Gauss very distinctly asserted that no substantially new principle of mechanics could ever be discovered. And Hertz's principle also is only new in form, for it is identical with Lagrange's equations. The minimum condition which the principle involves does not refer to any enigmatic purpose, but its import is the same as that of all minimum laws. That alone takes place which is dynamically determined (Chapter III.). The deviation from the actual motion is dynamically not determined; this deviation is not present; the actual motion is therefore unique.*

* See Petzoldt's excellent article "Das Gesetz der Eindeutigkeit" (*Vierteljahrsschrift für wissenschaftliche Philosophie*, XIX., page 146, especially page 186). R. Henke is also mentioned in this article as having approached Hertz's view in his tract *Ueber die Methode der kleinsten Quadrate* (Leipsic, 1894).

It is hardly necessary to remark that the physical side of mechanical problems is not only not disposed of, but is not even so much as touched, by the elaboration of such a formal mathematical system of mechanics. Free masses move uniformly in straight lines. Masses having different velocities and directions if connected mutually affect each other as to velocity, that is, determine in each other accelerations. These physical experiences enter along with purely geometrical and arithmetical theorems into the formulation, for which the latter alone would in no wise be adequate; for that which is uniquely determined mathematically and geometrically only, is for that reason not also uniquely determined mechanically. But we discussed at considerable length in Chapter II., that the physical principles in question were not at all self-evident, and that even their exact significance was by no means easy to establish.

In the beautiful ideal form which Hertz has given to mechanics, its physical contents have shrunk to an apparently almost imperceptible residue. It is scarcely to be doubted that Descartes if he lived today would have seen in Hertz's mechanics, far more than in Lagrange's "analytic geometry of four dimensions," his own ideal. For Descartes, who in his opposition to the occult qualities of Scholasticism would grant no other properties to matter than extension and motion, sought to reduce all mechanics and physics to a geometry of motions, on the assumption of a motion indestructible at the start.

It is not difficult to analyse the psychological circumstances which led Hertz to his system. After inquirers had succeeded in representing electric and magnetic forces that act at a distance as the results

of motions in a medium, the desire must again have awakened to accomplish the same result with respect to the forces of gravitation, and if possible for all forces whatsoever. The idea was therefore very natural to discover whether the concept of force generally could not be eliminated. It cannot be denied that when we can command all the phenomena taking place in a medium, together with the large masses contained in it, by means of a single complete picture, our concepts are on an entirely different plane from what they are when only the relations of these isolated masses as regards acceleration are known. This will be willingly granted even by those who are convinced that the interaction of parts in contact is not more intelligible than action at a distance. The present tendencies in the development of physics are entirely in this direction.

If we are not content to leave the assumption of occult masses and motions in its general form, but should endeavor to investigate them singly and in detail, we should be obliged, at least in the present state of our physical knowledge, to resort, even in the simplest cases, to fantastic and even frequently questionable fictions, to which the *given* accelerations would be far preferable. For example, if a mass m is moving uniformly in a circle of radius r, with a velocity v, which we are accustomed to refer to a centripetal force $\dfrac{mv^2}{r}$ proceeding from the center of the circle, we might instead of this conceive the mass to be rigidly connected at the distance $2r$ with one of the same size having a contrary velocity. Huygens's centripetal impulsion would be another example of a force replaced by a connexion. As an ideal program

Hertz's mechanics is simpler and more beautiful, but for practical purposes our present system of mechanics is preferable, as Hertz himself (page 47), with his characteristic candor, admits.*

XXII.

The views put forward in the first two chapters of this book were worked out by me a long time ago. At the start they were almost without exception coolly rejected, and only gradually gained friends. All the essential features of my *Mechanics* I stated originally in a brief communication of five octavo pages entitled *On the Definition of Mass.* These were the theorems now given at page 243 of the present book. The communication was rejected by Poggendorf's *Annalen*, and it did not appear until a year later (1868), in Carl's *Repertorium.* In a lecture delivered in 1871, I outlined my epistemological point of view in natural science generally, and with special exactness for physics. The concept of cause is replaced there by the concept of function; the determining of the dependence of phenomena on one another, the economic exposition of actual facts, is proclaimed as the object, and physical concepts as a means to an end solely. I did not care now to impose upon any editor the responsibility for the publication of the contents of this lecture, and the same was published as a separate tract in 1872.† In 1874, when Kirchhoff in his *Mechanics* came out with his theory of "description" and

---

*Compare J. Classen, "Die Principien der Mechanik bei Hertz und Boltzmann" (*Jahrbuch der Hamburgischen wissenschaftlichen Anstalten*, XV., p. 1, Hamburg, 1898).

†*Erhaltung der Arbeit*, Prague, 1872.

other doctrines, which were analogous in part only to my views, and still aroused the "universal astonishment" of his colleagues, I became resigned to my fate. But the great authority of Kirchhoff gradually made itself felt, and the consequence of this also doubtless was that on its appearance in 1883 my *Mechanics* did not evoke so much surprise. In view of the great assistance afforded by Kirchhoff, it is altogether a matter of indifference with me that the public should have regarded, and partly does so still, my interpretation of the principles of physics as a continuation and elaboration of Kirchhoff's views ; whilst in fact mine were not only older as to date of publication, but also more radical.*

The agreement with my point of view appears upon the whole to be increasing, and gradually to extend over more extensive portions of my work. It would be more in accord with my aversion for polemical discussions to wait quietly and merely observe what part of the ideas enunciated may be found acceptable. But I cannot suffer my readers to remain in obscurity with regard to the existing disagreements, and I have also to point out to them the way in which they can find their intellectual bearings outside of this book, quite apart from the fact that esteem for my opponents also demands a consideration of their criticisms. These opponents are numerous and of all kinds: historians, philosophers, metaphysicians, logicians, educators, mathematicians, and physicists. I can make no pretence to any of these qualifications in any superior degree. I can only select here the most important criticisms, and answer them in the capacity of a man who has the liveliest and most ingenuous in-

* See the preface to the first edition.

terest in understanding the growth of physical ideas. I hope that this will also make it easy for others to find their way in this field and to form their own judgment.

P. Volkmann in his writings on the epistemology* of physics appears as my opponent only in certain criticisms on individual points, and particularly by his adherence to the old systems and by his predilection for them. It is the latter trait, in fact, that separates us ; for otherwise Volkmann's views have much affinity with my own. He accepts my adaptation of ideas, the principle of economy and of comparison, even though his expositions differ from mine in individual features and vary in terminology. I, for my part, find in his writings the important principle of isolation and superposition, appropriately emphasised and admirably described, and I willingly accept them. I am also willing to admit that concepts which at the start are not very definite must acquire their "retroactive consolidation" by a "circulation of knowledge," by an "oscillation" of attention. I also agree with Volkmann that from this last point of view Newton accomplished in his day nearly the best that it was possible to do; but I cannot agree with Volkmann when he shares the opinion of Thomson and Tait, that even in the face of the substantially different epistemological needs of the present day, Newton's achievement is definitive and exemplary. On the contrary, it appears to me that if Volkmann's process of "consolidation" be allowed complete sway, it must necessarily lead to enunciations not differing in

* *Erkenntnisstheoretische Grundzüge der Naturwissenschaft.* Leipzig, 1896, —*Ueber Newton's Philosophia Naturalis.* Königsberg, 1898.—*Einführung in das Studium der theoretischen Physik*, Leipsic, 1900. Our references are to the last-named work.

any essential point from my own. I follow with genuine pleasure the clear and objective discussions of G. Heymans.* The differences which I have with Höfler † and Poske ‡ relate in the main to individual points. So far as principles are concerned, I take precisely the same point of view as Petzoldt, § and we differ only on questions of minor importance. The numerous criticisms of others, which either refer to the arguments of the writers just mentioned, or are supported by analogous grounds, cannot out of regard for the reader be treated at length. It will be sufficient to describe the character of these differences by selecting a few individual, but important, points.

A special difficulty seems to be still found in accepting my definition of mass. Streintz (compare p. 540) has remarked in criticism of it that it is based solely upon gravity, although this was expressly excluded in my first formulation of the definition (1868). Nevertheless, this criticism is again and again put forward, and quite recently even by Volkmann (*loc. cit.*, p. 18). My definition simply takes note of the fact that bodies in mutual relationship, whether it be that of action at a distance, so called, or whether rigid or elastic connexions be considered, determine in one another changes of velocity (accelerations). More than this, one does not need to know in order to be able to form a definition with perfect assurance and without the fear of building on sand. It is not correct as

Die Gesetze und Elemente des wissenschaftlichen Denkens, II., Leipzig 1894.

† *Studien zur gegenwärtigen Philosophie der mathematischen Mechanik*, Leipzig, 1900.

‡ *Vierteljahrsschrift für wissenschaftliche Philosophie*, Leipzig, 1884, pag : 385.

§ "Das Gesetz der Eindeutigkeit (*Vierteljahrsschrift für wissenschaftliche Philosophie*, XIX., page 146).

Höfler asserts (*loc. cit.*, p. 77), that this definition tacitly assumes *one and the same force* acting on both masses. It does not assume even the notion of force, since the latter is built up subsequently upon the notion of mass, and gives then the principle of action and reaction quite independently and without falling into Newton's logical error. In this arrangement one concept is not misplaced and made to rest on another which threatens to give way under it. This is, as I take it, the only really serviceable aim of Volkmann's "circulation" and "oscillation." After we have defined mass by means of accelerations, it is not difficult to obtain from our definition apparently new variant concepts like "capacity for acceleration," "capacity for energy of motion" (Höfler, *loc. cit.*, page 70). To accomplish anything dynamically with the concept of mass, the concept in question must, as I most emphatically insist, be a *dynamical* concept. Dynamics cannot be constructed with quantity of matter by itself, but the same can at most be artificially and arbitrarily attached to it (*loc. cit.*, pages 71, 72). Quantity of matter by itself is never mass, neither is it thermal capacity, nor heat of combustion, nor nutritive value, nor anything of the kind. Neither does "mass" play a thermal, but only a dynamical rôle (compare Höfler, *loc. cit.*, pages 71, 72). On the other hand, the different physical quantities are proportional to one another, and two or three bodies of unit mass form, by virtue of the dynamic definition, a body of twice or three times the mass, as is analogously the case also with thermal capacity by virtue of the thermal definition. Our instinctive craving for concepts involving quantities of things, to which Höfler (*loc. cit* , page 72) is doubtless seeking to give expression,

and which amply suffices for every-day purposes, is something that no one will think of denying. But a scientific concept of ''quantity of matter'' should properly be deduced from the proportionality of the single physical quantities mentioned, instead of, contrariwise, building up the concept of mass upon ''quantity of matter.'' The measurement of mass by means of weight results from my definition quite naturally, whereas in the ordinary conception the measurability of quantity of matter by one and the same dynamic measure is either taken for granted outright, or proof must be given beforehand by special experiments, that equal weights act under all circumstances as equal masses. In my opinion, the concept of mass has here been subjected to thorough analysis for the first time since Newton. For historians, mathematicians, and physicists appear to have all treated the question as an easy and almost self-evident one. It is, on the contrary, of fundamental significance and is deserving of the attention of my opponents.

Many criticisms have been made of my treatment of the law of inertia. I believe I have shown (1868), somewhat as Poske has done (1884), that any deduction of this law from a general principle, like the law of causality, is inadmissible, and this view has now won some support (compare Heymans, *loc. cit.*, page 432). Certainly, a principle that has been universally recognised for so short a time only cannot be regarded as *a priori* self-evident. Heymans (*loc. cit.*, p. 427) correctly remarks that axiomatic certainty was ascribed a few centuries ago to a diametrically opposite form of the law. Heymans sees a supra-empirical element only in the fact that the law of inertia is referred to absolute space, and in the further fact that both in

the law of inertia and in its ancient diametrically opposite form something *constant* is assumed in the condition of the body that is left to itself (*loc. cit.*, page 433). We shall have something to say further on regarding the first point, and as for the latter it is psychologically intelligible without the aid of metaphysics, because constant features alone have the power to satisfy us either intellectually or practically,— which is the reason that we are constantly seeking for them. Now, looking at the matter from an entirely unprejudiced point of view, the case of these axiomatic certainties will be found to be a very peculiar one. One will strive in vain with Aristotle to convince the common man that a stone hurled from the hand would be necessarily brought to rest at once after its release, were it not for the air which rushed in behind and forced it forwards. But he would put just as little credence in Galileo's theory of infinite uniform motion. On the other hand, Benedetti's theory of the gradual diminution of the *vis impressa*, which belongs to the period of unprejudiced thought and of liberation from ancient preconceptions, will be accepted by the common man without contradiction. This theory, in fact, is an immediate reflexion of experience, while the first-mentioned theories, which idealise experience in contrary directions, are a product of technical professional reasoning. They exercise the illusion of axiomatic certainty only upon the mind of the scholar whose entire customary train of thought would be thrown out of gear by a disturbance of these elements of his thinking. The behavior of inquirers toward the law of inertia seems to me from a psychological point of view to be adequately explained by this circumstance, and I am inclined to

allow the question of whether the principle is to be called an axiom, a postulate, or a maxim, to rest in abeyance for the time being. Heymans, Poske, and Petzoldt concur in finding an empirical and a supraempirical element in the law of inertia. According to Heymans (*loc. cit.*, p. 438) experience simply afforded the opportunity for applying an *a priori* valid principle. Poske thinks that the empirical origin of the principle does not exclude its *a priori* validity (*loc. cit.*, pp. 401 and 402). Petzoldt also deduces the law of inertia in part only from experience, and regards it in its remaining part as given by the law of unique determination. I believe I am not at variance with Petzoldt in formulating the issue here at stake as follows: It first devolves on experience to inform us what particular dependence of phenomena on one another actually exists, what the thing to be determined is,—and experience alone can instruct us on this point. If we are convinced that we have been sufficiently instructed in this regard, then when adequate data are at hand we regard it as unnecessary to keep on waiting for further experiences; the phenomenon is determined for us, and since this alone is determination, it is uniquely determined. In other words, if I have discovered by experience that bodies determine accelerations in one another, then in all circumstances where such determinative bodies are lacking I shall expect with unique determination uniform motion in a straight line. The law of inertia thus results immediately in all its generality, without our being obliged to specialise with Petzoldt; for every deviation from uniformity and rectilinearity takes acceleration for granted. I believe I am right in saying that the same fact is twice formulated in the law of inertia and in

the statement that forces determine accelerations (p. 143). If this be granted, then an end is also put to the discussion as to whether a vicious circle is or is not contained in the application of the law of inertia (Poske, Höfler).

My inference as to the probable manner in which Galileo reached clearness regarding the law of inertia was drawn from a passage in his third Dialogue,* which was literally transcribed from the Paduan edition of 1744, Vol. III., page 124, in my tract on *The Conservation of Energy* (Eng. Trans., in part, in my *Popular Scientific Lectures*, third edition, Chicago, The Open Court Publishing Co.). Conceiving a body which is rolling down an inclined plane to be conducted upon rising inclined planes of varying slopes, the slight retardation which it suffers on absolutely smooth rising planes of small inclination, and the retardation zero, or unending uniform motion on a horizontal plane, must have occurred to him. Wohlwill was the first to object to this way of looking at the matter (see page 524), and others have since joined

---

* "Constat jam, quod mobile ex quiete in *A* descendens per *AB*, gradus acquirit velocitatis juxta temporis ipsius incrementum: gradum vero in *B* esse maximum acquisitorum, et suapte natura immutabil ter impressum, sublatis scilicet causis accelerationis novae, aut retardationis: accelerationis
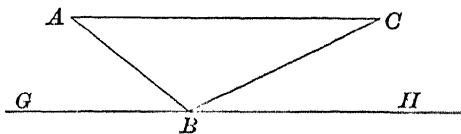
Fig. 241.

inquam, si adhuc super extenso plano ulterius progrederetur; retardationis vero, dum super planum acclive *BC* fit reflexio: in horizontali autem *GH* aequabilis motus juxta gradum velocitatis ex *A* in *B* acquisitae in infinitum extenderetur."

"It is plain now that a movable body, starting from rest at *A* and de-

him. He asserts that uniform motion in a circle and horizontal motion still occupied distinct places in Galileo's thought, and that Galileo started from the ancient concepts and freed himself only very gradually from them. It is not to be denied that the different *phases* in the intellectual development of the great inquirers have much interest for the historian, and *some one* phase may, in its importance in this respect, be relegated into the background by the others. One must needs be a poor psychologist and have little knowledge of oneself not to know how difficult it is to liberate oneself from traditional views, and how even after that is done the remnants of the old ideas still hover in consciousness and are the cause of occasional backslidings even after the victory has been practically won. Galileo's experience cannot have been different. But with the physicist it is the instant in which a new view flashes forth that is of greatest interest, and it is this instant for which he will always seek. I have sought for it, I believe I have found it; and I am of the opinion that it left its unmistakable traces in the passage in question. Poske (*loc. cit.*, page 393) and Höfler (*loc. cit.*, pages 111, 112) are unable to give their assent to my interpretation of this passage, for the reason that Galileo does not expressly refer to the limiting case of transition from the inclined to the horizontal plane; although

scending down the inclined plane *AB*, acquires a velocity proportional to the increment of its time: the velocity possessed at *B* is the greatest of the velocities acquired, and by its nature immutably impressed, provided all causes of new acceleration or retardation are taken away: I say acceleration, having in view its possible further progress along the plane extended; retardation, in view of the possibility of its being reversed and made to mount the ascending plane *BC*. But in the horizontal plane *GH* its uniform motion, with the velocity acquired in the descent from *A* to *B*, will be continued *ad infin. num.*

Poske grants that the consideration of limiting cases
was frequently employed by Galileo, and although
Höfler admits having actually tested the educational
efficacy of this device with students. It would indeed
be a matter of surprise if Galileo, who may be re-
garded as the inventor of the principle of continuity,
should not in his long intellectual career have applied
the principle to this most important case of all for
him. It is also to be considered that the passage
does not form part of the broad and general discus-
sions of the Italian dialogue, but is tersely couched, in
the dogmatic form of a result, in Latin. And in this
way also the "velocity immutably impressed" may
have crept in.*

---

*Even granting that Galileo reached his knowledge of the law of inertia
only gradually, and that it was presented to him merely as an accidental dis-
covery, nevertheless the following passages which are taken from the Paduan
edition of 1744 will show that his limitation of the law to horizontal motion
was justified by the inherent nature of the subject treated; and the assump-
tion that Galileo toward the end of his scientific career did not possess a full
knowledge of the law, can hardly be maintained.

"Sagr. Ma quando l'artiglieria si piantasse non a perpendicolo, ma in-
clinata verso qualche parte, qual dovrebbe esser' il moto della pa'la ? and-
rebbe ella forse, come nel l'altro tiro, per la linea perpendicolare, e ritor-
nando anco poi per l'istessa ?"

"Simpl. Questo non farebbe ella, ma uscita del pezzo seguiterebbe il
suo moto per la linea retta, che continua la dirittura della canna, se non in
quanto il proprio peso la farebbe declinar da tal dirittura verso terra."

"Sagr. Talche la dirittura della canna è la regolatrice del moto della
palla : nè fuori di tal linea si muove, o muoverebbe, se 'l peso proprio non
la facesse delinare in giù. . . ."—*Dialogo sopra i due massimi sistemi del
mondo.*

"Sagr. But if the gun were not placed in the perpendicular, but were in-
clined in some direction; what then would be the motion of the ball ? Would
it follow, perhaps, as in the other case, the perpendicular, and in returning
fall also by the same line ?"

"Simpl. This it will not do, but having left the cannon it will follow its
own motion in the straight line which is a continuation of the axis of the
barrel, save in so far as its own weight shall cause it to deviate from that
direction toward the earth."

"Sagr. So that the axis of the barrel is the regulator of the motion of the
ball : and it neither does nor will move outside of that line unless its own
weight causes it to drop downwards. . . ."

The physical instruction which I enjoyed was in all probability just as bad and just as dogmatic as it was the fortune of my older critics and colleagues to enjoy. The principle of inertia was then enunciated as a dogma which accorded perfectly with the system. I could understand very well that disregard of all obstacles to motion led to the principle, or that it must be discovered, as Appelt says, by abstraction; nevertheless, it always remained remote and within the comprehension of supernatural genius only. And where was the guarantee that with the removal of all obstacles the diminution of the velocity also ceased? Poske (*loc. cit.*, p. 395) is of the opinion that Galileo, to use a phrase which I have repeatedly employed, "*discerned*" or "*perceived*" the principle immediately. But what is this discerning? Enquiring man looks here and looks there, and suddenly catches a glimpse of something he has been seeking or even of something quite unexpected, that rivets his attention. Now, I have shown how this "discerning" came about and in what it consisted. Galileo runs his eye over several different uniformly *retarded* motions, and suddenly picks out from among them a uniform, in-

"Attendere insuper licet, quod velocitatis gradus, quicunque in mobili reperiatur, est in illo suapte natura indelebiliter impressus, dum externae causae accelerationis, aut retardationis tollantur, quod in solo horizontali plano contingit: nam in planis declivibus adest jam causa accelerationis majoris, in acclivibus vero retardationis. Ex quo pariter sequitur, motum in horizontali esse quoque aeternum: si enim est aequabilis, non debiliatur, aut remittitur, et multo minus tollitur."—*Discorsi e dimostrazioni matematiche. Dialogo terzo.*

"Moreover, it is to be remarked that the degree of velocity a body has is indestructibly impressed in it by its own nature, provided external causes of acceleration or retardation are wanting,—which happens only on horizontal planes: for on descending planes there is greater acceleration, and on ascending planes retardation. Whence it follows that motion in a horizontal plane is perpetual: for if it remains the same, it is not diminished, or abated, much less abolished."

finitely continued motion, of so peculiar a character
that if it occurred by itself alone it would certainly
be regarded as something altogether different in kind.
But a very minute variation of the inclination trans-
forms this motion into a finite retarded motion, such
as we have frequently met with in our lives. And
now, no more difficulty is experienced in recognising
the identity between all obstacles to motion and re-
tardation by gravity,—wherewith the ideal type of un-
influenced, infinite, uniform motion is gained. As I
read this passage of Galileo's while still a young man,
a new light concerning the necessity of this ideal link
in our mechanics, entirely different from that of the
dogmatic exposition, flashed upon me. I believe that
every one will have the same experience who will ap-
proach this passage without prior bias. I have not
the least doubt that Galileo above all others experi-
enced that light. May my critics see to it how their
assent also is to be avoided.

I have now another important point to discuss in
opposition to C. Neumann,* whose well-known publi-
cation on this topic preceded mine† shortly. I con-
tended that the direction and velocity which is taken
into account in the law of inertia had no comprehen-
sible meaning if the law was referred to "absolute
space." As a matter of fact, we can metrically deter-
mine direction and velocity only in a space of which
the points are marked directly or indirectly by given
bodies. Neumann's treatise and my own were suc-
cessful in directing attention anew to this point, which

Die Principien der Galilei-Newton'schen Theorie, Leipzig, 1870.

† *Erhaltung der Arbeit*, Prague, 1872. (Translated in part in the article
on "The Conservation of Energy," *Popular Scientific Lectures*, third edition,
Chicago, 1898.

had already caused Newton and Euler much intellectual discomfort; yet nothing more than partial attempts at solution, like that of Streintz, have resulted. I have remained to the present day the only one who insists upon ·referring the law of inertia to the earth, and in the case of motions of great spatial and temporal extent, to the fixed stars. Any prospect of coming to an understanding with the great number of my critics is, in consideration of the profound differences of our points of view, very slight. But so far as I have been able to understand the criticisms to which my view has been subjected, I shall endeavor to answer them.

Höfler is of the opinion that the existence of "absolute motion" is denied, because it is held to be "inconceivable." But it is a fact of "more painstaking self-observation" that conceptions of absolute motion do exist. Conceivability and knowledge of absolute motion are not to be confounded. Only the latter is wanting here (*loc. cit.*, pages 120, 164). . . . Now, it is precisely with knowledge that the natural inquirer is concerned. A thing that is beyond the ken of knowledge, a thing that cannot be exhibited to the senses, has no meaning in natural science. I have not the remotest desire of setting limits to the imagination of men, but I have a faint suspicion that the persons who imagine they have conceptions of "absolute motions," in the majority of cases have in mind the memory pictures of some actually experienced relative motion; but let that be as it may, for it is in any event of no consequence. I maintain even more than Höfler, viz., that there exist *sensory illusions* of absolute motions, which can subsequently be reproduced at any time. Every one that has repeated my

experiments on the sensations of movement has experienced the full sensory power of such illusions. One imagines one is flying off with one's entire environment, which remains at relative rest with respect to the body; or that one is rotating in a space that is distinguished by nothing that is tangible. But no measure can be applied to this space of illusion; its existence cannot be proved to another person, and it cannot be employed for the metrical and conceptual description of the facts of mechanics; it has nothing to do with the space of geometry.* Finally, when Höfler (*loc. cit.*, p. 133) brings forward the argument that "in every relative motion one at least of the bodies moving with reference to each other must be affected with absolute motion,"—I can only say that for the person who considers absolute motion as meaningless in physics, this argument has no force whatever. But I have no further concern here with philosophical questions. To go into details as Höfler has in some places (*loc. cit.*, pp. 124–126) would serve no purpose before an understanding had been reached on the main question.

Heymans (*loc. cit.*, pp. 412, 448) remarks that an inductive, empirical mechanics *could* have arisen, but that as a matter of fact a different mechanics, based on the non-empirical concept of absolute motion, has arisen. The fact that the principle of inertia has always been suffered to hold for absolute motion which is nowhere demonstrable, instead of being re-

---

*I flatter myself on being able to resist the temptation to infuse lightness into a serious discussion by showing its ridiculous side, but in reflecting on these problems I was involuntarily forced to think of the question which a very estimable but eccentric man once debated with me as to whether a yard of cloth in one's dreams is as long as a real yard of cloth. — Is the dream-yard to be really introduced into mechanics as a standard of measurement?

garded as holding good for motion with respect to some actually demonstrable system of co-ordinates, is a problem which is almost beyond power of solution by the empirical theory. Heymans regards this as a problem that can have a metaphysical solution only. In this I cannot agree with Heymans. He admits that relative motions only are given in experience. With this admission, as with that of the possibility of an empirical mechanics, I am perfectly content. The rest, I believe, can be explained simply and without the aid of metaphysics. The first dynamic principles were unquestionably built up on empirical foundations. The earth was the body of reference; the transition to the other co-ordinate systems took place very gradually. Huygens saw that he could refer the motion of impinging bodies just as easily to a boat on which they were placed, as to the earth. The development of astronomy preceded that of mechanics considerably. When motions were observed that were at variance with known mechanical laws when referred to the earth, it was not necessary immediately to abandon these laws again. The fixed stars were present and ready to restore harmony as a new system of reference with the least amount of changes in the concepts. Think only of the oddities and difficulties which would have resulted if in a period of great mechanical and physical advancement the Ptolemaic system had been still in vogue,—a thing not at all inconceivable.

But Newton referred all of mechanics to absolute space! Newton is indeed a gigantic personality; little worship of authority is needed to succumb to his influence. Yet even his achievements are not exempt from criticism. It appears to be pretty much one and

the same thing whether we refer the laws of motion to *absolute* space, or enunciate them in a perfectly *abstract* form ;. that is to say, without specific mention of any system of reference. The latter course is un‑ precarious and even practical; for in treating special cases every student of mechanics looks for some ser viceable system of reference. But owing to the fact that the first course, wherever there was any real issue at stake, was nearly always interpreted as having the same meaning as the latter, Newton's error was fraught with much less danger than it would otherwise have been, and has for that reason maintained itself so long. It is psychologically and historically intelligible that in an age deficient in epistemological critique empirical laws should at times have been elaborated to a point where they had no meaning. It cannot therefore be deemed advisable to make metaphysical problems out of the errors and oversights of our scientific forefathers, but it is rather our duty to correct them, be they small people or great. I would not be understood as saying that this has never happened.

Petzoldt (*loc. cit.*, pp. 192 et seq.), who is in accord with me in my rejection of absolute motion, appeals to a principle of Avenarius,* by a consideration of which he proposes to remove the difficulties involved in the problem of relative motion. I am perfectly familiar with the principle of Avenarius, but I cannot understand how all the physical difficulties involved in the present problem can be avoided by referring motions to one's own body. On the contrary, in considering physical dependencies abstraction must

*Der menschliche Weltbegriff, Leipzig, 1891, p. 130.

be made from one's own body, so far as it exercises any influence.*

The most captivating reasons for the assumption of absolute motion were given thirty years ago by C. Neumann (*loc. cit.*, p. 27). If a heavenly body be conceived rotating about its axis and consequently subject to centrifugal forces and therefore oblate, nothing, so far as we can judge, can possibly be altered in its condition by the removal of all the remaining heavenly bodies. The body in question will continue to rotate and will continue to remain oblate. But if the motion be relative only, then the case of rotation will not be distinguishable from that of rest. All the parts of the heavenly body are at rest with respect to one another, and the oblateness would necessarily also disappear with the disappearance of the rest of the universe. I have two objections to make here. Nothing appears to me to be gained by making a meaningless assumption for the purpose of eliminating a contradiction. Secondly, the celebrated mathematician appears to me to have made here too free a use of intellectual experiment, the fruitfulness and value of which cannot be denied. When experimenting in thought, it is permissible to modify *unimportant* circumstances in order to bring out new features in a given case; but it is not to be antecedently assumed that the universe is without influence on the phenomenon here in question. If it is eliminated and contradictions still result, certainly this speaks in favor of the importance of relative motion, which, if it involves difficulties, is at least free from contradictions.

* Analyse der Empfindungen, zweite Auflage, Jena. 1900, pp. 11, 12 33, 38, 208; English translation, Chicago, The Open Court Pub. Co., 1897, pp. 13 et seq.

Volkmann (*loc. cit.*, p. 53) advocates an *absolute* orientation by means of the ether. I have already spoken on this point (comp. pp. 230, 547), but I am extremely curious to know how one ether particle is to be distinguished from another. Until some means of distinguishing these particles is found, it will be preferable to abide by the fixed stars, and where these forsake us to confess that the true means of orientation is still to be found.

Taking everything together, I can only say that I cannot well see what is to be altered in my expositions The various points stand in necessary connexion. After it has been discovered that the behavior of bodies toward one another is one in which accelerations are determined,—a discovery which was twice formulated by Galileo and Newton, once in a general and again in a special form as a law of inertia,—it is possible to give only *one* rational definition of mass, and that a purely dynamical definition. It is not at all, in my judgment, a matter of taste.* The concept of force and the principle of action and reaction follow of themselves. And the elimination of absolute motion is equivalent to the elimination of what is physically meaningless.

It would be not only taking a very subjective and short-sighted view of science, but it would also be foolhardy in the extreme, were I to expect that my views in their precise individual form should be incorporated without opposition into the intellectual systems of my contemporaries. The history of science teaches that the subjective, scientific philoso-

* My definition of mass takes a more organic and more natural place i Hertz's mechanics than his own, for it contains implicitly the germ of his "fundamental law."

phies of individuals are constantly being corrected and obscured, and in the philosophy or constructive image of the universe which humanity gradually adopts, only the very strongest features of the thoughts of the greatest men are, after some lapse of time, recognisable. It is merely incumbent on the individual to outline as distinctly as possible the main features of his own view of the world.

XXIII.

Although signal individual performances in science cannot be gainsaid to Descartes, as his studies on the rainbow and his enunciation of the law of refraction show, his importance nevertheless is contained rather in the great general and revolutionary ideas which he promulgated in philosophy, mathematics, and the natural sciences. The maxim of doubting everything that has hitherto passed for established truth cannot be rated too high; although it was more observed and exploited by his followers than by himself. Analytical geometry with its modern methods is the outcome of his idea to dispense with the consideration of all the details of geometrical figures by the application of algebra, and to reduce everything to the consideration of distances. He was a pronounced enemy of occult qualities in physics, and strove to base all physics on mechanics, which he conceived as a pure geometry of motion. He has shown by his experiments that he regarded no physical problem as insoluble by this method. He took too little note of the fact that mechanics is possible only on the condition that the positions of the bodies are determined in their dependence on one another by

a relation of force, by a function of time; and Leibnitz frequently referred to this deficiency. The mechanical concepts which Descartes developed with scanty and vague materials could not possibly pass as copies of nature, and were pronounced to be phantasies even by Pascal, Huygens, and Leibnitz. It has been remarked, however, in a former place, how strongly Descartes's ideas, in spite of these facts, have persisted to the present day. He also exercises a powerful influence upon physiology by his theory of vision, and by his contention that animals were machines,— a theory which he naturally had not the courage to extend to human beings, but by which he anticipated the idea of reflex motion (compare Duhem, *L'évolution des théories physiques*, Louvain, 1896).

XXIV.

(See page 378.)

To the exposition given on pages 377 and 378, in the year 1883, I have the following remarks to add. It will be seen that the principle of least action, like all other minimum principles in mechanics, is a simple expression of the fact that in the instances in question precisely so much happens as possibly *can* happen under the circumstances, or as is determined, viz., *uniquely* determined, by them. The deduction of cases of equilibrium from unique determination has already been discussed, and the same question will be considered in a later place. With respect to dynamic questions, the import of the principle of unique determination has been better and more perspicuously elucidated than in my case by J. Petzoldt in a work entitled *Maxima, Minima und Oekonomie* (Altenburg, 1891). He says (*loc. cit.*, page 11): "In the case of

all motions, the paths actually traversed admit of be-ing interpreted as *signal* instances chosen from an in-finite number of conceivable instances. Analytically, this has no other meaning than that expressions may always be found which yield the differential equations of the motion when their variation is equated to zero, —for the variation vanishes only when the integral assumes a unique value."

As a fact, it will be seen that in the instances treated at pages 377 and 378 an increment of velocity is uniquely determined only in the direction of the force, while an infinite number of equally legitimate incremental components of velocity at right angles to the force are conceivable, which are, however, for the reason given, excluded by the principle of unique de-termination. I am in entire accord with Petzoldt when he says : "The theorems of Euler and Hamilton, and not less that of Gauss, are thus nothing more than analytic expressions for the fact of experience that the phenomena of nature are uniquely deter-mined." The uniqueness of the minimum is determi-native.

I should like to quote here, from a note which I published in the November number of the Prague *Lotos* for 1873, the following passage: "The static and dynamical principles of mechanics may be ex-pressed as isoperimetrical laws. The anthropomor-phic conception is, however, by no means essential, as may be seen, for example, in the principle of vir-tual velocities. If we have once perceived that the work *A* determines velocity, it will readily be seen that where work is not done when the system passes into all adjacent positions, no velocity can be ac-quired, and consequently that equilibrium obtains.

The condition of equilibrium will therefore be $\delta A = 0$; where A need not necessarily be exactly a maximum or minimum. These laws are not absolutely restricted to ·mechanics; they may be of very general scope. If the change in the form of a phenomenon B be dependent on a phenomenon A, the condition that B shall pass over into a certain form will be $\delta A = 0$."

As will be seen, I grant in the foregoing passage that it is possible to discover analogies for the principle of least action in the most various departments of physics without reaching them through the circuitous course of mechanics. I look upon mechanics, not as the ultimate explanatory foundation of all the other provinces, but rather, owing to its superior formal development, as an admirable prototype of such an explanation. In this respect, my view differs apparently little from that of the majority of physicists, but the difference is an essential one after all. In further elucidation of my meaning, I should like to refer to the discussions which I have given in my *Principles of Heat* (particularly pages 192, 318, and 356, German edition), and also to my article "On Comparison in Physics" (*Popular Scientific Lectures*, English translation, page 236). Noteworthy articles touching on this point are: C. Neumann, "Das Ostwald'sche Axiom des Energieumsatzes" (*Berichte der k. sächs. Gesellschaft*, 1892, p. 184), and Ostwald, "Ueber das Princip des ausgezeichneten Falles" (*loc. cit.*, 1893, p. 600).

XXV.

The *Ausdehnungslehre* of 1844, in which Grassmann expounded his ideas for the first time, is in many re-

spects remarkable. The introduction to it contains epistemological remarks of value. The theory of spatial extension is here developed as a general science, of which geometry is a special tri-dimensional case; and the opportunity is taken on this occasion of submitting the foundations of geometry to a rigorous critique. The new and fruitful concepts of the addition of line-segments, multiplication of line-segments, etc., have also proved to be applicable in mechanics. Grassmann likewise submits the Newtonian principles to criticism, and believes he is able to enunciate them in a single expression as follows: "The total force (or total motion) which is inherent in an aggregate of material particles at any one time is the sum of the total force (or total motion) which has inhered in it at any former time, and all the forces that have been imparted to it from without in the intervening time; provided all forces be conceived as line-segments constant in direction and in length, and be referred to points which have equal masses." By *force* Grassmann understands here the indestructibly impressed velocity. The entire conception is much akin to that of Hertz. The forces (velocities) are represented as line-segments, the moments as surfaces enumerated in definite directions, etc.,—a device by means of which every development takes a very concise and perspicuous form. But Grassmann finds the main advantage of his procedure in the fact that every step in the calculation is at the same time the clear expression of every step taken in the thought; whereas, in the common method, the latter is forced entirely into the background by the introduction of three arbitrary co-ordinates. The difference between the analytic and the synthetic method is again done away

with, and the advantages of the two are combined. The kindred procedure of Hamilton, which has been illustrated by an example on page 528, will give some idea of these advantages.

XXVI.

In the text I have employed the term "cause" in the sense in which it is ordinarily used. I may add that with Dr. Carus,* following the practice of the German philosophers, I *distinguish* "cause," or *Realgrund,* from *Erkenntnissgrund.* I also agree with Dr. Carus in the statement that "the signification of cause and effect is to a great extent arbitrary and depends much upon the proper tact of the observer." †

The notion of cause possesses significance only as a means of provisional knowledge or orientation. In any exact and profound investigation of an event the inquirer must regard the phenomena as *dependent* on *one another* in the same way that the geometer regards the sides and angles of a triangle as dependent on one another. He will constantly keep before his mind, in this way, all the conditions of fact.

XXVII.

My conception of economy of thought was developed out of my experience as a teacher, out of the work of practical instruction. I possessed this conception as early as 1861, when I began my lectures as Privat-Docent, and at the time believed that I was

---

* See his *Grund, Ursache und Zweck,* R. v. Grumbkow, Dresden, 1881, and his *Fundamental Problems,* pp. 79–91, Chicago: The Open Court Publishing Co., 1891.

† *Fundamental Problems,* p. 84.

in exclusive possession of the principle,—a conviction which will, I think, be found pardonable. I am now, on the contrary, convinced that at least some presentiment of this idea has always, and necessarily must have, been a common possession of all inquirers who have ever made the nature of scientific investigation the subject of their thoughts. The expression of this opinion may assume the most diverse forms; for example, I should most certainly characterise the guiding theme of simplicity and beauty which so distinctly marks the work of Copernicus and Galileo, not only as æsthetical, but also as economical. So, too, Newton's *Regulæ philosophandi* are substantially influenced by economical considerations, although the economical principle as such is not explicitly mentioned. In an interesting article, "An Episode in the History of Philosophy," published in *The Open Court* for April 4, 1895, Mr. Thomas J. McCormack has shown that the idea of the economy of science was very near to the thought of Adam Smith (*Essays*). In recent times the view in question has been repeatedly though diversely expressed, first by myself in my lecture *Ueber die Erhaltung der Arbeit* (1875), then by Clifford in his *Lectures and Essays* (1872), by Kirchhoff in his *Mechanics* (1874), and by Avenarius (1876). To an oral utterance of the political economist A. Herrmann I have already made reference in my *Erhaltung der Arbeit* (p. 55, note 5); but no work by this author treating especially of this subject is known to me.

I should also like to make reference here to the supplementary expositions given in my *Popular Scientific Lectures* (English edition, pages 186 et seq.) and in my *Principles of Heat* (German edition, page 294). In the latter work, the criticisms of Petzoldt (*Viertel-*

Jahrsschrift für wissenschaftliche Philosophie, 1891) are considered. Husserl, in the first part of his work, *Logische Untersuchungen* (1900), has recently made some new animadversions on my theory of mental economy; these are in part answered in my reply to Petzoldt. I believe that the best course is to postpone an exhaustive reply until the work of Husserl is completed, and then see whether some understanding cannot be reached. For the present, however, I should like to premise certain remarks. As a natural inquirer, I am accustomed to begin with some special and definite inquiry, and allow the same to act upon me in all its phases, and to ascend from the special aspects to more general points of view. I followed this custom also in the investigation of the development of physical knowledge. I was obliged to proceed in this manner for the reason that a theory of theory was too difficult a task for me, being doubly difficult in a province in which a minimum of indisputable, general, and independent truths from which everything can be deduced is not furnished at the start, but must first be sought for. An undertaking of this character would doubtless have more prospect of being successful if one took mathematics as one's subject-matter. I accordingly directed my attention to individual phenomena : the adaptation of ideas to facts, the adaptation of ideas to one another,* mental

* *Popular Scientific Lectures*, English edition, pp. 244 et seq., where the adaptation of thoughts to one another is described as the object of theory proper. Grassmann appears to me to say pretty much the same in the introduction to his *Ausdehnungslehre* of 1844, page xix : "The first division of all the sciences is that into real and formal, of which the real sciences depict reality in thought as something independent of thought, and find their truth in the agreement of thought with that reality ; the formal sciences, on the other hand, have as their object that which has been posited by thought and itself, find their truth in the agreement of the mental processes with one another."

economy, comparison, intellectual experiment, the
constancy and continuity of thought, etc.   In this in-
quiry, I found it helpful and restraining to look upon
every-day thinking and science in general, as a bio-
logical and organic phenomenon, in which logical
thinking assumed the position of an ideal limiting
case.   I do not doubt for a moment that the investi-
gation can be begun at both ends.   I have also de-
scribed my efforts as epistemological sketches.*   It
may be seen from this that I am perfectly able to dis-
tinguish between psychological and logical questions,
as I believe every one else is who has ever felt the
necessity of examining logical processes from the
psychological side.   But it is doubtful if any one who
has carefully read even so much as the logical analysis
of Newton's enunciations in my *Mechanics,* will have
the temerity to say that I have endeavored to erase
all distinctions between the "blind" natural thinking
of every-day life and logical thinking.   Even if the
logical analysis of all the sciences were complete, the
biologico-psychological investigation of their develop-
ment would continue to remain a necessity for me,—
which would not exclude our making a new logical
analysis of this last investigation.   If my theory of
mental economy be conceived merely as a teleological
and provisional theme for guidance, such a concep-
tion does not exclude its being based on deeper foun-
dations,† but goes toward making it so.   Mental econ-
omy is, however, quite apart from this, a very clear
logical ideal which retains its value even after its logi-
cal analysis has been completed.   The systematic
form of a science can be deduced from the same prin-

* *Principles of Heat*, Preface to the first German edition.
† *Analysis of the Sensations*, second German edition, pages 64–65.

ciples in many different manners, but some one of these deductions will answer to the principle of economy better than the rest, as I have shown in the case of Gauss's dioptrics.* So far as I can now see, I do not think that the investigations of Husserl have affected the results of my inquiries. As for the rest, I must wait until the remainder of his work is published, for which I sincerely wish him the best success.

When I discovered that the idea of mental economy had been so frequently emphasised before and after my enunciation of it, my estimation of my personal achievement was necessarily lowered, but the idea itself appeared to me rather to gain in value on this account; and what appears to Husserl as a degradation of scientific thought, the association of it with vulgar or "blind" (?) thinking, seemed to me to be precisely an exaltation of it. It has outgrown the scholar's study, being deeply rooted in the life of humanity and reacting powerfully upon it.

XXVIII.

(See page 497.)

The paragraph on page 497, which was written in 1883, met with little response from the majority of physicists, but it will be noticed that physical expositions have since then closely approached to the ideal there indicated. Hertz's "Investigations on the Propagation of Electric Force" (1892) affords a good instance of this description of phenomena by simple differential equations.

* *Principles of Heat*, German edition, page 394.

XXIX.

In Germany, Mayer's works at first met with a very cool, and in part hostile, reception; even difficulties of publication were encountered; but in England they found more speedy recognition. After they had been almost forgotten there, amid the wealth of new facts being brought to light, attention was again called to them by the lavish praise of Tyndall in his book *Heat a Mode of Motion* (1863). The consequence of this was a pronounced reaction in Germany, which reached its culminating point in Dühring's work *Robert Mayer, the Galileo of the Nineteenth Century* (1878). It almost appeared as if the injustice that had been done to Mayer was now to be atoned for by injustice towards others. But as in criminal law, so here, the sum of the injustice is only increased in this way, for no algebraic cancelation takes place. An enthusiastic and thoroughly satisfactory estimate of Mayer's performances was given by Popper in an article in *Ausland* (1876, No. 35), which is also very readable from the many interesting epistemological *aperçus* that it contains. I have endeavored (*Principles of Heat*) to give a thoroughly just and sober presentation of the achievements of the different inquirers in the domain of the mechanical theory of heat. It appears from this that each one of the inquirers concerned made some distinctive contribution which expressed their respective intellectual peculiarities. Mayer may be regarded as the philosopher of the theory of heat and energy; Joule, who was also conducted to the principle of energy by philosophical considerations, fur-

nishes the experimental foundation ; and Helmholtz gave to it its theoretical physical form. Helmholtz, Clausius, and Thomson form a transition to the views of Carnot, who stands alone in his ideas. Each one of the first-mentioned inquirers could be eliminated. The progress of the development would have been retarded thereby, but it would not have been checked (compare the edition of Mayer's works by Weyrauch, Stuttgart, 1893).

XXX.
(See page 504.)

The principle of energy is only briefly treated in the text, and I should like to add here a few remarks on the following four treatises, discussing this subject, which have appeared since 1883 : *Die physikalischen Grundsätze der elektrischen Kraftübertragung*, by J. Popper, Vienna, 1883 ; *Die Lehre von der Energie*, by G. Helm, Leipsic, 1887 ; *Das Princip der Erhaltung der Energie*, by M. Planck, Leipsic, 1887 ; and *Das Problem der Continuität in der Mathematik und Mechanik*, by F. A. Müller, Marburg, 1886.

The independent works of Popper and Helm are, in the aim they pursue, in perfect accord, and they quite agree in this respect with my own researches, so much so in fact that I have seldom read anything that, without the obliteration of individual differences, appealed in an equal degree to my mind. These two authors especially meet in their attempt to enunciate a general science of energetics ; and a *suggestion* of this kind is also found in a note to my treatise *Ueber die Erhaltung der Arbeit*, page 54. Since then "energetics" has been exhaustively treated by Helm, Ostwald, and others.

In 1872, in this same treatise (pp. 42 et seqq.), I showed that our belief in the principle of excluded perpetual motion is founded on a more general belief in the *unique* determination of one group of (mechanical) elements, $\alpha\beta\gamma$ . . ., by a group of different elements, xyz . . . Planck's remarks at pages 99, 133, and 139 of his treatise essentially agree with this; they are different only in form. Again, I have repeatedly remarked that all forms of the law of causality spring from subjective impulses, which nature is by no means compelled to satisfy. In this respect my conception is allied to that of Popper and Helm.

Planck (pp. 21 et seqq., 135) and Helm (p. 25 et seqq.) mention the "metaphysical" points of view by which Mayer was controlled, and both remark (Planck, p. 25 et seqq., and Helm, p. 28) that also Joule, though there are no direct expressions to justify the conclusion, must have been guided by similar ideas. To this last I fully assent.

With respect to the so-called "metaphysical" points of view of Mayer, which, according to Helmholtz, are extolled by the devotees of metaphysical speculation as Mayer's highest achievement, but which appear to Helmholtz as the weakest feature of his expositions, I have the following remarks to make. With maxims, such as, "Out of nothing, nothing comes," "The effect is equivalent to the cause," and so forth, one can never convince *another* of anything. How little such empty maxims, which until recently were admitted in science, can accomplish, I have illustrated by examples in my treatise *Die Erhaltung der Arbeit.* But in Mayer's case these maxims are, in my judgment, not weaknesses. On the contrary, they are with him the expression of a *powerful* instinctive

yearning, as yet unsettled and unclarified, after a sound, substantial conception of what is now called energy. This desire I should not exactly call metaphysical. We now know that Mayer was not wanting in the conceptual power to give to this desire clearness. Mayer's attitude in this point was in no respect different from that of Galileo, Black, Faraday, and other great inquirers, although perhaps many were more taciturn and cautious than he.

I have touched upon this point before in my *Analysis of the Sensations*, Jena, 1886, English translation, Chicago, 1897, p. 174 et seqq. Aside from the fact that I do not share the Kantian point of view, in fact, occupy *no* metaphysical point of view, not even that of Berkeley, as hasty readers of my last-mentioned treatise have assumed, I agree with F. A. Müller's remarks on this question (p. 104 et seqq.). For a more exhaustive discussion of the principle of energy see my *Principles of Heat*.

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE

OF A FEW

EMINENT INQUIRERS

AND OF

THEIR MORE IMPORTANT MECHANICAL WORKS.

ARCHIMEDES (287–212 B. C.). A complete edition of his works was published, with the commentaries of Eutocius, at Oxford, in 1792; a French translation by F. Peyrard (Paris, 1808); a German translation by Ernst Nizze (Stralsund, 1824).

LEONARDO DA VINCI (1452–1519). Leonardo's scientific manuscripts are substantially embodied in H. Grothe's work, "Leonardo da Vinci als Ingenieur und Philosoph" (Berlin, 1874).

GUIDO UBALDI(O) e Marchionibus Montis (1545–1607). *Mechanicorum Liber* (Pesaro, 1577).

S. STEVINUS (1548–1620). *Beghinselen der Weegkonst* (Leyden, 1585); *Hypomnemata Mathematica* (Leyden, 1608).

GALILEO (1564–1642). *Discorsi e dimostrazioni matematiche* (Leyden, 1638). The first complete edition of Galileo's writings was published at Florence (1842–1856), in fifteen volumes 8vo.

KEPLER (1571–1630). *Astronomia Nova* (Prague, 1609); *Harmonice Mundi* (Linz, 1619); *Stereometria Doliorum* (Linz, 1615). Complete edition by Frisch (Frankfort, 1858).

MARCUS MARCI (1595–1667). *De Proportione Motus* (Prague, 1639).

DESCARTES (1596–1650). *Principia Philosophiæ* (Amsterdam, 1644).

ROBERVAL (1602–1675). *Sur la composition des mouvements. Anc. Mém. de l'Acad. de Paris.* T. VI.

GUERICKE (1602–1686). *Experimenta Nova, ut Vocantur Magdeburgica* (Amsterdam, 1672).

FERMAT (1601–1665). *Varia Opera* (Toulouse, 1679).

TORRICELLI (1608–1647). *Opera Geometrica* (Florence, 1644).

WALLIS (1616–1703). *Mechanica Sive de Motu* (London, 1670).

MARIOTTE (1620–1684). *Œuvres* (Leyden, 1717).

PASCAL (1623–1662). *Récit de la grande expérience de l'équilibre des liqueurs* (Paris, 1648); *Traité de l'équilibre des liqueurs et de la pesanteur de la masse de l'air.* (Paris, 1662).

BOYLE (1627–1691). *Experimenta Physico Mechanica* (London, 1660).

HUYGENS (1629–1695). *A Summary Account of the Laws of Motion.* Philos. Trans. 1669; *Horologium Oscillatorium* (Paris, 1673); *Opuscula Posthuma* (Leyden, 1703).

WREN (1632–1723). *Lex Naturæ de Collisione Corporum.* Philos. Trans. 1669.

LAMI (1640–1715). *Nouvelle manière de démontrer les principaux théorèmes des élémens des mécaniques* (Paris, 1687).

NEWTON (1642–1726). *Philosophiæ Naturalis Principia Mathematica* (London, 1686).

LEIBNITZ (1646–1716). *Acta Eruditorum*, 1686, 1695; *Leibnitzii et Joh. Bernoullii Comercium Epistolicum* (Lausanne and Geneva, 1745).

JAMES BERNOULLI (1654–1705). *Opera Omnia* (Geneva, 1744).

VARIGNON (1654–1722). *Projet d'une nouvelle mécanique* (Paris, 1687).

JOHN BERNOULLI (1667–1748). *Acta Erudit.* 1693; *Opera Omnia* (Lausanne, 1742).

MAUPERTUIS (1698–1759). *Mém. de l'Acad. de Paris*, 1740; *Mém. de l'Acad. de Berlin*, 1745, 1747; *Œuvres* (Paris, 1752).

MACLAURIN (1698–1746). *A Complete System of Fluxions* (Edinburgh, 1742).

DANIEL BERNOULLI (1700–1782). *Comment. Acad. Petrop.*, *T. I. Hydrodynamica* (Strassburg, 1738).

EULER (1707–1783). *Mechanica sive Motus Scientia* (Petersburg, 1736); *Methodus Inveniendi Lineas Curvas* (Lausanne, 1744).

Numerous articles in the volumes of the Berlin and St. Petersburg academies.

CLAIRAUT (1713–1765). *Théorie de la figure de la terre* (Paris, 1743).

D'ALEMBERT (1717–1783). *Traité de dynamique* (Paris, 1743).

LAGRANGE (1736–1813). *Essai d'une nouvelle méthode pour déterminer les maxima et minima.* Misc. Taurin. 1762 ; *Mécanique analytique* (Paris, 1788).

LAPLACE (1749–1827). *Mécanique céleste* (Paris, 1799).

FOURIER (1768–1830). *Théorie analytique de la chaleur* (Paris, 1822).

GAUSS (1777–1855). *De Figura Fluidorum in Statu Æqui`ibrii. Comment. Societ. Gottin.,* 1828 ; *Neues Princip der Mechanik* (Crelle's Journal, IV, 1829); *Intensitas Vis Magneticæ Terrestris ad Mensuram Absolutam Revocata* (1833). Complete works (Göttingen, 1863).

POINSOT (1777–1859). *Éléments de statique* (Paris, 1804).

PONCELET (1788–1867). *Cours de mécanique* (Metz, 1826).

BELANGER (1790–1874). *Cours de mécanique* (Paris, 1847).

MÖBIUS (1790- 1867). *Statik* (Leipsic, 1837).

CORIOLIS (1792- 1843). *Traité de mécanique* (Paris, 1829).

C. G. J. JACOBI (1804–1851). *Vorlesungen über Dynamik*, herausgegeben von Clebsch (Berlin, 1866).

W. R. HAMILTON (1805–1865). *Lectures on Quaternions*, 1853.— Essays.

GRASSMANN (1809–1877). *Ausdehnungslehre* (Leipsic, 1844).

H. HERTZ (1857–1894). *Principien der Mechanik* (Leipsic, 1894)

INDEX.